COPTIC GRAMMATICAL CHRESTOMATHY

A Course for Academic and Private Study

ORIENTALIA LOVANIENSIA ANALECTA

1. E. Lipiński, Studies in Aramaic Inscriptions and Onomastics I.
2. J. Quaegebeur, Le dieu égyptien Shaï dans la religion et l'onomastique.
3. P.H.L. Eggermont, Alexander's Campaigns in Sind and Baluchistan and the Siege of the Brahmin Town of Harmatelia.
4. W.M. Callewaert, The Sarvāṅgī of the Dādūpanthī Rajāb.
5. E. Lipiński (ed.), State and Temple Economy in the Ancient Near East I.
6. E. Lipiński (ed.), State and Temple Economy in the Ancient Near East II.
7. M.-C. De Graeve, The Ships of the Ancient Near East (c. 2000-500 B.C.).
8. W.M. Callewaert (ed.), Early Hindī Devotional Literature in Current Research.
9. F.L. Damen, Crisis and Religious Renewal in the Brahmo Samaj Movement (1860-1884).
10. R.Y. Ebied-A. Van Roey-L.R. Wickham, Peter of Callinicum, Anti-Tritheist Dossier.
11. A. Rammant-Peeters, Les pyramidions égyptiens du Nouvel Empire.
12. S. Scheers (ed.), Studia Paulo Naster Oblata I. Numismatica Antiqua.
13. J. Quaegebeur (ed.), Studia Paulo Naster Oblata II. Orientalia Antiqua.
14. E. Platti, Yaḥyā ibn 'Adī, théologien chrétien et philosophe arabe.
15. E. Gubel-E. Lipiński-B. Servais-Soyez (ed.), Studia Phoenicia I-II.
16. W. Skalmowski-A. Van Tongerloo (ed.), Middle Iranian Studies.
17. M. van Mol, Handbook Modern Arabisch.
18. C. Laga-J.A. Munitiz-L. Van Rompay (ed.), After Chalcedon. Studies in Theology and Church History.
19. E. Lipiński (ed.), The Land of Israel: Cross-Roads of Civilizations.
20. S. Wachsmann, Aegeans in the Theban Tombs.
21. K. Van Lerberghe, Old Babylonian Legal and Administrative Texts from Philadelphia.
22. E. Lipiński (ed.), Phoenicia and the East Mediterranean in the First Millennium B.C.
23. M. Heltzer-E. Lipiński (ed.), Society and Economy in the Eastern Mediterranean (1500-1000 B.C.).
24. M. Van de Mieroop, Crafts in the Early Isin Period.
25. G. Pollet (ed.), India and the Ancient World.
26. E. Lipiński (ed.), Carthago.
27. E. Verreet, Eine morpho-syntaktische Abhandlung über das Modalsystem im Ugaritischen.
28. R. Zadok, The Pre-Hellenistic Israelite Anthroponymy and Prosopography.

ORIENTALIA LOVANIENSIA
ANALECTA

30

COPTIC
GRAMMATICAL CHRESTOMATHY

A COURSE FOR ACADEMIC AND PRIVATE STUDY

EDITED BY

A. SHISHA-HALEVY

PEETERS
LEUVEN
1988

For my parents

ISBN 90-6831-139-5
D. 1988/0602/54

TABLE OF CONTENTS

INTRODUCTORY NOTES. Aims and conception; text sources; selection policy and arrangement; structure of the Chrestomathy; technical information, editorial policy, terminology; guide-lines and practical suggestions for the student; Egyptian and Coptic VII

SCHEMATIC STRUCTURAL OUTLINE OF THE CHRESTOMATHY XIV

THE ALPHABET XV

GLOSSARY PRACTICE . XVII

FIRST PART (units I-VI, sections 1-26): THE FORMAL-FUNCTIONAL SYSTEM 1

Unit I: The noun phrase (noun and verb lexemes), the Nominal Sentence, the Proper Name (sections 1-4); the adverb phrase (section 5) 3

Unit II: The tense-base conjugation ("Tripartite" pattern); the imperative; the causative conjugation (sections 6-11) . . 32

Unit III: Presentative and existential clauses (sections 12-14) . 62

Unit IV: The durative ("Bipartite") conjugation (sections 15-18) 72

Unit V: The adverb predicated (sections 19-21) 94

Unit VI: Synthetic conjugation forms with suffixed subject (sections 22-26) 101

SECOND PART (units I-IV, sections 27-51): TOPICS OF ADVANCED SYNTAX 111

Unit I: *Conversion* 113

A. The circumstantial conversion (sections 27-30) . 113

B. The relative conversion (sections 31-33) . . . 120

C. The "Second Tense" conversion (sections 34-38) 128

D. The preterite conversion (sections 39-41) . 134

Unit II: *The conjunctive* (sections 42-43) 142

Unit III: *Conditional and related constructions* (sections 44-48) 147

Unit IV: *The infinitive outside conjugation* (sections 49-51) . 152

THIRD PART: ASSORTED UNCLASSIFIED TEXTS (graded according to difficulty) 157

TABLES: A. PRONOUNS (articles, demonstratives, personal pronouns) 168

B. Nominal Sentence patterns . . . 172
C. The base ("tripartite") conjugation 175
D. The causative conjugation . . . 180
E. Existential and possessive statements . 182
F. The durative conjugation . 184
G. The converters . . 194
H. The "adjective verbs" . 196
I. Lexical verb morphology 197
J. Classification 199

Glossary 202

Bibliography 257
Index to the grammatical terms 260
Terminological glossary and correspondence-list . 261

COPTIC GRAMMATICAL CHRESTOMATHY
(THE SAHIDIC DIALECT)

INTRODUCTORY NOTES:

(1) AIMS AND CONCEPTION. The following reasoned collection of texts is intended to serve as a means for acquiring acquaintance with the elements of Sahidic Coptic grammar, giving the student the competence and confidence which should enable him to deal subsequently with any Coptic text as far as grammatical analysis and translation is concerned; it is meant for students approaching the language for its general linguistic, Egyptological, theological or literary interests. This is neither a grammar, nor a textbook, not yet an "Introduction to Coptic", but a custom-built annotated anthology meant as a one-year (approx. 40 weeks, 4 to 6 weekly hours) course of initiation into the analysis of Coptic texts, expressly meant as a substitute to so-called "grammars". It is meant for self-tuition, for assisted university courses (e.g. as a framework for a series of lectures), and for use in conjunction with existing textbooks. The conception underlying this chrestomathy is connected with a deep scepticism regarding the scientific validity of conventional "grammars" for a didactic introduction to a language as well as their effectiveness in achieving the goal of "teaching a language". This conception, no less than a procedural professional tenet, recognizes only THE TEXT, never grammatical opinion "on the language" or models of grammar, as the way to acquire unbiased linguistic insight and "sense of system". More specifically, I see the "ascending", synthetic direction of building grammatical familiarity in ever-increasing extent as the didactic counterpart as well as product of the "descending" textual analysis which I adopt as the sole valid structural one. I have tried to distil into this chrestomathy the experience of twenty years of teaching Coptic at the Hebrew University and abroad, to students of linguistics, Egyptology, archaeology and other fields, and to apply to its construction sensitivity both to the linguistic structure of Coptic and to the special didactic needs of its students.

(2) TEXT SOURCES. For reasons I have made clear elsewhere, I believe the literary corpus of the writings of SHENOUTE, the 4th-5th century prior and Archimandrite to be an ideal basis for acquiring an understanding

of Sahidic grammatical structure. It is extensive, authentic (i.e. untranslated), idiomatic and as idiolectic a text as one can wish for. Although Scripture Coptic seems often less complicated for beginners, this easiness is usually paid for with a heavy price of helplessness and feeling of unfamiliarity when leaving this textual hothouse, and may, I believe, be compensated for by thoughtful selection and proper arrangement of the material. The student who approaches the Coptic Scriptures after studying the Chrestomathy will find them relatively unproblematic and easy to tackle. I have here drawn from the major published editions as well as some unpublished fragments of Shenoute's opus.

(3) SELECTION POLICY AND ARRANGEMENT. This Chrestomathy (originally inspired by J. Strachan's *Old Irish Paradigms and Selections from the Old Irish Glosses*, Dublin 1904-5 and often reprinted since, and H.B. Rosén's *Specimens of Gothic* (Gothic and Hebrew; the Hebrew University Department of Linguistics, for private circulation) is constructed on the principles of CUMULATIVENESS (progressive advance, gradation of difficulty, ever-increasing extent of analysis) and SYSTEM SCANNING. A prime principle — one which, in conjunction with the other two makes selection so very difficult — is NON-INTERFERENCE WITH THE TEXT: the least omission or gapping for reasons of difficulty or complexity, no "editing". The student must get acquainted at just the right conjunction with the elements requisite to assure his progress to analyzing more complex units. I have tried hard not to leave out the exemplification of any constituent element of phrase or clause, although completeness of the system depicted is, of course, not feasible and not aimed for. Such phenomena as are not treated in a special section or sub-section of texts are usually commented on in notes, and may be recovered by using the subject index. The CHOICE OF TEXTS aims at a varied and "capricious" illustration, to ensure as realistic a textual experience as possible and recapture the feeling of a natural and context-dependent text, counter-effecting the classifiedness and metatextual "paradigmatic" feel, and convey a taste of actual complexity. Redundance — repetition of texts and notes — is programmatic, for the sake of reviewing, solidifying familiarity and observing grammatical features from several different aspects, in different contexts and different grades of resolution, as well as letting autodidacts enjoy something like a teacher's patient attention. An impression of relative statistical importance is meant to be given by the quantitative difference in strength of illustration, with "flooding" for certain topics such as noun determination and the main tenses.

"Imports" from outside the corpus are as a rule avoided (except for one or two cases): rarity or non-attestation is no less important than attestation as a piece of grammatical information. Note that the grammatical opinion reflected in the classification and selection, although hopefully not distorted, is often practical and idealizing: typologies and "pigeonholes" are made out to be sharper and clearer than they really are. Inside a section or sub-section, the arrangement is consciously not consistently progressive: easier or simpler constructions are repeated further on, and more difficult ones are tentatively introduced early on and revisited later. This is once again meant to reproduce the variety and randomness of the natural text, but also to allow for reviewing and relaxation. Note that the presented arrangement of the texts is merely a suggestion: the student or teacher may opt for a different, individually suited sequence of work and rate of progress, or decide to skip texts for various reasons.

An asterisk (*) marks sections that may be skipped and revisited at a more advanced stage; in the Bibliography it marks reading recommended for advanced students.

(4) THE STRUCTURE OF THE CHRESTOMATHY. The FIRST PART consists of six units (I-VI) comprising 26 sections, and scans systematically and exhaustively the formal and basically functional phenomena relating to the *noun syntagm* (including Nominal Sentence patterns), the *verb system* (the base and durative conjugations, alias Tripartite and Bipartite, imperative, causative conjugation, etc.) as well as *adverb predication*. The *converters* are first introduced here in their full formal and main functional scope.

The SECOND PART of four units (VII-X), sections 27-51, revisits, in considerably complicating detail and better resolution, special topics chosen for their difficulty and/or their systemic significance: *conversion*; the *conjunctive*; *conditional complexes*; the *extra-conjugational infinitive*.

The THIRD PART consists wholly of *assorted texts* of advanced syntax, arranged in ascending order of difficulty (complexity and extent, graded I-III) and assuming acquaintance with the first two parts. It is meant to consolidate and test the competence acquired earlier, by and combinatory reviewing of texts and by exposure to the full range of «facts or life» of *la parole*, such as redundance, anacoluthia and plain difficulty of construction. Here the student is to be weaned from specialization and the feeling of predictability, and is left on his own to identify and place grammatical "irregularities" and plumb new syntactic depths. Here, too,

his analytic sensitivity is put to the test by some texts in *scriptio continua*.

The textual parts are followed by the instruments of work and reference: TABLES OF GRAMMATICAL and LEXICAL MORPHOLOGY, GLOSSARIES (lexemic, onomastic and morphemic), INDEX TO THE GRAMM. NOTES, TERMINOLOGICAL GLOSSARY AND CORRESPONDENCE LIST, BIBLIOGRAPHY.

(5) TECHNICAL INFORMATION. EDITORIAL POLICY. TERMINOLOGY

(a) SECTION HEADINGS and INTRODUCTORY REMARKS should be taken as no more than minimal general information considered requisite to tackle the following Coptic texts, and are not precise grammatical statement or resumes (reference to tables is assumed). The bibliographical references are selective (mostly to current grammars, textbooks or monographical treatments; suggestions for advanced reading are marked by an asterisk).

(b) The individual texts themselves may be followed by any or both of two types of mega-textual annotation:

"NB": basic specific information requisite for dealing with the relevant text — bridging information gaps, often anticipating later illustration.

"OBS.": notes of broader grammatical perspective or deeper import; some advance information; drawing attention to unexemplified features.

The annotation serves the additional purpose of anticipating further information; also of accustoming the student to alternative terminologies and statement formulations, from different aspects of the analysis. (I attribute great importance to this: the student should be made to realize at an early stage that terms are not "correct" or absolute, but always provisional, tentative and approximative.)

(c) The original ORTHOGRAPHY is as a rule not tampered with, with two exceptions: MS punctuation is not reproduced (except for some cases in Part III); the supralineation is standardized and "average". (No Western punctuation is used, save occasionally the full stop (.) to separate several illustrations of the same feature in one text and rarely three full stops (...) to mark absolutely unavoidable omissions).

(d) MORPH-SEPARATING DASHES (-) are introduced in the earlier parts of the chrestomathy when this is considered helpful, on early encounters of new morphs or in such syntagms as are especially complex or contain "elusive" affixes; their use is a function of the expected difficulty in isolating the affix and its environment as well as of the stage of progress. Consistency is here not aimed for, and always overruled by didactic considerations.

(e) TERMINOLOGY: I have innovated rarely, and only in cases of a terminological vacuum, or when the existing/traditional terms are patently inadequate or misleading. Terminological definitions (or rather explanations) and English-German-French correspondences are listed at the end of the book. Acquaintance with other languages or a general (theoretical) linguistic basis is not presupposed, although this will prove a distinct advantage in many ways and is strongly recommended.
(f) GLOSSARY: the lexical glossary combines native and Greek lexemes as well as the Proper Names in the following order (under each letter): Coptic — Greek — Proper Names. (See the Glossary Practice, which is also meant to practise the resolution of words into these classes).

(6) Here is a series of GUIDE-LINES and PRACTICAL SUGGESTIONS for the student, especially for the one who uses this Chrestomathy by himself/herself, without the benefit of a teacher's guidance. *These should be read carefully before commencing the study of the texts.*
(a) Before starting, have a free-leaf notebook ready, in which you enter new grammatical information as you go along, arranged roughly by conventional textbook headings ("the Noun", "Nominal Sentence", "the Verb" — with subdivisions as required); index every single morph (also difficult lexical items!) you come across, referring them to the relevant pages in your "grammar". You will find this grammatical record, built up gradually and without omission, a worthwhile investment of effort: you will have a reliable grammatical sketch to use when stepping outside the scope of the chrestomathy to tackle new texts.
(b) READ THE TEXTS ALOUD at least twice — once before your analysis and translation of them, once afterwards.
(c) Read the notes (if any) only after you have done your best to analyse and translate the text without help. Consult the "NB" notes first, the "OBS." notes after completing the translation; if possible, look the bibliographical references up when you are at least half-way through the section.
(d) In the actual analysis, try to separate (a well-sharpened pencil is best for the purpose) the lexical from the grammatical component of an isolated string of elements; then subdivide the components of the grammatical "cluster" of elements, which will usually precede the lexical one, locating the grammatical units ("grammemes"), one by one, in the index. At the first stages of your progress, MAKE A POINT OF ALWAYS LOOKING UP THE GRAMMEMES IN THE GLOSSARY — DO NOT RELY ON YOUR

MEMORY. Full use of the Tables and Glossaries is presupposed: these are your instruments of study.

(e) Once you have isolated the lexical elements in your word or text, you will have to decide whether they are of Greek or native Coptic origin (there are two separate glossaries for each of these categories). If you are unfamiliar with Greek, make a note of the following terminations of lexemes, characteristic of the Greek element in Coptic: masculines -OS (-ⲟⲥ), -ON (-ⲟⲛ), -ÔN (-ⲱⲛ), -ÊS (-ⲏⲥ) -EUS (-ⲉⲩⲥ), -MA (-ⲙⲁ); feminines -Ⲁ (-ⲁ), -IA (-ⲓⲁ) -Ê (-ⲏ), -IS (-ⲓⲥ) -SIS (-ⲥⲓⲥ) for nouns; -E (-ⲉ), -EI (-ⲉⲓ), -Ⲁ (-ⲁ) and -OU (-ⲟⲩ) for verb lexemes. Greek-origin prepositions, particles, adverbs, conjunctions are relatively few; make a point of looking them up in the Greek glossary. (Note that the Greek lists (glossary and index) are combined, under each letter, in the following order: NATIVE elements — GREEK elements — PROPER NAMES); generally speaking, the "phonemic image" of the Greek element of the lexicon (and that of proper names) differs sharply from the native one, and with some practice you should have little trouble on that score. Consulting a Greek dictionary (the smaller or medium-sized Liddell-Scott will do) is suggested, when you acquire sufficient confidence in uncovering the grammatical structure of the material; the use of a special Patristic Greek dictionary (e.g. Lampe) is of course recommended.

(f) By Coptic lexicographical convention, the Coptic lexemes are arranged in the Glossary, as in Semitic, by radicals — i.e. first BY CONSONANTS and only then by the alphabetic vowel sequence for every consonant. (NB: the SEMI-VOWELS U/W (ⲩ, ⲟⲩ) and I/Y (ⲓ, ⲉⲓ) count as CONSONANTS (when they are radical) OR VOWELS (when they are not). If you are unfamiliar with this system, invest some time in studying the Glossary and getting to understand why any given lexeme is where you find it. Following the alphabet, you will find a list of Greek-Coptic and Egyptian-Coptic Proper Names, nouns and verbs (occurring in the texts) for you to look up in the Glossary as a preliminary exercise. Again, note that the Greek elements follow the native Coptic ones under each letter in the Glossary; the Proper Names come last.

(g) Transitive verbs are entered in the Glossary under their ABSOLUTE (object-less) INFINITIVE form, which you will often be expected to reconstruct from the actual form in your text, where the verb may be combined with a nominal or pronominal direct object, or where you may have its Stative (Qualitative) form; consult TABLE I, and copy the «principal parts» of the verbs you isolate — absolute, pre-nominal ("construct") and pre-pronominal ("pronominal") infinitive as well as stative, if any.

(h) DO NOT APPROXIMATE. NEVER COMPROMISE and settle for a less than a formally and semantically satisfactory analysis and identification of entities. If you cannot identify one grammeme, try another; if you have unsuccessfully tried all, do not brood on the text you have found difficult (do not allot more than, say, twenty minutes to any single item in Part One) but proceed, returning to it after two or three texts. START BY IDENTIFYING GRAMMATICAL ELEMENTS: they are fewer and semantically more clear-cut than lexemes, and will help you decide whether to look for a noun or a verb in the Glossary.

(i) Although you may use the glossary for the whole course of the Chrestomathy, you should try and graduate to using a full-scale dictionary (Crum's *Coptic Dictionary* is best) as soon as possible — not, however, approximately before you master Part One. When using a dictionary and even our Glossary, never settle for the first meaning offered for the lexeme, but perusc the entry, accumulating meanings and subsequently deciding on the one most suiting your context. It is suggested you copy out the «principal parts» of verb lexemes into a list in your own grammatical sketch.

(j) If you work alone, try to proceed in the given order of texts. Do not skip unless you come up against some insurmountable difficulty with a text or feel you are familiar with the illustrated phenomena: the texts have been carefully selected and arranged with a view to illustrating in a reasoned order various essential aspects of grammar. DO NOT RUSH! Set yourself a quota of texts or time of study and do not exceed it. (Twice-weekly sessions is the lowest desirable frequency at early stages). If possible, proceed at a steady rate.

(k) For various reasons which cannot be enumerated here, I advise against freely consulting "grammatical opinion", i.e. using conventional or handy grammar-books or textbooks (beyond the "BIBLIOGRAPHY" recommendations), at least before a text-based "feeling of the language" and some degree of critical faculty are developed.

(7) Sahidic ("Dialect S") was the main and largely representative dialect of Coptic, the language of Egyptian Christendom and last phase of the Egyptian language, of which the main stages are (partly overlapping as spoken/written idioms):

(a) script: Hieroglyphic and its cursive form, Hieratic:

Old Egyptian (from about 3000 B.C.)

Middle Egyptian (from about 2000 B.C.)

Late Egyptian (from about 1300 B.C.)

(b) Script: Demotic (very cursive Hieratic, often interlaced into groups): Demotic (Persian, Ptolemaic and Roman, from about 700 B.C.)
(c) Script: Coptic-Greek:
Coptic (from the 3rd century A.D.; died out as a spoken language by the 17th century).

Other important dialects of Coptic are Bohairic ("B", centered in the Western Delta of the Nile), Oxyrhynchite ("M", for the dialect of "Middle Egypt" or "Mesokemic"), Achmimic ("A") and Subachmimic or Lycopolitan ("A^2" or "L", the main dialect of the Nag Hammadi Gnostic library), Fayyumic ("F"), with some others and many subvarieties.

From the genetic point of view of language classification, Egyptian-Coptic constitutes a special group of its own. However, the striking affinities it shows with both Semitic and African (e.g. Berber) languages have led to the widely accepted postulation of a Hamito-Semitic or Afro-Asiatic common family (although the same affinities can be explained by language blending, rather than by genealogical descent).

NOUN	VERB	ADVERB
noun phrase: "the man", "a man", "Man", "my brother" "the wise man", "three men", "Jesus the Saviour", "a man and a woman", "man and/or woman"; "to hear" "to make him hear" **sections 1.1-2.3, 4, 9, 49-51**		**adverb phrase**: "in the house", "there", "now", "to me" "above", "outside", "why?", "where?" **section 5**
vocative: "O man!" **section 1.1 (a)**	**imperative**: "Hear!" "Let him hear!" **sections 8, 10**	
existence: "There is a man", "There is no man"; "Here is a man" **sections 12-14**	**existential present/future**: "There is a man coming", "There is a man about to come"; "No man is coming", "No man is about to come" **sections 15.2, 16.2, 17.2**	**existential adverb predication**: "There is a man here", "No man is here" **section 19.2**
Nominal Sentence: "He is *a man*", "*God* is our help", "*You* are our father", "I am *a sinner*", "His name is *Paul*", "The root of all evil is *pride*", "It is he" **sections 3.1-3.4**	**Conjugation Forms**: "I heard/did not hear", "The man heard/did not hear"; "Since you/the man came"; "I am singing", "The man is singing" "I am about to sing"; "She is good", "He wishes", "He said"; "Let him hear!", "... and you shall hear" **sections 6-7, 10-11, 15.1, 16.1, 17.1, 18, 23-6**	**adverbial predicate** (present tense): "I am here", "The man is here"; "He is like this"; "Woe to you!", "Glory unto Him!" **sections 19.1, 20-21**

PHRASE ADDRESS EXISTENTIAL CLAUSE

CIRCUMSTANTIAL CONVERSION **(sections 27-30)**: annexing a predicate to a pronoun, noun or verb: "the man/a man/he going", "He went crying", "Having come, he ..."	"SECOND TENSE" CONVERSION **(sections 34-38)**: "that..." as in "It is to you that I have come": emphasizing (focussing) various elements of the clause
RELATIVE CONVERSION **(sections 31-33)**: adjoining a clause to a definite noun: "the man who heard" "the man whose face I am watching", "he about whom we say"	PRETERITE CONVERSION **(sections 39-41)**: marking in narrative a change in "step" or tempo; marking anteriority, shift to the past, remote wish or condition

THE ALPHABET

	letter form	transliteration & approx. phonic(*) value	numeric value	contemporary name
(of Greek Origin:				
	A	a (as in French avoir)	1	Alpha
	B	b	2	Beta
	Γ	g	3	Gamma
	Δ	d	4	Dalda
	E	e (as in men, French elle)	5	Ei
	–	–	6	
	Z	z	7	Zeta
	H	ê (as in main, German ch; not diphthong)	8	Heta
	Θ	(comb.) t + h (hothouse)	9	Theta
	I, EI	i (as in sheet)	10	Iota
	K	k	20	Kappa
	Λ	l	30	Lauda, Lola
	M	m	40	Mi
	N	n	50	Ni
	Ξ	(comb. k + s	60	Xi
	O	o (as in French note)	70	Ou
	Π	p	80	Pi
	P	r	100	Ro
	C	s	200	Simma
	T	t	300	Tau
	Y, OY	w, u (as in foot)	400	He
	Φ	(comb.) p + h (haphazard)	500	Phi
	X	(comb.) k + h (backhold)	600	Khi
	Ψ	(comb.) p + s (apse)	700	Psi
	Ω	ô (as in door)	800	O
(Of Egyptian Origin:)				
	Ϣ	š (as in ship)		Shai
	Ϥ	f	90	Fai
	Ϩ	h (as in house)		Hori
	Ϫ	j (as in jam)		Djandja
	Ϭ	c (as in chalk or bookyear)		Chima
	Ⲧ	(comb.) t + i (as in teen)		Ti

(*) Of practical value only (e.g. for reading out the texts); Standard Southern British equivalents.

The *superlinear stroke* is written above a consonant (esp. one of the sonorants ⲗ ⲙ ⲛ ⲣ ⲃ; in the manuscripts, above a consonant or a group of consonants), to indicate its *syllabic* status (i.e. that it forms a syllable or a syllable peak by itselves): ⲙⲛ̄ⲧ- ϩⲣ̄ⲃ ⲕⲗ̄ⲯ ⲧⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲣⲉ "the testimony". Note that printed editions sometimes do not attempt to reproduce the superlinear stroke in the manuscript. In the Chrestomathy, only the syllabic peak (center) is marked with the superlinear stroke.

GLOSSARY PRACTICE

Look up the following verbs, nouns and Proper Names (Egyptian-Coptic and Greek-Coptic intermixed) in the Glossary, and copy the words and meanings given into your notebook.

Note:

(1) under each letter of the alphabet, the native words come first (arranged by their consonantal "skeleton"); then the ones of Greek origin; then the Proper Names, both last arranged in the European fashion, by vowels and consonants.

(2) In Greek words, ignore an initial ϩ before a vowel as regards its assignment to a letter: that is, look for ϩϵ under ϵ, ϩο under ο and so on.

(3) For some native words you will find more than one entry in the Glossary: copy all meanings given.

ⲗⲁϩⲥ	ⲭⲱ
ⲛⲟⲃ	ⲙⲉ
ⲡⲱⲧ	ϩⲛⲕⲉ
ⲙⲉⲗⲟⲥ	ⲟⲣⲅⲏ
ⲕⲁϩ	ⲃⲓⲛⲉ
ⲙⲉ	ⲁⲣⲭⲉⲓ
ⲕⲱ	ⲱⲙ̄ⲙⲟ
ⲁⲡⲉ	ⲱⲙ̄ⲙⲱ
ϩⲉⲗⲡⲓⲥ	ⲥⲁⲣⲝ̄
ⲡⲁⲩⲗⲟⲥ	ⲥⲙⲟⲩ
ⲃⲁⲱⲣ	ⲕⲣⲓⲛⲉ
ⲣⲱⲙⲉ	ⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ
ⲁⲥⲉⲃⲏⲥ	ⲟⲩⲁ
ⲣⲓⲙⲉ	ⲑⲣⲟⲛⲟⲥ
ⲥⲱⲧⲡ̄	ϩⲟⲟⲩⲧ
ϩⲉ	ϩⲟⲃⲟⲗⲟⲥ
ϩⲏⲧ	ⲕⲟⲩⲓ
ϥⲱⲧⲉ	ⲕⲣⲟⲛⲟⲥ
ⲡⲗⲁⲥⲥⲉ	ⲱⲏⲣⲉ
ϩⲁϩ	ⲱⲉⲉⲣⲉ
†	ⲙⲟⲩⲟⲩⲧ

ⲫⲓ	ⲙⲟⲩ
ⲧⲁⲗⲟ	ⲙⲟⲟⲩ
ϩⲏⲅⲉⲙⲱⲛ	ⲉⲕⲕⲗⲏⲥⲓⲁ
ⲁⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲉ	ⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲱ
ⲑⲁⲗⲁⲥⲥⲁ	ⲑⲉⲟⲫⲓⲗⲉⲥⲧⲁⲧⲟⲥ
ⲡⲟⲟⲛⲉ	ⲡⲉ
ⲑⲗⲓⲯⲓⲥ	ⲫⲟⲣⲉⲓ
ⲥⲟⲟⲩ	ϩⲗⲟⲃ
ⲕⲁⲓⲛ	ϩⲟⲗⲃ̄
ⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ	ⲉⲓⲣⲉ
ⲯⲉⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ	ⲥⲓⲛⲟⲩⲑⲓⲟⲥ
ϫⲱⲟⲛ	ⲉⲓⲙⲉ
ⲣⲁⲯⲉ	ⲉⲓⲣⲏⲛⲏ
ⲡⲁⲣⲑⲉⲛⲟⲥ	ⲉⲓ
ⲧⲱⲱⲃⲉ	ⲉⲓⲱⲧ
ϫⲱⲱⲙⲉ	ⲉⲓⲟⲧⲉ
ⲃⲣⲟⲟⲙⲡⲉ	ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩ-
ⲏⲥⲁⲓⲁⲥ	ϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ
ⲯⲧⲟⲣⲧⲣ̄	ϩⲫⲏⲛⲟⲥ
ϩⲁⲙⲏⲛ	ⲥⲟⲟⲩϩ
ⲙⲉⲧⲁⲛⲟⲉⲓ	ⲅⲣⲁⲙⲙⲁⲧⲉⲩⲥ
ⲙ̄ⲕⲁϩ	ⲃⲁⲗⲙⲡⲉ
ⲥⲫⲣⲁⲅⲓⲥ	ϩⲉⲓⲕⲱⲛ

FIRST PART (Units I-VI, Sections 1-26): THE FORMAL/FUNCTIONAL SYSTEM

(The noun phrase, adverb phrase; Nominal Sentence, verb system, adverb predication)

PART ONE:
UNIT (I): THE NOUN PHRASE (NOUN & VERB LEXEMES);
THE NOMINAL SENTENCE; THE PROPER NAME; THE ADVERB PHRASE
(sections 1-5)

1.1 The determinators: articles, demonstratives, possessive pronoun and article
1.1.1 Inherent (inalienable) possession
1.2 The attributive group (the noun expanded by ⲛ̄-)
1.3 The possessive group (the noun expanded by ⲛ̄-, ⲛ̄ⲧⲉ-)
1.4 Apposition
1.5 Quantifiers; number names

2.1 Noun coordination ("... and ...")
2.2 Noun disjunction ("... or ...")
2.3 Noun reiteration

3. The Nominal Sentence: clauses predicating a pronoun or noun syntagm
3.1 The *interlocutive* pattern: # interlocutive (1st-2nd persons: "I/we, you") pronominal subject + noun-syntagm predicate #
3.1.1 The *interlocutive* subject topicalized
3.1.2 The *interlocutive* pattern, converted

3.2 The *delocutive* pattern: # nominal/pronominal predicate + delocutive (3rd persons: "he, she, they") pronominal subject #
3.2.1 The *delocutive* subject expanded and specified by an appositive noun
3.2.2 The *delocutive* subject topicalized
3.2.3 The *delocutive* pattern, converted

3.3 The *copular* pattern: # nominal/pronominal subject + copula + nominal predicate #
3.3.3 The *copular* pattern, converted

3.4 Assorted patterns combined
(*)3.5 Some special Nominal Sentence patterns
(*)4 The Proper Name: selected special constructions

5. The adverb phrase

1.1 THE DETERMINATORS: articles, demonstrative pronouns, possessive articles and pronouns (Table A1-A4)

(a) The definite article: "the ..." (ⲡ-, ⲧ-, ⲛ̄-)
(b) The indefinite articles: "a ...", "some ..." (ⲟⲩ-, ϩⲉⲛ-)
(c) The zero article
(d) ... ⲛⲓⲙ "every ...", "any ..."
(e) The 'near' demonstrative: "this" (ⲡⲁⲓ, ⲡⲉⲓ-)
(f) The 'remote', affective demonstrative: "that" (ⲡⲏ, ⲡⲓ-)
(g) The possessive article: "my, your, his/her ..." (etc.) (ⲡⲁ-, ⲡⲉⲕ-, ⲡⲟⲩ-, ⲡⲉϥ- ...)
(h) The possessive pronoun: "mine, yours, his/hers ..." (etc.), "(the) one pertaining to ..." (ⲡⲱⲓ, ⲡⲱⲕ, ⲡⲱ, ⲡⲱϥ, ⲡⲱⲥ ...; ⲡⲁ-, ⲧⲁ-, ⲛⲁ-)

NB: (1) the definite articles have an alternant vocalized form: ⲡⲉ- (masc.), ⲧⲉ- (fem.), ⲛⲉ- (plur.), before a double consonant (consonant cluster) or certain time-expressing nouns; the plural def. article ⲛ̄- assimilates to a subsequent labial, taking the form ⲙ̄-.

(2) Many nouns have a regular plural form, e.g. ϩⲱⲃ "work" *vs.* ϩⲃⲏⲩⲉ "works" or ϩⲧⲟ "horse" *vs.* ϩⲧⲱⲱⲣ "horses".

(3) A very small class of nouns has a regular feminine sex form, e.g. ⲥⲟⲛ "brother" *vs.* ⲥⲱⲛⲉ "sister" or ⲣ̄ⲣⲟ "king" *vs.* ⲣ̄ⲣⲱ "queen".

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

STERN parr. 226-241 (a-c), 272 (d), 242-249 (e-f), 250-253 (g-h), 199-207 (gender, number); STEINDORFF parr. 136-137 (a), 140-141 (b), 142-143 (c), 88-89 (e-f), 85-87 (g-h), 92-94 (gender, number); TILL parr. 87-91, 94-99 (a), 92-93, 100-102 (b), 103-108 (c), 231 (d), 201-202 (e-f), 203-206 (g-h); VERGOTE parr. 121-122, 124-125 (a), 123-125 (b), 126 (c), 127-128 (e-f), 136-137 (g-h); LAMBDIN parr. 1.3, 17.2 (a), 2.1-2.2 (b-c), 4.2, 5.2, 30.8 (e-f), 16.2 (d), 4.1, 22.2 (g-h), 1.1-1.2 (gender, number); POLOTSKY, Rev. Till p. 229 f. (f); * SHISHA-HALEVY, chapter 5 (gender, determination)

(a)

ⲡⲥⲁⲃⲉ. ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲑⲏⲧⲏⲥ. ⲑⲩⲡⲟⲕⲣⲓⲥⲓⲥ. ⲛ̄ⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ. ⲧⲉⲑⲉⲱⲣⲓⲁ. ⲛⲉⲅⲣⲁⲫⲏ. ⲛⲉⲣⲣⲱⲟⲩ. ⲡⲉϩⲟⲟⲩ. ⲧⲉⲩⲯⲏ. ⲱ ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲱ ⲡⲃⲁ̄ⲗⲗⲉ. ⲛⲉϩⲃⲏⲩⲉ. ⲙ̄ⲙⲉⲣⲁⲧⲉ. ⲱ ⲡⲙⲁⲓ- ϩⲏⲇⲟⲛⲏ. ⲛⲉϩⲓⲟⲙⲉ. ⲙ̄ⲫⲱⲛⲏ ⲛⲉⲛⲧⲟⲗⲏ. ⲧⲉϩⲟⲩⲉⲓⲧⲉ. ⲛⲁⲕⲁⲑⲁⲣⲧⲟⲥ. ⲧⲉⲩⲛⲟⲩ. †ⲣⲏⲛⲏ. ⲛⲉϩⲃⲱ. ⲑⲉⲗⲡⲓⲥ. ⲡⲁϥ. ⲛⲉⲥⲟⲟⲩ

{NB: ⲣ̈ⲣⲱⲟⲩ plural of ⲣ̄ⲣⲟ; ⲙ̄- = ⲛ̄- before the labials ⲡ ⲙ}

[OBS. The vocative (addressed) noun is as a rule definite]

(b)

ογϩηκε. ογzωον. ογαρχων. ογρ̄ηηαο. ογηατοει. ογληστηc. ϩενaq. ϩενρ̄ρο. ϩενϩιοογε. ογϩητ ñογωτ. ϩενκατα-caρ̄. ογψ̄ηηω.

{NB: ñογωτ "single"}

[OBS. ϩενκατacaρ̄: note the indefinite determination of a prepositional phrase: "some that are ..."]

(c)

(ρ̄-)παρθενος. (ρ̄-)ναητ. (ρ̄-)ειρηνη. (ρ̄-)ανaψ. (†-)cβω. (†-)ϩice. (ϫι-)ηπε. (ογñ-)ρωme. (ογñ-)бом. (m̄mñ-)aγaπη.

{NB: the auxiliary verbs ρ̄- "be, become", "make"; †- "give", "cause"; ϫι- "take". ογñ-/m̄n- "there is/there is not" (sections 12-14)}

(d)

ϩice nim. cmoy nim aρeth nim taeio nim. mñt-at-cωtm̄ nim. ñca-ca nim. ϩm̄-ma nim.

(e)

πεitonoc. neiψaxe. ϩñ-teiρompe tai. neiρωme. ñteiϩe. ογteimine. ϩenteimine

[OBS. ογteimine, ϩenteimine indefinite articles specified by teimine]

(f)

πimhhψe thρ̄q. niπaραφγcic. πiϫaxe. niacebhc. niδikaioc. πihρπ̄ ñογωτ. niбin-ογωm ñογωτ. m̄πinaγ. ñθe ñ-nikooγe. †ταλαιπωρος. †ϫaxe. †πηγη.

{NB: πι- ... ñογωτ "the very same ...". ñθe ñ- "like ..." (lit. "in the manner of ...)}

[OBS. thρ̄- is a reinforcer or "augens", an element containing a pronoun, modifying a preceding noun or pronoun: "all ...", "the whole of ..."]

(g)

πενσταγρος. νεγτñϩ. ϫετñϩελπις thρ̄c. ταmñτκογι. πεqϩ-m̄ϩaλ. ηνετñψγχη m̄mιn m̄mωτñ. νεqναχϩε. ϫτεγδικαιοσγνη. ϫπαειωτ. νεγαιτημα thρογ// ϩενπαρα-τενφγcic// νεκαγαθον. πογϩαι. ταπροσφορα ϫτογmaγ// ñογωψρε// πενσmοτ πεντωψ τεννιστις τενmñτϩαρ̄ψ-ϩητ τενaγαπη τενϩγπομονη νεν-διωγmος νενϩice.

[OBS. ϩενπαρατενφγcic plural indefinite article followed by a prepositional phrase]

(h)
(ⲛ̄ⲣⲟⲟⲩⲱ) ⲛⲁ-ⲛ̄ⲱⲗⲏⲗ ⲛⲁ-ⲙ̄ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲛⲁ. ⲡⲉⲩⲉⲟⲟⲩ ⲙⲛ̄-ⲡⲁⲡⲉⲩⲉⲓⲱⲧ. ⲛⲉⲕⲍⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲛⲁⲛ̄ⲕⲁⲓⲣⲟⲥ ⲛⲁⲛ̄ⲣⲟⲙⲡⲉ ⲛⲁⲛⲉⲃⲟⲧⲉ. (ⲧⲃⲓⲛ-ⲱⲗⲏⲗ) ⲧⲁⲍⲉⲛⲙⲁ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲛ. ⲧⲁⲡⲥⲱⲧⲏⲣ. ⲧⲁⲙⲁⲣⲓⲁ (i.e. ⲑⲉⲓⲕⲱⲛ). ⲛⲁⲡⲉⲥⲍⲁⲓ. ⲧⲉⲛⲁⲛⲁⲅⲕⲏ ⲧⲱⲓ ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲱⲟⲩ ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲓⲙ

ⲡⲱⲕ (i.e. ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲃ and ⲡⲍⲁⲧ). ⲧⲱⲕ (i.e. ⲧⲟⲓⲕⲟⲩⲙⲉⲛⲏ). ⲛⲟⲩⲫ (i.e. ⲛⲉⲍⲃⲏⲩⲉ
ⲡⲱ (i.e. ⲡⲟⲩⲍⲁⲓ). ⲛⲟⲩⲕ (i.e. ⲛⲉⲕⲁⲣⲁⲑⲟⲛ). ⲡⲱⲥ (i.e. ⲡⲉⲥⲏⲓ).
{NB: ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁ-ⲛ augens, "(as) we (are) alone"}

1.1.1 INHERENT (intimate or "inalienable") POSSESSION expressed by a suffix pronoun following a special presuffixal (possesed) forms of a special class of nouns (esp. parts of the body).

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STERN parr. 195-198; STEINDORFF parr. 81-2; TILL par. 188; VERGOTE parr. 130(6), 131; LAMBDIN parr. 28.6, 29.4; LAYTON, "Compound Prepositions"

ⲣⲱ-ⲫ. ⲧⲟⲟⲧ-ⲕ̄. ⲍⲧⲏⲩ. ⲍⲧⲏ. ⲍⲏⲧⲫ̄. ⲱⲁⲛⲧⲫ̄. ⲧⲟⲟⲧ. ⲣ̄ⲛⲧⲟⲩ. ⲭⲱⲫ. ⲥⲟⲩⲛⲧⲥ̄
{NB: ⲍⲧⲏ precedes a zero (2nd person sgl. feminine) suffix pronoun; ⲧⲟⲟⲧ: -ⲧ "my" is zeroed after the final ⲧ of the presuffixal form of the noun; ⲣ̄ⲛⲧ → see ⲣⲁⲛ}

Sources for 1.1 & 1.1.1:
III 19, 27, 45, 46, 47, 63, 64, 66, 70, 72, 73, 77, 90, 93, 96, 114, 133, 159, 166, 184, 191, 197, 219, 221; IV 4, 27, 32, 46, 61, 64, 67f., 82, 83, 94, 106, 119, 162, 180, 184, 187, 194; Ch 19, 20, 21, 27, 62, 63, 66, 67, 72, 78, 81, 83, 97; Or. 153, 155, 158, 159, 160, 161, 162, 163, 167; Wess. 9 118, 148, 171, 174; RE 10 159, 161, 162; RE 11 17; A I 246; A II 341, 442; Cat. 42, 43; Leyd. 345, 369; E 66; Gol.

1.2 THE ATTRIBUTIVE PHRASE: the noun expanded by ⲛ̄- + zero-determinated noun. This construction expresses the characterization of one noun by the quality or kind of another; while ⲛ̄- is roughly equivalent to English "of" (or French "de"), the construction on the whole corresponds to "adjective + noun" in English or German.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STERN parr. 183-188; STEINDORFF parr. 147-150; TILL parr. 114-119, 122; VERGOTE par. 189 (1-6); LAMBDIN parr. 15.1, 16.1, 23.2; *SHISHA-HALEVY, Chapter 4

1. ογψαχε ⲛ̄ⲥⲃⲱ. ογψαχε ⲛ̄ⲥⲟⲫⲓⲁ (P 130.2 101 ro)
2. ογⲡ̅ⲛ̅ⲁ ⲛ̄ⲱⲛⲋ̄ (IV 15) {NB: ⲡ̅ⲛ̅ⲁ = ⲡⲛⲉⲩⲙⲁ}
3. ογⲛⲟϭ ⲛ̄ⲛⲁ. ογⲛⲟϭ ⲛ̄ⲥⲙⲟⲩ (IV 206)
4. ϩⲉⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲓⲥⲧⲟⲥ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ (III 172) {NB: ⲙ̄- = ⲛ̄- before ⲡ ⲫ ⲙ}
   [OBS. ⲡⲓⲥⲧⲟⲥ: the Greek masculine form of Greek-origin adjectives is used in Coptic for animates, both masculine and feminine]
5. ϩⲁϩ ⲛ̄ⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲛ (IV 89)
6. ογⲛⲟϭ ⲙ̄ⲙⲛⲛϣⲉ (Gol.)
7. ⲛⲉⲩϩⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲥⲩⲛⲏ (Gol.)
8. ϩⲉⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛ̄ⲥⲟⲫⲟⲥ (IV 59)
9. ⲗⲁⲗⲩ ⲛ̄ⲥⲙⲟⲧ (III 63)
10. ⲟⲩϩⲉⲑⲛⲟⲥ ⲛ̄ⲁⲥⲉⲃⲏⲥ: ⲡϩⲉⲑⲛⲟⲥ ⲛ̄ⲉⲩⲥⲉⲃⲏⲥ (III 221)
11. ϩⲱⲥ-ⲥⲟⲛ ⲙ̄ⲙⲉⲣⲓⲧ (IV 117)
12. ⲛⲉⲓⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲛ̄ϩⲱⲟⲛ (III 45)
13. ⲟⲩⲁⲱⲛ ⲛ̄ⲱⲁⲭⲉ (Ch. 97)
14. ⲟⲩⲥⲛϩⲉ ⲛ̄ⲁⲅⲅⲉⲗⲟⲥ (Ch. 34)
15. ⲛⲉϥⲙⲁⲧⲟⲓ ⲛ̄ⲭⲣⲏⲥⲧⲓⲁⲛⲟⲥ ϩⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲙⲉ (Ch. 70)
16. ⲛⲉⲓⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛ̄ϧⲁϧⲉ (III 70)
17. ⲛⲉⲑⲏⲣⲓⲟⲛ ⲛ̄ⲁⲅⲣⲓⲟⲛ (P 131.5 64 vo)
18. ⲡⲕⲁϩ ⲛ̄ⲣⲉϥ-ϯ-ⲕⲁⲣⲡⲟⲥ (IV 186)
19. ⲡⲉⲛⲉⲓⲱⲧ ⲙ̄ⲡⲣⲟⲫⲏⲧⲏⲥ (III 62)
20. ⲱ ⲡⲓⲛⲟϭ ⲛ̄ϩⲃⲁ (Or. 154)
21. ⲟⲩⲟⲣⲅⲏ ⲛ̄ⲁϣ ⲛ̄ⲃⲟⲧ (E 70) {NB: ⲁϣ ⲛ̄- "What kind of...?"}
22. ϩⲉⲛⲁⲧⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲛ̄ⲁⲡⲟⲥⲧⲟⲗⲟⲥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲙ̄ⲡⲣⲟⲫⲏⲧⲏⲥ (III 106)
23. ⲅⲉⲛⲟⲥ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲛ̄ϩⲉⲗⲗⲏⲛ ϩⲓ-ϩⲁⲓⲣⲉⲧⲓⲕⲟⲥ (Ch. 179)
    {NB: ϩⲓ- coordinates ("and") zero-determinated nouns (section 2.1)}
24. ⲥⲟⲟⲩϩⲥ̄ ⲙ̄ⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲥ ⲛ̄ⲣⲱⲙⲉ (Ch. 21)
    [OBS. note that in a certain affective tone it is the quality-expressing ("adjective") constituent of the attributive phrase that precedes]
25. ⲛⲉϥϩⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛ̄ⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲛ (III 64)
26. ϩⲁϩ ⲛ̄ⲥⲟϭ ⲛ̄ⲁⲧⲥⲃⲱ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛ̄ⲁⲑⲏⲧ (III 137) {NB: ⲁⲑⲏⲧ = ⲁⲧ-ϩⲏⲧ}
27. ϩⲉⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛ̄ⲁⲧⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲛ̄ⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲥ (III 171)
28. ⲡⲱⲱⲥ ⲙ̄ⲙⲉ ⲛ̄ⲣⲉϥⲧⲁⲙϩⲟ (Ch. 83)
29. ⲡⲁⲧⲛⲁ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲧⲟⲓ (Ch. 56)
30. ⲡⲓⲁⲕⲁⲑⲁⲣⲧⲟⲥ ⲛ̄ⲇⲓⲕⲁⲥⲧⲏⲥ (III 26)
31. ⲛⲓⲁⲛⲟⲙⲟⲥ ⲛ̄ⲁⲣⲭⲓⲉⲣⲉⲩⲥ ϩⲓⲡⲣⲉⲥⲃⲩⲧⲉⲣⲟⲥ ϩⲓⲅⲣⲁⲙⲙⲁⲧⲉⲩⲥ ϩⲓⲫⲁⲣⲓⲥⲁⲓⲟⲥ (Ch. 122)
32. ⲟⲩⲉⲓⲱⲧ ⲛ̄ⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛ̄ⲥⲁⲃⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛ̄ⲉⲩⲥⲉⲃⲏⲥ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ (Ch. 111)

33. ⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲣⲁⲛⲟⲙⲟⲥ ⲛ̄ⲁⲧⲛⲁ ⲛ̄ⲣⲉϥⲧⲱⲣⲡ̄ ⲛ̄ⲁⲕⲁⲑⲁⲣⲧⲟⲥ ⲛ̄ⲕⲣⲟϥ ⲛ̄ϩⲉⲗⲗⲏⲛ (Ch. 191)
34. ⲧⲉⲕⲕⲗⲏⲥⲓⲁ ⲙⲛ̄-ⲡⲉⲥⲣⲉϥⲣ̄-ⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲛ ⲡⲉⲛⲉⲓⲱⲧ ⲛ̄ⲁⲅⲓⲟⲧⲁⲧⲟⲥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲣⲧⲩⲣⲟⲥ ⲡⲁⲣⲭⲓⲉⲡⲓⲥⲕⲟⲡⲟⲥ ⲕⲩⲣⲓⲗⲗⲟⲥ (III 88f.)
35. ⲛⲉⲓⲙⲓⲛⲉ ⲛ̄ⲣⲱⲙⲉ (IV 82)
36. ⲛⲉⲓⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲥⲟϭ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲓⲙⲓⲛⲉ (III 32)
37. ⲟⲩⲕⲁⲧⲁⲣⲱ-ⲧⲛ̄ ⲛ̄ⲣⲱⲙⲉ (III 117)
    {NB: ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲣⲟ - the presuffixal or pronominal form of the preposition ⲕⲁⲧⲁ-}
    [OBS. ⲱ replaces ⲟ in open syllables: ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲣⲱ-ⲧⲛ̄]
38. ⲡⲱⲛϩ̄ ⲛ̄ϣⲁ-ⲉⲛⲉϩ (IV 4)
    {NB: ϣⲁⲉⲛⲉϩ, a prepositional phrase, is here used attributively like any noun}
39. ⲛⲉⲓⲁⲱⲗⲟⲛ ⲛ̄ϣⲉ ⲙⲛ̄ⲛ̄-ⲱⲛⲉ (III 143)
    {NB: ⲙⲛ̄- coordinates ("and") definite and indefinite nouns (section 2.1)}
    [OBS. The article ⲛ̄- in ⲛ̄ⲱⲛⲉ resumes ⲛ̄ⲉⲓⲁⲱⲗⲟⲛ: "the [...] of -"]
40. ⲕⲉⲉⲥ ⲙ̄ⲙⲓⲛⲉ ⲙⲓⲛⲉ (III 51)
    {NB: ⲙⲓⲛⲉ ⲙⲓⲛⲉ a reiterated noun (2.3), expressively used for "every"}

1.3 THE POSSESSIVE PHRASE: the noun expanded by

(a) ⲛ̄- + definite/indefinite noun
(b) ⲛ̄ⲧⲉ- + definite/indefinite noun, ⲛ̄ⲧⲁ- + suffix pronoun

Constructions (a) and (b) are selected according to the determination and expansion of the first noun (nucleus). While both correspond to the English genitive and "of", expressing possession and appurtenance, ⲛ̄ⲧⲉ- seems to express appurtenance rather than possession where both occur after similarly determinated nouns.

(a) [ⲡ-/ⲟⲩ-] ⲛ̄- [ⲡ-/ⲟⲩ-]

(b) [ⲟⲩ-/∅-] ⲛ̄ⲧⲉ- [ⲡ-/(ⲟⲩ-)]
    [ⲡ- ...] ⲛ̄ⲧⲉ- [ⲡ-/(ⲟⲩ-)]

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

STERN parr. 292-297; STEINDORFF parr. 148, 156; TILL parr. 111-113, 122, 207; VERGOTE par. 190 (1-2); LAMBDIN parr. 2.3, 15.1, 22.1

(a)

[п-т-н̄-/оу-ϩєн-] + н̄- + [п-т-н̄-/оу-ϩєн-]

1. пвнма мпєхс (Ch. 95)
   {NB: пєхс = пєхрістос: "sacred names" are orthographically abbreviated and marked with a longer superlinear stroke}
2. плогос мпноутє (RE 10 160)
3. пєϩлоб нϩєнщнрє щнм (A I 246)
4. нгенеа ннгіас (P 130.2 4 p. 84)
5. нєϩооу нтєпрω (IV 53)
6. поуωщ мпєнϩнт (III 140)
7. тбом мпєкϩрооу (E 57)
8. ϩєнψухн нϩєнрмн̄-ноутє (A II 486)
9. тєϩін мпϩалнт н пхоєі (III 151)
10. нєϩвнує мпкакє (Leyd. 296)
    {NB: ϩвнує plural of ϩωв}
11. нбіх ноуршмє нсаβє (IV 127)
12. нщнрє тнроу мпноутє (Ch. 67)
    [OBS. Note that the reinforcer тнр- follows its noun immediately, preceding any other expansion]
13. тмнтє намнтє (III 184)
    [OBS. амнтє, being a Proper Name, is not determinated]
14. нєϩіооує нтєсβω ннєграфн (III 125)
    {NB: ϩіооує plural of ϩін}

(b)

[оу-ϩєн-/ϕ-/ п-т-н- +] + нтє- + [п-т-н̄-/(оу-ϩєн-)]| + нта-

1. оусмоу нтєпхоєіс (E 88)
2. оуϩнгємωн нтєнϩєθнос (III 143)
3. ϩєнϩвнує нтєпкаϩ (P 131.6 44 115)
4. ϩєнкєархωн нтєтполіс (III 27)
   {NB: кє- "other" follows the determinators but precedes the lexeme (section 1.5)}
5. ϩωс-щвр̄-р̄ϩωв нтєппноутє (IV 30)
6. ϩєноікодомн нтєϩєнщнрє щнм (A II 433)
7. щнрє нтєпоуоєін. щнрє нтєпкакє (III 75)
8. (we do not hear) є-ϩрооу нтаq (III 203)
   {NB: є- preposition governed by сωтм̄ "hear"}
9. оγщєєрє щнм нтаq (Cat. 42)
10. оγβал нтєоγϩм̄ϩал нтаq (III 36)
11. ϩрє нім ϩісω нім нтєпмоу (IV 195)

12. ϩNAAY NIM N̄TAY (III 173)
13. N̄ψAXE AE ETOYAAB N̄TEΠENXOEIC (IV 126)
    {NB: ETOYAAB relative present, "which (are) holy" (section 16.1.1)}
14. ϩENKATACAPX̄ N̄TAY (III 136)

1.4 APPOSITION: one noun (or determinated element) specifying another by following it, with no other means of connecting the two. A common noun describing a Proper Name, a Proper Name identifying and naming a common noun; a common noun or Proper Name explicating a personal pronoun; a demonstrative pronoun repeated; appositive attributes: ψHM, KOYI "little", "small". Fixed Greek terminological expressions.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STERN par. 483; STEINDORFF par. 144; TILL parr. 110; VERGOTE par. 188

1. ABEA ΠAIKAIOC. ZAXAPIAC ΠψHPE N̄BAPAXIAC (III 103)
2. AAEXANAPOC ΠϩHTEMWN (III 32)
3. ΠψOXNE N̄ϩPEBEKKA TMAAY N̄IAKWB (IV 27)
4. ·MANHC ΠATNOYTE M̄MANIXAIOC (A I 194)
5. ΠENXOEIC I̅C̅ ΠENEIWT AYW TENMAAY NAME (IV 129)
   {NB: I̅C̅ = IHCOYC}
6. ΠEϥMEPIT N̄EIWT N̄ΘEOΦIAECTATOC ΔΠA TIMOΘEOC (III 14)
7. ΠPWME N̄ΔΓΔΘOC ΔΘANACIOC ΠΔPXIEΠICKOΠOC (III 108)
8. ΠECP̄PO ΠEX̄C̄ (Ch. 122)
   {NB: ΠEX̄C̄ = ΠEXPICTOC}
9. TEIPOMΠE TAI (III 219)
   [OBS. an appositive demonstrative, meaning "this very ..."]
10. ΠEOOY Π-EBOA ϩITN̄-NPWME (III 35)
    [OBS. ΠEBOA the def. article determinating an adverb phrase: "the one (that is) from ..."]
11. ω ΠPWME AYW N̄TO ϩWWTE TECϩIME (Or. 153)
    {NB: ϩWWTE: 2nd person sgl. fem. form of the reinforcer ϩWω -}
12. ϩM̄ΠEIMA ΠAI (E 82)
13. ΠETN̄OYWψ M̄ΠECNAY (Or. 160)
    {NB: M̄ΠECNAY: N̄- introduces a number name apposition}
14. OYΠAPAΠTWMA KOYI (Leyd. 345)
15. TMN̄TϩNKE ψHM (Ch. 14)
16. ΠEϥϩM̄ϩAA ψHM (Z 246 75)

17. ⲛ̄ⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲱⲙ ⲛ̄ⲍⲟⲟⲩ (of life; Ryl. 71 91)
    [OBS. note that ⲱⲙ has precedence over an ⲛ̄- introduced attributive (or possessive) expansion]
18. ⲁⲛⲟⲕ ⲡⲓⲉⲃⲓⲏⲛ (III 137)
19. ⲁⲛⲟⲛ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲛⲁⲭⲟⲥ (Ch. 56)
20. ⲧⲕⲁⲑⲟⲗⲓⲕⲏ ⲉⲕⲕⲗⲏⲥⲓⲁ (E 84)
    {NB: this is a fixed combination, imported "ready-made" from the Greek and following the rules of Greek syntax; so too in texts 21-2)
21. ⲧⲉⲡⲗⲁⲧⲟⲛⲓⲕⲏ ⲇⲓⲇⲁⲥⲕⲁⲗⲓⲁ (A I 15)
22. ⲧⲡⲁⲗⲁⲓⲁ ⲙⲛ̄-ⲧⲕⲁⲓⲛⲏ ⲇⲓⲁⲑⲏⲕⲏ (A II 244)
23. ⲁⲛⲟⲛ ⲛⲉⲭⲣⲉⲓⲥⲧⲓⲁⲛⲟⲥ (Ch. 160)
24. ⲛ̄ⲧⲱⲧⲛ̄ ⲱ ⲛ̄ⲍⲁⲓⲣⲉⲧⲓⲕⲟⲥ (III 47)
25. ⲛ̄ⲧⲱⲧⲛ̄ ⲇⲉ ⲛ̄ⲭⲁⲭⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲙⲉ (III 86)
26. ⲱ ⲡⲱⲱⲛⲉ ⲛ̄ⲕⲁⲕⲉ ⲡⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲍⲙ̄ⲡⲕⲁⲕⲉ ⲡⲭⲁⲭⲉ (E 94)
27. ⲡⲉⲭ̄ⲥ ⲓ̄ⲥ ⲡⲉⲛⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡⲉⲛⲥⲱⲧⲏⲣ ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡⲱⲓⲣⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ (Ch. 83)

1.5 QUANTIFICATION

{ ⲕⲉ-, ⲍⲉⲛⲕⲉ-		"another ...", "other ..." (plural)
{ -ⲃⲉ-		
[ⲡ-, ⲡⲉⲓ-, ⲡⲉⲩ-]ⲕⲉ-		"the/this/his other ...", "also the/this/his ..."
Cardinal numbers:	ⲟⲩ-, ⲟⲩ- ... ⲛⲟⲩⲱⲧ	"one ..."
	... ⲥⲛⲁⲩ/ⲥⲛⲧⲉ	"two ..." (masc./fem.)
	number + ⲛ̄- + zero noun	from 3 onward.
	...ⲛⲓⲙ	"any ...", "every ..."

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

STERN parr. 270-271, 277-283, 486; STEINDORFF parr. 158, 166-168; TILL parr. 162-164, 225, 227-230; VERGOTE parr. 147-152, LAMBDIN parr. 4.3, 15.3, 16.5

1. ⲕⲉⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲛ (RE 11 18)
2. ⲍⲉⲛⲕⲉⲣⲣⲱⲟⲩ (III 68)
3. ⲍⲉⲛⲕⲉⲙⲁ (RE 10 164)
4. ⲛ̄ⲕⲉⲁⲛⲁⲅⲕⲏ (RE 11 15)
5. (She misleads not only the fools,) ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲛ̄ⲕⲉⲥⲁⲃⲉⲉⲩ ⲟⲛ (Or. 153)
6. (She became a cause of transgression) ⲛⲁⲥ ⲇⲉ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁ-ⲥ ⲁⲛ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲛ̄ⲡⲉⲥⲕⲉⲍⲁⲓ ⲟⲛ (Or. 166)
   {NB: ⲛⲁ - pronominal form of the "dative" preposition ⲛ̄-; ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁ - reinforcer or augens}

[OBS. ⲁⲛ negates the adverb ⲛⲁⲥ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲥ]

7. ⲧⲁⲥⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲕ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲱⲧ (Or. 162)
8. ⲛⲁⲧⲕⲉⲫⲁⲗⲁⲓⲁ (i.e. the Testament; Ch. 74)
9. ⲙ̄ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲛ-ⲃⲉⲍⲉⲗⲡⲓⲥ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ⲥⲁ-ⲛⲉⲛⲉⲣⲏⲩ (III 136)
   {NB: ⲙ̄ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲛ "we do not have" (section 13.2)}
10. ⲡⲃⲁⲗ ⲥⲛⲁⲩ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲛⲱⲣ̄ⲡ-ⲛ̄ⲉⲓⲱⲧ (III 118)
11. ⲟⲩⲃⲁⲗⲉ ϩⲛ̄ⲧⲉϥⲟⲩⲉⲣⲏⲧⲉ ⲥⲛ̄ⲧⲉ (A II 245)
12. ⲡⲉⲓⲣⲉⲛⲟⲥ ⲥⲛⲁⲩ (III 219)
13. ⲧⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ϩⲟⲃⲟⲗⲟⲥ (Or. 162)
14. ⲱⲉ ⲛ̄ⲁⲓⲭⲙⲁⲗⲱⲧⲟⲥ (III 71)
15. ⲱⲟⲙⲛ̄ⲧ ⲛ̄ⲉⲃⲟⲧ (III 69)
16. ϩⲙⲉⲱⲟⲙⲧⲉ ⲛ̄ⲣⲟⲙⲡⲉ. ⲥⲉ ⲛ̄ⲣⲟⲙⲡⲉ (III 219)
17. ⲡⲙⲏⲧ ⲛ̄ⲟⲉⲓⲕ ⲛ̄ⲉⲓⲱⲧ (III 73)
18. ⲧⲁⲓⲟⲩ ⲙⲛ̄-ⲥⲁⲱϥ̄ ⲛ̄ⲱⲉ ⲙⲛ̄-ⲥⲟⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲧⲃⲁ ⲛ̄ϩⲟⲙⲛ̄ⲧ (III 71)
19. ⲥⲛⲏ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲛⲱⲭ ⲙⲛ̄ⲡⲉϥⲕⲉⲉⲓⲱⲧ ⲗⲁⲙⲉⲭ (Ch. 75)
20. ⲥⲁⲱϥ̄ ⲛ̄ⲥⲁⲉⲓⲛ (III 69)
21. ⲡⲕⲉⲟⲩⲁ (Ch. 166)
22. ⲛⲉⲓⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ (Ch. 83)
23. ⲕⲉϩⲱⲃ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲱⲧ (Ch. 160)
24. ⲟⲩϩⲛⲧ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲱⲧ. ⲟⲩⲥⲱⲙⲁ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲱⲧ. ⲟⲩⲡ̄ⲛ̄ⲁ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲱⲧ. ⲟⲩⲥⲃⲱ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲱⲧ. ⲟⲩⲡⲓⲥⲧⲓⲥ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲱⲧ. ⲟⲩⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲱⲧ (Ch. 153)
25. ⲥⲡⲟⲩⲇⲁⲓⲟⲥ ⲡⲕⲟⲙⲉⲥ ⲛ̄ⲧⲣ̄ⲣⲱ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡⲉϥⲕⲉⲥⲟⲛ (Ch. 108)
26. ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲓⲙ (Ch. 151)
27. ⲟⲩ ⲙⲟⲛⲟⲛ ϩⲛ̄-ⲛⲉϥⲉⲕⲕⲗⲏⲥⲓⲁ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲉϥⲧⲟⲡⲟⲥ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁ ⲛⲓⲙ ... ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ϩⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲛⲕⲉϩⲓ ⲟⲛ ⲁⲛⲟⲛ ⲙ̄ⲛⲛⲉⲛⲱⲏⲣⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲉⲛⲉⲓⲟⲧⲉ ⲙ̄ⲛⲛⲉⲛⲥⲛⲏⲩ (Ch. 159)
   {NB: ⲟⲩ ⲙⲟⲛⲟⲛ (Greek) "not only"}
28. (You love) ⲛ̄ϩⲁⲡ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲙ̄ⲙⲉ (Ch. 85)
   {NB: ⲛ̄- preposition marking the direct object}
29. (Not just) ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲁⲣⲭⲁⲅⲅⲉⲗⲟⲥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲃⲟⲙ ⲛⲓⲙ (Ch. 136)
30. ⲟⲩⲟⲛ ⲛⲓⲙ (Ch. 86)
31. (Who does not differ from His Father) ϩⲛ̄ⲃⲟⲙ ⲛⲓⲙ ϩⲛ̄ⲉⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲓⲙ ϩⲓ-ⲧⲁⲓⲟ ⲛⲓⲙ ϩⲛ̄ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲛⲁⲏⲧ ⲛⲓⲙ ϩⲓⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲱⲁⲛϩⲧⲏϥ ⲛⲓⲙ ϩⲛ̄ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲥ ⲛⲓⲙ ϩⲓⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲭⲣⲏⲥⲧⲟⲥ ⲛⲓⲙ (Ch. 118)

2.1 COORDINATION ("... and ...")

(a) definite/indefinite noun + ⲁⲩⲱ ("also") + definite/indefinite noun
(b) definite/indefinite noun + ⲙⲛ̄- ("with") + definite/indefinite noun
(c) indefinite/zero det. noun + ϩⲓ- ("on") + zero-determinated noun
(d) noun + noun (juxtaposition: asyndetic coordination, esp. in lists).

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

STERN parr. 552, 559, 591-592; STEINDORFF parr. 179, 181, 413; TILL parr. 374-377; VERGOTE par. 178; LAMBDIN par. 30.11(a)

(a)

1. ⲛ̄ⲱⲛⲣⲉ ⲱⲙ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛ̄ⲱⲉⲉⲣⲉ ⲱⲙ (Wess. 9 149a-b)
2. ⲟⲩⲱⲛⲣⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲱⲉⲉⲣⲉ ⲥⲛ̄ⲧⲉ (III 97)
3. ⲁⲗⲉⲝⲁⲛⲇⲣⲟ̀ⲥ ⲡϩⲏⲧⲉⲙⲱⲛ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲟⲛ ⲡⲉⲧⲣⲟⲥ ⲡϩⲏⲧⲉⲙⲱⲛ (III 32)
4. ⲛ̄ⲱⲛⲣⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲩⲱⲛ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡⲕⲁⲕⲉ (RE 11 17)
5. ⲧⲃ̄ⲃⲟ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲛ ⲛⲓⲙ (IV 21)
6. ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛ̄ⲁⲕⲁⲑⲁⲣⲧⲟⲥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲧⲉⲥϩⲓⲙⲉ ⲛ̄ⲗⲟⲓⲙⲟⲥ (Or. 167)
7. ⲟⲩⲉⲓⲱⲧ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲟⲩⲙⲁⲁⲩ (Or. 158)
8. ⲛ̄ⲑⲉ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩϩⲟⲟⲗⲉ ϩⲛ̄ⲟⲩϩⲟⲉⲓⲧⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲟⲩⲫⲛ̄ⲧ ϩⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲱⲉ (Or. 167)
   {NB: ⲛ̄ⲑⲉ ⲛ̄- "in the manner of", "like...", "as..."}
9. ⲱ ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟ ϩⲱⲱⲧⲉ ⲧⲉⲥϩⲓⲙⲉ (Or. 154)
   [OBS. The personal pronoun is coordinated by ⲁⲩⲱ, i.e. in construction (a)]

(b)

1. ⲡⲉϩⲟⲟⲩ ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲩⲱⲏ (III 113)
2. ⲛⲉⲡⲣⲟⲫⲏⲧⲏⲥ ⲙⲛ̄ⲛⲁⲡⲟⲥⲧⲟⲗⲟⲥ (IV 32)
3. ⲱⲁⲭⲉ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲙⲛ̄ϩⲱⲃ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲛ̄ⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲛ (III 113)
4. ⲡⲉⲥⲥⲁ ⲙⲛ̄ⲡⲉⲥⲃⲟⲟⲩ ⲙⲛ̄ⲡⲉⲥⲁⲛⲁⲓ ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲥⲃⲟⲙ (III 52)
5. ⲛ̄ⲃⲁⲙⲟⲩⲁ ⲙⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲥⲟⲟⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲥⲉ ⲙⲛ̄ⲛⲉϩⲟⲟⲩ ⲙⲛ̄ⲛⲉϩⲧⲱⲱⲣ ⲙⲛ̄ⲛ̄ⲃⲁⲗⲙⲡⲉ (III 70)
6. ⲟⲩⲟⲣⲅⲏ ⲙⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲃⲱⲛⲧ̄ ⲙⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲑⲗⲓⲯⲓⲥ ⲙⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲗⲱⲭϩ̄ (Ch. 47)
7. ⲧⲉϩⲣⲉ ⲙⲛ̄ⲑⲃ̄ⲥⲱ (IV 176)
   {NB: ⲑⲃ̄ⲥⲱ = ⲧ-ϩⲃ̄ⲥⲱ}
8. ⲏⲥⲁⲩ ⲙⲛ̄ⲓⲁⲕⲱⲃ (IV 27)
9. ⲛ̄ⲣⲁⲛ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲉⲥⲭⲏⲙⲁ ⲙⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲕⲗⲟⲙ (IV 3)
10. ⲑⲗ̄ⲗⲱ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲥ ⲙⲛ̄ⲕⲉⲥⲟ ⲛ̄ⲛⲟⲃ ⲛ̄ⲥϩⲓⲙⲉ (IV 62)
11. ϩⲉⲛⲭⲓϩⲁⲡ ⲙⲛ̄ϩⲉⲛ†ⲧⲱⲛ ⲙⲛ̄ϩⲉⲛⲕⲱϩ ⲙⲛ̄ϩⲉⲛⲙⲟⲥⲧⲉ (Wess 9 151a)
    {NB: ⲭⲓ- †-: auxiliary verbs, here indefinite infinitives ("cases of...")}
12. ⲛⲱϩⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲁⲃⲣⲁϩⲁⲙ ⲙⲛ̄ⲓⲥⲁⲁⲕ ⲙⲛ̄ⲓⲁⲕⲱⲃ ⲙⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲛⲉⲓⲟⲧⲉ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ (P 130.2 5 85)
13. ⲡϩ̄ⲗⲗⲟ ⲙⲛ̄ⲛϩ̄ⲗⲗⲟⲓ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ (IV 115)

(c)

1. ⲥⲱⲙⲁ ϩⲓⲥⲛⲟϥ (Cat. 43)
2. ⲣⲁⲛ ϩⲓⲥⲭⲏⲙⲁ (IV 3)

3. ⲙ̄ⲛ̄ⲧⲭⲁⲭⲉ ϩⲓⲁⲱⲁϩⲟⲙ ϩⲓⲛⲟⲃⲛⲉⲃ (III 192)
4. ⲙⲉⲗⲟⲥ ⲛ̄ⲕⲱϩ̄ⲧ̄ ϩⲓⲃⲛ̄ⲧ ϩⲓⲭⲟⲟⲗⲉⲥ ϩⲓⲕⲁⲕⲉ ϩⲓⲣⲓⲙⲉ ϩⲓⲃⲟϩⲃϩ̄ ⲛⲛⲟⲃϩ̄ ϩⲓϩⲕⲟ ϩⲓⲉⲓⲃⲉ ⲙⲛ̄ⲛ̄ⲕⲉⲁⲛⲁⲅⲕⲏ (RE 11 16)
{NB: ⲃⲛ̄ⲧ = ⲫⲛ̄ⲧ}
[OBS. Note the alternation ϩⲓ-/ⲙⲛ̄- regulated by the determination]
5. ⲛ̄ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛ̄ⲣⲉⲫⲫⲓⲯⲩⲭⲏ ⲛ̄ⲱⲟⲏⲣⲉ ϩⲓⲱⲉⲉⲣⲉ ϩⲓⲥⲟⲛ ϩⲓⲥⲱⲛⲉ (IV 21)
6. ⲥⲁϩⲟⲩ ⲛⲓⲙ ϩⲓⲃⲱⲛϯ ⲛⲓⲙ (P. 130.2 5 85)
7. (you shall not lack) ⲛ̄ⲟⲉⲓⲕ ϩⲓϩⲟⲉⲓⲧⲉ ϩⲓⲗⲁⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ⲛ̄ⲕⲁ ⲉⲡⲧⲏⲣⲫ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉ-ⲡⲕⲁϩ (III 205)
8. (Would that I could find) ⲛ̄ⲛⲓⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛ̄ϩⲁⲧ ϩⲓⲛⲟⲩⲃ ϩⲓϩⲟⲙϯ ϩⲓⲃⲁⲣⲱⲧ (III 111)
{NB: ⲛ̄-(ⲛⲓⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ) preposition marking the direct object}
9. ⲅⲉⲛⲟⲥ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲛ̄ϩⲉⲗⲗⲏⲛ·ϩⲓϩⲁⲓⲣⲉⲧⲓⲕⲟⲥ (Ch. 179)
10. ⲙⲓⲯⲉ ⲛⲓⲙ ϩⲓⲧⲧⲱⲛ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲙ̄ⲛ̄ϩⲱⲃ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲉⲫϩⲟⲟⲩ ⲙ̄ⲛ̄ⲉⲡⲓⲑⲩⲙⲓⲁ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲛ̄ⲥⲁⲣⲕⲓⲕⲟⲛ (IV 118)
{NB: ⲉⲫϩⲟⲟⲩ "that is evil", circumstantial present (sections 16.1.1, 27.1) describing ϩⲱⲃ ⲛⲓⲙ}
[OBS. ⲥⲁⲣⲕⲓⲕⲟⲛ the Greek neuter form of Greek-origin adjectives is used in Coptic for inanimates]
11. ϩⲉⲛⲥⲁⲣ̄ⲝ ⲛ̄ⲉⲓⲱ ϩⲓϩⲧⲟ (P 130.2 86ro)
ϩⲉⲛⲱⲛⲉ ϩⲓⲟⲙⲉ (A I 381)
[OBS. ϩⲉⲛ- brackets ⟦ⲱⲛⲉ ϩⲓⲱⲙⲉ⟧ "(people) characterized by ..."]
12. ⲟⲩⲏⲣ ⲛ̄ϩⲓⲥⲉ ϩⲓⲃⲣⲱϩ ⲙ̄ⲙⲛ̄ⲧϩⲏⲕⲉ ϩⲓⲣⲟⲟⲩⲯ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲓ-ⲁⲓⲱⲛ ϩⲓⲁⲡⲁⲧⲏ ⲙ̄ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲣⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲟ (III 205)

(d)

1. ϩⲉⲛⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲣⲙ̄ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧ ϩⲉⲛⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ϩⲉⲛⲕⲟⲥⲙⲏⲥⲓⲥ ϩⲉⲛⲉⲛⲧⲟⲗⲏ ·:·. ϩⲉⲛⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲡⲁⲣⲑⲉⲛⲟⲥ ϩⲉⲛⲕⲉϩⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲉⲓϩⲉ (III 206)
2. ϩⲉⲛⲡⲣⲟⲫⲏⲧⲏⲥ ϩⲉⲛⲉⲩⲁⲅⲅⲉⲗⲓⲟⲛ ϩⲉⲛⲁⲡⲟⲥⲧⲟⲗⲟⲥ ϩⲉⲛⲅⲣⲁⲫⲏ ⲉⲛⲁⲯⲱⲟⲩ ϩⲉⲛⲕⲁⲑⲏⲅⲏⲥⲓⲥ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲛⲉⲧⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ ϩⲉⲛⲯⲁⲭⲉ ⲙⲛ̄ϩⲉⲛⲥ-ⲃⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲉⲛⲁⲯⲱⲟⲩ (III 207)
{NB: ⲉⲛⲁⲯⲱⲟⲩ "that are numerous", circumstantial Adjective Verb (section 22.5). ⲛⲉⲧⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ "they that are holy", plural definite relative present (16.1.1, 31.1)}
3. ϩⲉⲛⲃⲁⲣⲃⲁⲣⲟⲥ ϩⲉⲛⲥⲟⲟⲛⲉ ϩⲉⲛⲙⲁⲧⲟⲓ ϩⲉⲛⲣⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲟ ϩⲉⲛⲡⲓⲣⲁⲥ-ⲙⲟⲥ ... ϩⲉⲛⲥⲁⲧⲁⲛⲁⲥ ϩⲉⲛⲇⲁⲓⲙⲟⲛⲓⲟⲛ ϩⲉⲛⲡⲛ̄ⲁ ⲛ̄ⲁⲕⲁⲑⲁⲣⲧⲟⲛ ϩⲉⲛⲭⲱϩⲙ̄ ϩⲉⲛⲭⲓⲟⲩⲉ ϩⲉⲛⲡⲓⲣⲁⲥⲙⲟⲥ ⲛ̄ⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲛⲓⲙ (III 205)

2.2 DISJUNCTION ("[either] ...or...", "[neither] ...nor...", "whether ... or ..."): ⲏ (... ⲏ), ⲟⲩⲇⲉ (... ⲟⲩⲇⲉ), ⲟⲩⲧⲉ (... ⲟⲩⲧⲉ), ⲉⲓⲧⲉ ... ⲉⲓⲧⲉ

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STERN parr. 593, 595; TILL par. 377; VERGOTE par. 178.

1. ⲡⲉⲥⲥⲟⲛ ⲏ ⲡⲉⲥϣⲃⲏⲣ (III 52)
2. ⲟⲩⲁⲅⲅⲉⲗⲟⲥ ⲏ ⲟⲩⲡ̅ⲛ̅ⲁ ⲛ̅ⲧⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ (III 214)
3. (Do not call this book) ⲛⲟⲙⲟⲥ ⲏ ϣⲁϫⲉ ⲛ̅ⲥⲃⲱ ϩⲓⲉⲛⲧⲟⲗⲏ (III 192)
4. ⲛⲁⲓ ⲏ ⲛⲓⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ (IV 2)
5. ⲡⲉⲩⲡⲣⲏϣ ⲏ ⲧⲉⲩϩⲟⲓⲧⲉ ⲏ ⲟⲩϩⲛⲁⲁⲩ (IV 113)
6. ⲉⲓⲧⲉ ϩⲟⲟⲩⲧ ⲉⲓⲧⲉ ⲥϩⲓⲙⲉ (IV 154, and often)
7. (What are we all) ⲉⲓⲧⲉ ⲣ̅ⲣⲟ ⲉⲓⲧⲉ ⲁⲣⲭⲱⲛ ⲉⲓⲧⲉ ⲣⲙ̅ⲙⲁⲟ ⲉⲓⲧⲉ ϩⲛⲕⲉ ⲉⲓⲧⲉ ⲟⲩⲏⲏⲃ ⲉⲓⲧⲉ ⲟⲩⲟⲛ ⲛⲓⲙ ϩⲓⲟⲩⲥⲟⲡ (Leyd. 362)
8. (They do not perform) ⲛ̅ⲛⲁ-ⲧⲉⲭⲣⲓⲁ ⲙ̅ⲡⲥⲱⲙⲁ ⲟⲩⲇⲉ ⲛⲁ-ⲧⲉⲯⲩⲭⲏ (III 115)
   {NB: ⲛ̅- direct object marker}
9. (Let us not cut off) ⲛ̅ϩⲉⲛⲛⲟⲃ ⲛ̅ϣⲟⲛⲧⲉ ⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛⲟⲃ ⲛ̅ⲕⲗⲁⲧⲟⲥ (IV 73)
   {NB: ⲕⲗⲁⲧⲟⲥ = ⲕⲗⲁⲇⲟⲥ}
10. ⲙⲛ̅-ⲕⲁⲕⲓⲁ ⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲕⲱϩ ⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲙⲟⲥⲧⲉ ⲟⲩⲧⲉ ϫⲓ ⲛ̅ⲟⲟⲛⲥ̅ ϩⲟⲗⲱⲥ ϩⲙ̅-ⲡⲁϩⲏⲧ (III 138)
    {NB: ⲙⲛ̅- negates existence (or affirms non-existence): "there is not" (section 12.2); ϩⲙ̅- assimilated form of the preposition ϩⲛ̅-}
11. ⲏⲣⲡ̅ ⲁⲛ ⲟⲩⲇⲉ ⲁϥ ⲟⲩⲇⲉ ⲛ̅ⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲉⲧⲛⲁϣⲱⲟⲩ (IV 94)
    {NB: ⲉⲧⲛⲁϣⲱⲟⲩ "that are numerous", relative adjective verb (section 22.5)}
    [OBS. ⲁⲛ, ⲟⲩⲇⲉ negative the nouns ⲏⲣⲡ̅, ⲁϥ, ⲛ̅ⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ]
12. ⲧⲉⲯⲩⲭⲏ ⲇⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡⲥⲱⲙⲁ ⲏ ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲧⲏⲣϥ̄ (III 214)
13. ⲟⲩⲙⲛ̅ⲧϫⲁϫⲉ ⲏ ϩⲉⲛϣⲁϫⲉ ⲙ̅ⲙⲛ̅ⲧϫⲁϫⲉ (III 194)

2.3 NOUN REITERATION

(a) Of definite nouns: "every ...", "any ..."
(b) Of indefinite/zero det. nouns: "... by ..." (adverbial)
(c) Of zero-determinated nouns (the whole following in an attributive phrase): "of every ...", "of all sorts of ..."

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STERN par. 273; STEINDORFF par. 145; TILL par. 109; SHISHA-HALEVY par 1.3.3

(a)

1. ⲡⲟⲩⲁ ⲡⲟⲩⲁ ⲕⲁⲧⲁ-ⲧⲉⲙⲙⲓⲛⲉ (III 110)
2. (See each other) ⲙ̄-ⲡⲛⲁⲩ ⲡⲛⲁⲩ ⲙⲛ̄-ⲡⲉϩⲟⲟⲩ ⲡⲉϩⲟⲟⲩ (A II 278)
3. (Trample on) ⲑⲁⲓⲣⲉⲥⲓⲥ ⲑⲁⲓⲣⲉⲥⲓⲥ (A I 395)
4. (Things we have) ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲕⲁⲓⲣⲟⲥ ⲡⲕⲁⲓⲣⲟⲥ ⲏ ϩⲛ̄ⲧⲣⲟⲙⲡⲉ ⲧⲣⲟⲙⲡⲉ ⲏ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲉϩⲟⲟⲩ ⲡⲉϩⲟⲟⲩ (IV 71)

(b)

1. ⲕⲁⲧⲁϩⲟⲟⲩ ϩⲟⲟⲩ ⲏ ⲟⲩⲱⲙⲛ̄ ⲟⲩⲱⲙⲛ̄ (A I 150)
2. (They speak) ⲟⲩⲁ ⲟⲩⲁ (A I 12)
3. (The Lord sends them off) ⲥⲛⲁⲩ ⲥⲛⲁⲩ (A I 12)
4. (You tear them apart) ⲡⲟⲃⲉ ⲡⲟⲃⲉ ⲏ ⲗⲁⲕⲙ̄ ⲗⲁⲕⲙ̄ (A I 108)
5. (The shame diminished) ⲱⲙⲛ̄ ⲱⲙⲛ̄ (A I 101)

(c)

1. ⲫⲁⲱⲛ ⲛ̄ϩⲃ̄ⲥⲱ ⲙ̄ⲙⲓⲛⲉ ⲙⲓⲛⲉ ϩⲓ-ⲁⲩⲁⲛ ⲁⲩⲁⲛ (A II 116)

3. THE NOMINAL SENTENCE: CLAUSES PREDICATING A PRONOUN or NOUN SYNTAGM

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STERN parr. 300-302, 304-305, 307; STEINDORFF parr. 298-312; TILL parr. 242-246; VERGOTE parr. 193-198; LAMBDIN parr. 6.1, 6.2, 15.2, 22.2; * POLOTSKY *Nominalsatz*; SHISHA-HALEVY, "Patterns"; "Discovery Procedure"

3.1 THE INTERLOCUTIVE (1st/2nd person) PATTERN: # interlocutive (1st-2nd person: "I/we, you") pronominal theme (subject) + noun-syntagm rheme (predicate) # : "I am/you are ...". See TABLE B1. Negatived: # (ⲛ̄-) theme + rheme ⲁⲛ #

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
* POLOTSKY, *Nominalsatz* parr. 20-30; SHISHA-HALEVY, "Patterns"

1. ⲁⲛ̄ⲅ̄-ⲟⲩⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲥ ⲛ̄ⲣⲱⲙⲉ (III 123)
2. ⲁⲛ̄ⲅ̄ⲛⲓⲙ ⲁⲛⲟⲕ (III 15)
   [OBS. ⲁⲛⲟⲕ: augens, marking the question as rhetorical. On the augens as a grammatical category, see SHISHA-HALEVY chapter 6]
3. ⲁⲛ̄ⲅ̄-ⲟⲩⲕⲁⲧⲁⲣⲱⲧⲛ̄ ⲁⲛ ⲛ̄ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲁⲛ̄ⲅ̄-ⲟⲩⲕⲁⲧⲁⲣⲟⲓ ⲙ̄ⲙⲓⲛ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲓ (III 117)

{NB: ⲟⲩⲕⲁⲧⲁⲣⲱⲧⲛ̄ indef. article with the preposition ⲕⲁⲧⲁ-: "one according to ..."}

4. ⲛ̄ⲧⲕ̄-ⲟⲩⲉⲛⲧⲏⲃ (Ch. 42)
5. ⲛ̄ⲧⲕ̄ⲟⲩⲱⲟⲛⲧⲉ ⲙⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲁⲣⲟⲟⲩⲉ (Ch. 36)
6. ⲛ̄ⲧⲕ̄-ⲟⲩⲟⲩ (III 38)
   {NB: ⲟⲩⲟⲩ indef. article + interrogative pronoun}
7. ⲉⲱⲭⲉ-ⲛ̄ⲧⲕ̄ⲟⲩⲡⲛⲁ̄ ⲛ ⲟⲩⲁⲅⲅⲉⲗⲟⲥ (, then I too am a servant of God) (III 38)
8. ⲛ̄ⲧⲉ-ⲟⲩⲙⲁ̈ⲁⲩ ⲁⲛ (III 22)
9. ⲁⲛ-ϩⲉⲛⲥⲁⲃⲉ (P 130.4 104 123)
10. ⲁⲛⲟⲛ-ϩⲉⲛⲧⲃ̄ⲛⲏ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲁⲛⲟⲛ-ϩⲉⲛⲁⲧⲙ̄ⲡⲱⲁ (A I 134)
    {NB: ⲁⲛⲟⲛ- fuller variant of ⲁⲛ-, 1st plural subject}
11. ⲁⲛⲟⲛϩⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲁⲉ ϩⲱⲱⲛ ⲉⲓⲧⲉ ⲣ̄ⲣⲟ ⲉⲓⲧⲉ ⲁⲣⲭⲱⲛ ⲉⲓⲧⲉ ⲣⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲟ ⲉⲓⲧⲉ ϩⲛⲕⲉ (Leyd. 362)
12. ⲁⲛⲟⲛϩⲉⲛⲃⲟⲗ ⲁⲛⲟⲛϩⲉⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲁⲛ (A II 174)
13. ⲉⲱⲭⲉ-ⲁⲛⲟⲛ-ⲛ̄ⲱⲏⲣⲉ ⲁⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲣ̄ⲣⲟ ⲡⲉⲭ̄ⲥ ⲉⲓⲉ ⲁⲛⲟⲛϩⲉⲛⲣ̄ⲣⲟ (A I 164)
14. ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄-ⲡⲱⲧⲛ̄ ⲁⲛ (Wess. 9 118a)
    {NB: ⲡⲱⲧⲛ̄ possessive pronoun, "yours (pl.)"}
15. ⲛ̄ⲧⲱⲧⲛ̄-ϩⲉⲛⲱⲃⲣ̄-ⲣ̄-ϩⲱⲃ ⲙ̄ⲡⲥⲁⲧⲁⲛⲁⲥ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄-ϩⲉⲛⲙⲁ-ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ (Thompson K 3 vo)
    {NB: ⲛ̄ⲧⲱⲧⲛ̄-: fuller variant of ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄-; ⲣ̄- auxiliary "do, make", deriving verbs from nouns; ⲡⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ determinated relative present predicating an adverb (section 19.1.1): "he who (is) there" = "that one (yonder)"}

3.1.1 THE INTERLOCUTIVE (1st/2nd person) THEME (SUBJECT) TOPICALIZED, i.e. represented in front of the clause as well as in the first position of the pattern: "As for me/you, I am/you are ...": # noun/pronoun + [1st/2nd pron. theme + noun-syntagm rheme] #. See TABLE B1

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

* POLOTSKY, *Nominalsatz*, parr. 35-38

1. ⲁⲛⲟⲕ ϩⲱⲱⲧ ⲁⲛ̄ⲡⲉϥϩⲙ̄ϩⲁⲗ (III 38)
   {NB: ϩⲱⲱⲧ 1st person sgl. of the reinforcer ϩⲱⲱ-: "for my part", "I too"}
2. ⲁⲛⲟⲕ ⲇⲉ ⲡⲓⲧⲁⲗⲁⲓⲡⲱⲣⲟⲥ ⲁⲛ̄ⲟⲩϩⲛⲕⲉ ϩⲛ̄ⲛⲁ-ⲡⲕⲁϩ ⲁⲛ̄ⲟⲩ-ϩⲟⲩⲉ-ϩⲛⲕⲉ ϩⲛ̄ⲛⲁ-ⲧⲡⲉ (Ch. 99)

3. ⲛ̄ⲧⲟ ϩⲱⲱⲧⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲟⲩⲙⲁⲁⲩ ⲁⲛ (III 22)
   {NB: ϩⲱⲱⲧⲉ 2nd person sgl. feminine of ϩⲱⲱ -}
4. ⲡⲟⲩⲁ ⲡⲟⲩⲁ ⲁⲛⲟⲛ-ⲙ̄ⲙⲉⲗⲟⲥ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲛ-ⲉⲣⲏⲩ (Leyd. 348, cf. Eph. 4:25)
5. ⲁⲛⲟⲛ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲁⲛⲟⲛϩⲉⲛⲧⲁⲗⲁⲓⲡⲱⲣⲟⲥ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲙⲧⲟ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲙ̄ⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ (P 131.7 46 254)

3.1.2 THE INTERLOCUTIVE (1st/2nd person) PATTERN CONVERTED (see TABLES B 1, G)

(a) Circumstantial (ϵ- + interlocutive pattern): "although ..." (28-30)
(d) Preterite (ⲛϵ- + interlocutive pattern): in remote wish ("O that I were ...") (41)

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

STEINDORFF parr. 374, 377, 479f.; VERGOTE p. 162 parr. 162, 166(2), 204; LAMBDIN par. 25.1 (d); * POLOTSKY, *Nom. Transposition* parr. 6, 22-33.

(a) Circumstantial:

1. (You pretend to be righteous) ⲉⲛⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄-ϩⲉⲛⲱⲗⲁⲫⲧⲉ (III 135)
2. (Is it not amazing that I have told you all that is on my mind) ⲉⲁⲛⲛ̄-ⲟⲩⲉⲃⲓⲏⲛ ⲛ̄ⲣⲱⲙⲉ (Ch. 108)

(d) Preterite:

1. ϩⲁⲙⲟⲓ ⲛⲉⲁⲛⲟⲛ-ⲟⲩⲁ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ (IV 91)

3.2 THE DELOCUTIVE (3rd person) PATTERN: # nominal/pronominal rheme (predicate) + delocutive ("he, she, they") pronominal theme (subject): ⲡⲉ/ⲧⲉ/ⲛⲉ #. See TABLE B2a

Negatived: # (ⲛ̄-) rheme + ⲁⲛ + theme #

NB: The pronominal theme (ⲡⲉ, ⲧⲉ, ⲛⲉ) refers either to a preceding nominal ("he/she/it/they are") or to the determinator of its own rheme, when it is used impersonally ("it is"); exx. for the latter case are texts 6, 7, 10, 13-18.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

* POLOTSKY, *Nominalsatz* parr. 20-30, 34

1. ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲡⲉ· ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ (Ch. 65f.)
2. ⲟⲩⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲛ ⲡⲉ (Ch. 95)
3. ⲟⲩⲁⲣⲭⲱⲛ ⲡⲉ· ⲟⲩⲥⲟⲫⲟⲥ ⲡⲉ (Wess. 9 139a)
4. (Of the snake:) ⲟⲩ ϩⲱⲱⲩ ⲡⲉ ϩⲱⲥ ⲉⲱⲭⲉ-ⲟⲩⲕⲁⲡ ⲛ̄ⲛⲟⲩϩ ⲡⲉ (Ch. 30)
   {NB: ϩⲱⲱⲩ particle: "anyway"; ϩⲱⲥ ⲉⲱⲭⲉ- "as if"}
5. ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲣⲟⲟⲩⲱ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ (Ch. 95)
6. (When you console a man on someone who was killed, do not tell him) ⲭⲉ-ⲡⲉϥⲁϩⲉ ⲡⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉϥⲁϩⲉ ⲇⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ (III 43)
7. ϩⲉⲛⲕⲁⲥ ⲛⲉ (A II 342)
8. ϩⲉⲛⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲛ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲛⲉ (III 114)
9. (Of the Bride in Song of Songs:) ⲟⲩⲉⲓ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲧⲉ ⲟⲩⲛⲟⲃ ⲙ̄ⲙⲛⲏⲱⲉ ⲇⲉ ⲧⲉ ⲟⲩⲡⲁⲣⲑⲉⲛⲟⲥ ⲧⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲟⲩⲱⲉⲗⲉⲉⲧ ⲧⲉ ⲟⲩⲕⲏⲡⲟⲥ ⲧⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲟⲩⲡⲩⲗⲏ ⲧⲉ ... ⲟⲩⲗⲁⲟⲥ ⲧⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲟⲩⲡⲣⲟⲫⲏⲧⲏⲥ ⲧⲉ ... ⲟⲩⲥⲱⲛⲉ ⲧⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲟⲩⲥⲟⲛ ⲧⲉ ⲟⲩⲱⲏⲣⲉ ⲱⲏⲙ ⲧⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲟⲩ-ⲡⲣⲉⲥⲃⲩⲧⲏⲥ ⲧⲉ ⲟⲩⲱⲉⲃⲣⲉ ⲧⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲟⲩⲙⲁⲁⲩ ⲧⲉ ⲟⲩⲛⲓ ⲧⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲟⲩⲡⲟⲗⲓⲥ ⲇⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲧⲉ (III 57-8)
   [OBS. The indefinite nouns predicated of the feminine ⲧⲉ "she is" are of feminine or masculine gender: the real predicate is the indefinite article ⲟⲩ- "a (*fem.*)"]
10. ⲡⲉⲛⲁⲗⲟⲩ ⲱⲏⲙ ⲡⲉ ⲛ̄ⲁⲧⲥⲟⲟⲩⲏ (P 130.1 133 329)
    [OBS. Note the position of the theme ⲡⲉ, prosodically weaker than other constituents of the clause ("enclitic")]
11. ϩⲉⲛⲉⲓⲁⲱⲗⲟⲛ ⲛⲉ ⲉⲙⲉⲩⲱⲁⲭⲉ (IV 68)
    {NB: ⲉⲙⲉⲩⲱⲁⲭⲉ circumstantial conversion of the negative aorist in adnominal role (sections 6.2.1, 27.1) describing ϩⲉⲛⲉⲓⲁⲱⲗⲟⲛ "that are not able to talk"}
    [OBS. Note the position of the theme ⲛⲉ]
12. (Of gold:) ⲟⲩⲣⲁⲥⲟⲩ ⲛⲁⲕ ⲡⲉ ⲉⲕⲛ̄ⲕⲟⲧⲕ̄ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡⲉⲕⲙⲟⲕⲙⲉⲕ ⲡⲉ ⲉⲕⲣⲏⲥ (A II 531)
    {NB: ⲉⲕⲛ̄ⲕⲟⲧⲕ̄, ⲉⲕⲣⲏⲥ circumstantial present forms (sections 15.1.1, 16.1.1, 28.1) "when you are asleep ... when you are awake"; ⲛⲁⲕ the preposition ⲛ̄-/ⲛⲁ- before the 2nd sgl. masc. suffix}
13. (When a thief is hated,) ⲛ̄-ⲟⲩⲙⲟⲓϩⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲧⲉ ⲟⲩⲇⲉ ⲛ̄-ⲟⲩⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲟⲩⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲛ ⲛ̄ϩⲟⲩⲟ ⲡⲉ (A I 95)
14. ⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ (IV 154)
15. ⲧⲛⲏⲥⲧⲉⲓⲁ ⲧⲉ (IV 154)
16. ⲡⲱⲱⲙ ⲡⲉ· ⲧⲉⲡⲣⲱ ⲧⲉ (IV 110f.)
17. ⲧⲉⲩⲱⲏ ⲧⲉ (IV 83)

18. ⲙ̄-ⲡⲱⲕ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲡϩⲱⲃ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲡⲁ-ⲧⲁⲛⲟⲭⲓ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲡⲉ (Ch. 35)
{NB: ⲡⲱⲕ, ⲡⲁ- possessive pronouns (section 1.1 h)}
19. ⲣⲟⲩⲥⲟⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲏ ϩⲉⲛⲥⲛⲏⲩ ⲛⲉ ⲟⲩⲡⲟⲣⲛⲟⲥ ⲡⲉ ⲏ ϩⲉⲛⲡⲟⲣⲛⲟⲥ ⲛⲉ ⲏ ϩⲉⲛⲣⲉϥⲯⲙ̄ⲯⲉ-ⲉⲓⲇⲱⲗⲟⲛ ⲛⲉ (III 192)

3.2.1 THE DELOCUTIVE (third person) SUBJECT EXPANDED and SPECIFIED BY AN APPOSITIVE NOUN: # nominal/pronominal rheme (predicate) + ⲡⲉ / ⲧⲉ / ⲛⲉ + noun (specifying or explicating ⲡⲉ / ⲧⲉ / ⲛⲉ) # (Table B2b)

Negatived: # (ⲛ̄-) nominal/pronominal rheme + ⲁⲛ + ⲡⲉ / ⲧⲉ / ⲛⲉ + noun #

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
* POLOTSKY, *Nominalsatz* parr. 38-45

1. ⲛ̄ⲧⲟϥ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ (Ch. 84)
2. ⲛⲓⲙ ⲧⲉ ⲧⲁⲓ (Ch. 121)
3. ⲟⲩ ⲧⲉ ⲧⲉⲛϩⲉⲗⲡⲓⲥ (Ch. 82)
4. ⲟⲩⲏⲣ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲉϥⲟⲩⲃⲁⲱ (Wess. 9 117b)
5. ⲧⲱⲧⲛ̄ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲧⲉ ⲧ-ⲉⲩⲫⲣⲟⲥⲩⲛⲏ ⲧⲏⲣ̄ⲥ ⲱ ⲛⲉⲥⲛⲏⲩ (III 117)
6. ⲡⲁⲓ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲉ (Ch. 83)
7. ⲡⲱⲕ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲃ ⲡⲱⲕ ⲡⲉ ⲡϩⲁⲧ ⲧⲱⲕ ⲧⲉ ⲧⲟⲓⲕⲟⲩⲙⲉⲛⲏ (III 90)
8. ⲛⲟⲩϥ ⲛⲉ ⲡϩⲟⲙⲛ̄ⲧ ⲙ̄ⲛ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲃ ⲙ̄ⲛ̄ϩⲛⲁⲁⲩ ⲛⲓⲙ (III 73)
9. ⲟⲩⲙⲁⲕⲁⲣⲓⲟⲥ ⲡⲉ ⲟⲩϩⲙ̄ϩⲁⲗ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲭ̄ⲥ̄ ϩⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲙⲉ (P 130.2 110 ro)
10. ⲁⲣⲁ ϩⲉⲛⲙ̄ⲕⲁϩ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧ ⲛⲉ ⲛⲉⲓⲱⲁϫⲉ (Wess. 9 94a)
11. ⲟⲩⲙⲟⲓϩⲉ ⲧⲉ ⲧⲛⲟⲃ ⲛ̄ⲁⲅⲁⲡⲏ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲛϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲣⲟⲛ (III 76)
12. ϩⲉⲛϩⲁⲡ ⲛⲉ ⲛⲉⲓⲱⲁϫⲉ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉϫⲱⲛ ⲁⲩⲱ ϩⲉⲛⲥⲟⲗⲥ̄ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲉ (A II 32)
{NB: ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉϫⲱⲛ two prepositional phrases: see ⲉ-, ϩⲣⲁⲓ and ⲉϫⲙ̄-}
13. ⲁⲱ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲛⲟⲃ ⲡϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲛⲁⲱ ⲡⲉ ϫⲓⲛ-ⲡⲁⲛⲁⲱ ⲡⲉ (III 16)
{NB: ϫⲓⲛ- = ϫⲙ̄- "or"}
14. ⲏ ⲟⲩⲧⲁⲙⲓⲟ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲱⲏⲣⲉ ⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ (Orig. 310)
{NB: ⲏ introduces a rhetorical question}
15. ⲟⲩⲗⲁⲥ ⲉϥϫⲁϩⲙ̄ ⲛϩⲟⲩⲟ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲗⲁⲥ ⲛ̄ⲛⲁⲥⲉⲃⲏⲥ (III 113)
{NB: ⲉϥϫⲁϩⲙ̄ circumstantial present (sections 16.1.1, 27.1) describing ⲟⲩⲗⲁⲥ "that is impure"}
16. ⲡⲱⲥ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲥⲁ (Or. 168) (said of the beautiful woman)
17. ⲁⲱ ⲃⲉ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲉⲃⲕⲱ ⲛ̄ⲥⲁ-ⲡⲱⲁϫⲉ ⲙ̄ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲥⲃⲱ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲅⲣⲁⲫⲏ (III 52)

18. (He who denies, saying) ⲓ̅ⲥ̅ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲉⲭ̅ⲥ̅ (III 114)
19. ⲧⲁⲓ ⲧⲉ ⲑⲉ ⲙ̅ⲡⲥⲁⲧⲁⲛⲁⲥ (E 78)
    [OBS. ⲧⲁⲓ ⲧⲉ ⲑⲉ "thus", "in this manner" (lit. "this is the manner"); compare ⲛ̅ⲑⲉ ⲛ̅- or ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲑⲉ ⲛ̅- "as", "like" (lit. "in the manner", "according to the manner") and ⲛ̅ⲧⲉⲓϩⲉ "in this manner", "thus". "The manner" (ⲑⲉ i.e. ⲧ-ϩⲉ) is followed by ⲛ̅- for a compared noun or by a relative for a compared verbal action, event or state. The possessive article is used for a compared person: ⲛ̅ⲧⲉⲛϩⲉ "like us", lit. "in our manner"]
20. ⲁⲱ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲥⲃ̅ⲃⲉ ⲙ̅ⲡϩⲏⲧ ⲏ ⲟⲩ ⲧⲉ ⲧⲙⲛ̅ⲧⲁⲧⲥⲃ̅ⲃⲉ (IV 118)
21. ⲙ̅ⲡⲱ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲉⲓⲱⲁϫⲉ ⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲙ̅ⲡⲁⲗⲗⲁⲩ ⲛ̅ⲥⲩⲛⲁⲅⲱⲅⲏ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲉⲓⲱⲁϫⲉ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲡⲁⲧⲟⲓⲕⲟⲩⲙⲉⲛⲏ ⲧⲏⲣ̅ⲥ̅ ⲡⲉ (A I 62)
22. ⲟⲩⲛⲟⲃ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ (Young 14)

3.2.2 THE DELOCUTIVE (3rd person) THEME (SUBJECT) TOPICALIZED, i.e. represented in front of the clause as well as in the second position of the pattern: "As for the man, he is ...": # noun/pronoun + [nominal/pronominal rheme (predicate) + ⲡⲉ / ⲧⲉ / ⲛⲉ] #
Negatived: # noun/pronoun + (ⲛ̅-) + rheme + ⲁⲛ + ⲡⲉ / ⲧⲉ / ⲛⲉ # (Table B2c)

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
* POLOTSKY, *Nominalsatz* parr. 35-8

1. ⲛ̅ⲧⲟϥ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡⲉϥⲉⲕⲱⲧ ⲟⲩⲁ ⲛⲉ (RE 11 17)
2. ⲛⲉⲕⲱⲁϫⲉ ⲙⲛ̅ⲛⲉⲕⲉⲛⲧⲟⲗⲏ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ϩⲉⲛⲙⲉ ⲛⲉ ⲛⲟⲩⲓ ⲁⲉ ϩⲉⲛⲃⲟⲗ ⲛⲉ (III 141)
3. ⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲛ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲛⲟⲩϥ ⲛⲉ (III 72)
4. ⲡⲉⲥⲟⲟⲩ ⲡⲁ-ⲛⲉⲑⲏⲣⲓⲟⲛ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲡⲁ-ⲡⲱⲱⲥ ⲡⲉ (III 47)
5. (Can you say:) ϫⲉ-ⲡⲉⲥⲟⲟⲩ ⲟⲩⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲙ̅ⲡⲟⲩⲱⲛⲱ̅ ⲡⲉ (P 130.5 17 107)
   {NB: ⲟⲩⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲙ̅ⲡⲟⲩⲱⲛⲱ̅ the indefinite article with an adverbial phrase, ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲛ̅-, consisting of ⲉⲃⲟⲗ "out" further qualified and precised by the preposition ϩⲛ̅-}
6. ⲡⲉⲩⲡⲓⲑⲉ ⲛ̅-ⲟⲩⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ ϩⲙ̅ⲡⲧⲱϩⲙ̅ ⲙ̅ⲡⲉⲭ̅ⲥ̅ (E 79)
7. ϫⲓ ⲛ̅ⲟⲟⲛⲥ̅ ⲛⲓⲙ ϩⲉⲛⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲛⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲛⲓⲙ ϩⲉⲛϫⲓ ⲛ̅ⲟⲟⲛⲥ̅ ⲛⲉ (E 92)
8. ⲡⲉⲓ-ⲏⲓ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲡⲁⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲡⲁⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲡⲉ (P 130.4 156 364)

9. ⲧⲉⲓⲛⲟⲃ ⲛ̄ⲁⲱⲣⲉⲁ ⲟⲩⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲓⲧⲙ̄-ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲧⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲟⲩⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲓⲧⲛ̄-ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲧⲉ ⲡⲉⲓⲧⲱϣ ⲟⲩⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲛ̄ⲧⲡⲉ ⲡⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲟⲩⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲕⲁϩ (III 107)
{NB: ⲟⲩⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲓⲧⲙ̄- the indefinite article with ⲉⲃⲟⲗ, further precised by ϩⲓⲧⲛ̄- ("by the agency of")
[OBS. Note the positions of ⲁⲛ, ⲡⲉ / ⲧⲉ]
10. ⲡⲟⲥⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲟⲩⲁ ⲡⲟⲩⲁ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡⲉϥⲉⲟⲟⲩ ⲡⲱϥ ⲡⲉ ⲉⲓⲧⲉ ϩⲟⲟⲩⲧ ⲉⲓⲧⲉ ⲥϩⲓⲙⲉ (IV 155)

3.2.3 THE DELOCUTIVE (3rd person) PATTERN CONVERTED (see Tables B2, G)

(a) Circumstantial (ⲉ- + delocutive pattern): "although", also adnominal (27-30)
(b) Relative (ⲉⲧⲉ- + delocutive pattern): "who ..." (31-33)
(d) Preterite (ⲛⲉ- + delocutive pattern): past tense, anteriority, hypothetical result (39-41)

(a) Circumstantial:

1. ⲟⲩⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲉⲡⲱⲓ ⲡⲉ (A I 84)
2. ⲧⲉⲥϩⲓⲙⲉ ⲉⲧⲭⲱ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲥ ⲭⲉ-ⲁⲛ̄-ⲟⲩⲡⲁⲣⲑⲉⲛⲟⲥ ⲉⲟⲩⲉⲓ ⲁⲛ ⲧⲉ (A II 62)
{NB: ⲉⲧⲭⲱ relative present predicating ⲭⲱ "say" (section 15.1.1) with ⲙ̄ⲙⲟ-ⲥ "it" the neuter feminine (direct-object-marking preposition + ⲥ) as an empty direct object: "who says ⟨it⟩"}
[OBS. ⲟⲩⲉⲓ "one (fem.)" represents the indefinite article ⲟⲩ- ("a (fem.)" of the predicate in the first (affirmative) Nominal Sentence]
3. (These you say are pure) ⲉϩⲉⲛⲁⲧⲱⲁⲩ ⲛⲉ (E 67)
4. (They think of themselves ⲭⲉ-ϩⲉⲛⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲛ ⲛⲉ ⲉϩⲉⲛⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲛ ⲛⲉ (A I 209)
5. (How can anything have existed before Him) ⲉⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲡⲉ ⲧⲁⲡⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲥⲱⲛⲧ̄ ⲧⲏⲣϥ̄ (Wess. 9 147c)
6. ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉϩⲉⲛⲡⲣⲁϫⲓⲥ ⲱⲏⲙ ⲛⲉ ⲛⲉϥϩⲃⲏⲩⲉ (IV 25)
{NB: adnominal circumstantial, expanding (qualifying) ⲣⲱⲙⲉ}
7. ⲟⲩⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲉ-ⲙⲡⲱⲕ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ (Or. 155)

(b) Relative:

1. ⲛⲁⲥⲉⲃⲏⲥ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ ⲉⲧⲉϩⲉⲛⲃⲟⲧⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲛⲉ ⲛⲉⲩϩⲓⲟⲟⲩⲉ (IV 10)
2. ⲡⲙⲏⲏⲛϣⲉ ⲉⲧⲉ-ⲙ̄ⲡⲱϥ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ (P 130.2 95 149)
3. ⲧⲡⲏⲅⲏ ⲉⲧⲉⲛ̄ⲧⲱⲕ ⲁⲛ ⲧⲉ (Or. 155)

4. ⲛⲉⲧⲉ-ⲛⲟⲩϥ ⲛⲉ (III 93)
   {NB: ⲛⲉⲧⲉ- the plural definite article as antecedent (nucleus, i.e. grammatical center or head) of the relative: "they who" (section 31.1). The predicate here as in exx. 2, 3, 5, 7 is a possessive pronoun (section 1.1)}
5. ⲡⲉⲧⲉⲡⲱⲓ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲉⲧⲉⲡⲱϥ ⲡⲉ (Ch. 77)
6. ⲛⲉⲧ-ⲛ̄ϩⲉⲛⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲉ (III 45)
7. ⲧⲉⲧⲉⲧⲱⲕ ⲧⲉ ⲧⲉⲧⲉⲧⲱⲕ ⲁⲛ ⲧⲉ ⲡⲉⲧⲉⲡⲱ ⲡⲉ (Or. 158)
   {NB: ⲡⲱ 2nd person sgl. fem. possessive pronoun (ⲡⲱ- + zero suffix)}
8. ⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲱⲧ ⲉⲧⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲡⲉ ⲟⲩⲙⲁⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲱⲧ ⲉⲧⲉ-ⲑⲓⲗⲏⲙ ⲛ̄ⲧⲡⲉ ⲧⲉ (IV 129)
   [OBS. ⲉⲧⲉ ... ⲡⲉ and ⲉⲧⲉⲡⲁⲓ ⲡⲉ ... are used for "namely" and glossing ("to wit"). Unlike the relative conversion elsewhere (section 31.1-2), this is compatible also with indefinite and zero nouns. See also ex. 10]
9. ⲡⲁⲓ ⲉⲧⲉⲟⲩϩⲟⲧⲉ ⲡⲉ ϫⲟⲟϥ (IV 76)
10. (ⲡⲙⲟⲩⲓ) ⲉⲧⲉⲁⲛⲟⲕ ⲡⲉ ⲡϩⲙ̄ϩⲁⲗ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ (ⲧⲃⲁϣⲟⲣ) ⲉⲧⲉⲛ̄-ⲧⲟⲕ ⲡⲉ ⲡϩⲙ̄ϩⲁⲗ ⲙ̄ⲡⲙⲁⲙⲙⲱⲛⲁⲥ (III 79)
11. ⲡⲉⲧⲉⲡⲱϥ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲕⲁϩ ⲧⲏⲣϥ̄ (Young 4)

(d) Preterite:

1. ⲕⲁⲓⲅⲁⲣ ⲛⲉϩⲉⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲉ (and became wolves), ⲛⲉϩⲉⲛⲁⲅⲅⲉⲗⲟⲥ ⲛⲉ (and became demons) (Ch. 72)
2. ⲛⲉⲛⲁϣⲃⲉⲉⲣ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲛⲉ (Ch. 108)
3. ⲧⲡⲉⲧⲣⲁ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲛⲉⲡⲉⲭ̄ⲥ̄ ⲡⲉ (III 51, cf. I Cor. 10:4)
4. ⲛⲉⲟⲩϣⲓⲡⲉ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ (III 75)

3.3 THE COPULAR PATTERN: # nominal/pronominal theme (subject) + copula (ⲡⲉ, more rarely ⲧⲉ) + nominal rheme (predicate) # : see Table B3.

The theme in this pattern is characteristically context-bound, e.g. (and most frequently) resuming a preceding noun and giving it thematic status; in this role the pattern is used for glossing or explicating preceding text.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
* POLOTSKY, *Nominalsatz* parr. 46-55; SHISHA-HALEVY, "Patterns", "Discovery Procedure" 165 f.

1. ⲡⲱⲟⲩⲱⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲛⲙⲓⲛⲉ ⲛ̄ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲡⲉ ⲟⲩⲙⲛ̄ⲧϩⲏⲕⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲧⲙ̄-ⲣ̄-ⲙⲁⲓϩⲟⲙⲧ̄ (Ch. 98)
   {NB: ⲉ-ⲧⲙ̄- "not to ...", the preposition ⲉ- "to" followed by -ⲧⲙ̄- negativing the infinitive}
2. ⲡⲥⲁ ⲙ̄ⲡⲣⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲟ ⲡⲉ ⲛⲁ (Ch. 98)
   [OBS. The rheme (predicate) here is the infinitive ⲛⲁ]
3. ⲑⲉⲗⲡⲓⲥ ⲧⲏⲣ̄ⲥ̄ ⲙ̄ⲡⲓⲁⲃⲓⲟⲥ ⲡⲉ ϩⲉⲗⲡⲓϩⲉ ⲉⲡⲛⲁ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲡⲱⲁⲛ-ϩⲧⲏϥ (Ch. 99)
4. ⲡⲉⲩⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲡⲉ ⲣⲱⲙⲉ (IV 183)
5. ⲡⲉⲩⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲓ̄ⲥ̄ (Ch. 109f.)
6. ⲙⲏ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲡⲕⲉⲫⲁⲗⲁⲓⲟⲛ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲅⲣⲁⲫⲏ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲉⲩⲁⲅⲅⲉⲗⲓⲟⲛ (Wess. 9 130a)
7. ⲡϩⲱⲃ ⲛ̄ⲛ̄ⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲥ ⲡⲉ ϩⲱⲃ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲛ̄ⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲛ ⲡϩⲱⲃ ⲛ̄ⲛⲁⲥⲉⲃⲏⲥ ⲡⲉ ϩⲱⲃ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲙ̄ⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲛ (Wess. 9 177b)
8. ⲧⲛⲟⲩⲛⲉ ⲛ̄ⲁⲛⲟⲙⲓⲁ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲃⲟⲗ ⲧⲛⲟⲩⲛⲉ ⲛ̄ⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲥⲩⲛⲏ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲧⲉ ⲧⲙⲉ (A II 494)
   [OBS. ⲧⲉ is a feminine form of the copula, here following a feminine theme]
9. ⲟ̀ⲩⲕⲟⲩⲛ ⲙ̄ⲡⲓϫⲱⲕ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲙⲟⲥ ⲡⲉ ⲧⲙ̄-ⲣ̄-ⲁⲛⲁⲱ ⲛ̄ⲛⲟⲩϫ ... ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲡϫⲱⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲙⲟⲥ ⲡⲉ ⲧⲙ̄-ⲣ̄-ⲁⲛⲁⲱ ⲉⲡⲧⲏⲣ̄ⲩ̄ (IV 66)
10. ⲧⲉϩⲣⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲡⲉ ⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲕ ⲙⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲙⲛ̄ⲛⲕⲉ-ⲧⲣⲟⲫⲏ (Rossi 2/3 90)
11. ("Sow the seed at dawn (ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ϣⲱⲣⲡ̄)") ⲡⲛⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ϣⲱⲣⲡ̄ ⲡⲉ ⲧⲙⲛ̄ⲧϣⲏⲣⲉ ϣⲛⲙ (P 131.5 43 99)
    [OBS. The theme (subject) resumes here an element of the preceding context, which is then glossed by the rheme (predicate): this is a characteristic role of this pattern]
12. ("The demons have gathered in their dens (ϩⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲩⲃⲏⲃ)") ⲛⲉⲩⲃⲏⲃ ⲇⲉ ⲛⲉ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧ ⲛ̄ⲛ̄ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛ̄ⲁⲧⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ (IV 177)
13. ("Vipers and vipers' sons") ⲛ̄ϩⲟϥ ⲙⲉⲛ ⲉⲧⲥⲱϣⲉ ϩⲓϫⲙ̄-ⲡⲕⲁϩ ⲛⲉ ϩⲉⲗⲁⲏⲛ ⲛⲓⲙ (Ch. 139)
    {NB: ⲉⲧⲥⲱϣⲉ relative present: "which crawl"}
14. ("The glory of God shall be in the islands of the sea") ⲑⲁⲗⲁⲥⲥⲁ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲕⲟⲥⲙⲟⲥ ⲛ̄ⲛⲏⲥⲟⲥ ⲛⲉ ⲛⲉⲕⲕⲗⲏⲥⲓⲁ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉϫ̄ⲥ̄ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲉϥⲧⲟ-ⲡⲟⲥ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲕⲁϩ ⲧⲏⲣ̄ⲩ̄ (Ch. 141)
15. (Glossing Job 6:7) ⲡⲙⲟⲩⲓ ⲇⲉ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲁⲓⲁⲃⲟⲗⲟⲥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡⲉϥϣⲛⲟϣ ⲡⲉ ⲁⲛⲟⲙⲓⲁ ⲛⲓⲙ (Rossi 2/3 89)
16. ("Woe to them who will turn impious (ⲁⲥⲉⲃⲏⲥ) amongst you") ⲛⲁⲥⲉⲃⲏⲥ ⲛⲉ ⲛⲉⲧⲥⲧⲟ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲛⲧⲟⲗⲏ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲛⲉⲓⲟⲧⲉ ⲛⲉⲧⲥⲧⲟ

ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲙ̄ⲡⲱⲗϫⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲛⲉ ⲛⲉⲧⲙⲟⲥⲧⲉ ⲛ̄-ⲛⲉⲧ-ϩⲓⲧⲟⲩⲱⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ϫⲓⲟⲩⲉ (III 152f.)
{NB: the rhemes (predicates) are definite relative present forms: ⲛⲉⲧⲥⲧⲟ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ "they who reject", ⲛⲉⲧⲙⲟⲥⲧⲉ "they who hate". Both are followed by the direct-object marker ⲛ̄-; ⲛⲉⲧϩⲓⲧⲟⲩⲱⲟⲩ definite relative present predicating a prepositional phrase: "they who are on (ϩⲓ-) their bosom (ⲧⲟⲩⲱ-ⲟⲩ)", i.e. "their neighbours"}

17. (I asked:) ⲛⲓⲙ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲁⲓ (they answered:) ⲡⲁⲓ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲁⲩⲗⲟⲥ ⲡⲁⲡⲟⲥⲧⲟⲗⲟⲥ (IV 198)
[OBS. ⲛⲓⲙ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲁⲓ, ⲡⲁⲓ ⲡⲉ ...: note the alternation of the delocutive pattern in the inquiry with the copular in the response]

3.3.1 THE COPULAR PATTERN CONVERTED (see Tables B3, G)

(a) Circumstantial (ⲉ- + copular pattern): "... being ...", also adnominal (27-30)
(b) Relative (ⲉⲧⲉ- + copular pattern): "who ..." (31-33)
(c) Preterite (ⲛⲉ- + copular pattern): past tense, hypothetical condition and result (39-41)

(a) Circumstantial:

1. (According to the Apostle's "He who worked at us",) ⲉⲡⲁⲓ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ (III 33)
2. (see) ⲉ-ⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉϥϩⲙⲟⲟⲥ ϩⲓⲡⲉϥⲧⲉⲗⲱⲛⲓⲟⲛ ⲉⲡⲉϥⲣⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲙⲁⲑⲏⲧⲏⲥ (Mt. 9)
{NB: ⲉϥϩⲙⲟⲟⲥ adnominal circumstantial present (sections 15.1.1, 27.1), "sitting": the two circumstantials here qualify the indefinite ⲟⲩ-}

(b) Relative:

1. ⲡⲉⲓϩⲱⲟⲛ ⲉⲛⲉⲗⲁϫⲓⲥⲧⲟⲛ ⲉⲧⲉ-ⲧⲉϥⲫⲩⲥⲓⲥ ⲡⲉ ⲕⲓⲙ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉϥⲁⲡⲉ ⲉⲡⲉⲥⲏⲧ (III 49)
{NB: ⲉⲛ- = ⲛ̄-}
2. ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲧⲉⲩⲥⲩⲛⲏⲑⲓⲁ ⲡⲉ ⲙⲓⲱⲉ ⲛ̄ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲕ (Ch. 37)
{NB: ⲛⲉⲧⲉ- definite determinated relative, "they who". Similarly in text 3; the rhemes in 1-3 are infinitives}
3. ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲡⲉⲩⲟⲩⲱⲱ ⲡⲉ ⲥⲱⲟⲩϩ ⲉϩⲟⲩϩ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲛ̄ϩⲉⲛϫⲣⲏⲙⲁ ϩⲓϫⲙ̄-ⲡⲕⲁϩ (Ch. 86)

(d) Preterite:

1. ⲉⲛⲉⲡⲉⲕⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ ϩⲏⲧⲕ̄ (E 67)
   {NB: ⲉⲛⲉ-, circumstantial preterite as remote or hypothetical condition (section 41). ϩⲏⲧⲕ̄ possessed form of ϩⲏ with a 2nd sgl. masc. possessor suffix pronoun}

3.4 ASSORTED PATTERNS, COMBINED

1. ⲁⲛⲟⲛ-ⲛⲓⲙ ⲏ ϩⲉⲛ-ⲟⲩ ⲛⲉ ⲛⲉⲛⲱⲓ (III 107)
2. ⲁⲛⲟⲛϩⲉⲛⲣⲉϥⲣ̄-ⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟϥ ⲁⲉ ⲟⲩⲡⲉⲧⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ ⲡⲉ (III 142)
   {NB: ⲟⲩⲡⲉⲧⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ nominalized relative present (section 31.1.1): "one who is holy"}
3. ⲁⲛⲟⲛⲛⲉϥϩⲙ̄ϩⲁⲗ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟϥ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲉⲛⲁⲣⲭⲱⲛ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡⲉⲛⲣ̄ⲣⲟ (IV 34)
4. (The woman who says:) ⲁⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲡⲁⲣⲑⲉⲛⲟⲥ ⲉⲟⲩⲉⲓ ⲁⲛ ⲧⲉ (A II 62)
   [OBS. ⲟⲩⲉⲓ "one (fem.)", resuming ⲟⲩ- in ⲟⲩⲡⲁⲣⲑⲉⲛⲟⲥ: cf. "one" resuming the indefinite article in English and other European languages]
5. ⲧⲧⲁⲡⲣⲟ ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲑⲏⲧ ⲟⲩⲟⲩⲱϣϥ̄ ⲛⲁϥ ⲧⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲟⲩⲡⲁϣ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉϥ-ⲯⲩⲭⲏ ⲛⲉ ⲛⲉϥⲥⲡⲟⲧⲟⲩ (IV 59)
   {NB: ⲡⲁⲑⲏⲧ = ⲡⲁⲧ-ϩⲏⲧ}
6. ⲡⲉⲕⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲡⲉ ϩⲏⲧⲕ̄ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛ̄ⲧⲕ̄-ⲟⲩⲥⲁⲣⲕⲓⲕⲟⲛ ⲧⲏⲣⲕ̄ (P 131.6 88 r̥)
7. ⲡⲡⲁⲣⲁⲕⲗⲏⲧⲟⲥ ⲙⲉⲛ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲉⲡⲛ̄ⲁ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ ... ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡⲁⲩ-ⲗⲟⲥ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ (A II 403)
   {NB: ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ: relative present, "who is holy"}

(*) 3.5 SOME SPECIAL NOMINAL SENTENCE RHEMES or PATTERNS

(a) Zero-determinated rheme (predicate) in the delocutive pattern, corresponding to the predication of an adjective in English (predicating an abstract quality)
(b) Adverb predicated in the delocutive pattern (19-20)
(c) The reiterated noun/personal pronoun as rheme of the theme ⲡⲉ, predicating the immutability of the delocutive theme; ⲟⲛ "still" is a component of this pattern
(d) The "ⲁⲛⲟⲕ ⲡⲉ" pattern, meaning "it is I", "I am in existence", "I am he", "I am someone important"

(e) The "balanced" pattern, equating the rheme and theme terms in a logically inversible "algebraic" proposition

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

* POLOTSKY, *Nominalsatz* parr. 31-33; SHISHA-HALEVY, "Patterns", "Discovery Procedure" 163 ff.

(a)

1. ⲙ̄ⲕⲁϩ ⲛϩⲏⲧ ⲡⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲉⲛⲉⲓⲱⲁⲭⲉ (A I 176)
2. ⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲉⲛⲣⲁⲛ ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲁⲛ (RE 10 161)
   [OBS. negates the predicative term ⲣⲱⲙⲉ]
3. (An exquisite house) ⲉⲙⲟⲓϩⲉ ⲡⲉ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲣⲟϥ (A II 114)
   {NB: the circumstantial converter, marking the Nominal Sentence as adnominal to (qualifying) the indefinite ⲟⲩⲛⲓ}
4. ⲱⲓⲡⲉ ⲡⲉ ϫⲟⲟⲩ (A I 210)

(b)

1. ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲓϩⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲁⲃⲣⲁϩⲁⲙ ⲙⲛ̄-ⲓⲥⲁⲁⲕ ⲙⲛ̄-ⲓⲁⲕⲱⲃ (Ch. 75)
2. ⲱⲁ-ⲡⲉⲓⲙⲁ ⲧⲉ ⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲙⲛ̄ⲧ-ϩⲏⲧ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲱⲧ ⲛⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲛ (P 130.1 135 333f.)
   [OBS. ⲙⲛ̄ⲧ- here forms the abstract noun corresponding to the concrete ⲟⲩϩⲏⲧ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲱⲧ]
3. ⲉⲡϫⲓⲛϫⲏ ⲛⲏⲧⲛ̄ ⲡⲉ ⲱⲣ̄ⲡ-ⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ̄ (III 46)

(c)

1. ⲛⲉϥϩⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲉϥⲧⲱⲱ ϫⲓⲛⲛ̄ⲱⲟⲣⲡ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲟⲩ ⲟⲛ ⲡⲉ (III 42)
2. ⲡⲉⲕϩⲣ̄ⲃ ⲡⲉⲕϩⲣ̄ⲃ ⲟⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲕ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲕ ⲟⲛ ⲡⲉ (Ch. 21)
3. ⲛ̄ⲥⲟⲃ̄ⲧ ⲇⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲟⲩ ⲟⲛ ⲡⲉ (Ch. 143)
4. (Of Christ's Church) ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲥ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲥ ⲟⲛ ⲡⲉ (III 31)
5. ⲁⲟⲩⲕⲗⲟⲟⲗⲉ ⲡⲁⲣⲁⲅⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟϥ ⲉⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟϥ ⲟⲛ ⲡⲉ ... ⲛ̄ϩⲁⲓⲣⲉⲧⲓⲕⲟⲥ ⲉⲧⲥⲟⲟϥ ⲁⲟⲩⲡⲉⲑⲟⲟⲩ ⲡⲓⲣⲁϩⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲛⲧⲟⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲟⲩ ⲟⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲉⲙⲡⲟⲩⲱⲓⲃⲉ (Cl. Pr. 36 201)

(d)

1. (Who created them?) ⲙⲏ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟϥ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡⲉϥⲉⲓⲱⲧ (Orig. 309)
   {NB: ⲙⲏ ... ⲁⲛ rhetorical question, presupposing an affirmative answer: "It is, isn't it ...?}
2. ⲓ̄ⲥ̄ ⲛ̄ⲥⲁϥ ⲡⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟϥ ⲟⲛ ⲙ̄ⲡⲟⲟⲩ ⲡⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟϥ ⲡⲉ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲱ ⲛⲓⲙ (Ch. 63f., cf. Heb. 13:8)
3. (You cry out:) ⲑⲁⲏ ⲧⲉ ⲉⲛⲧⲟⲥ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ (Ch. 23)

[OBS. Contrast the feminine rheme (predicate) pronoun with the invariable ⲡⲉ ("it", "ce", "cs"), with ⲧⲉ predicating the definite noun ⲑⲁⲗⲁⲥⲥⲁ]

4. (It is the monks that are supposed to fast,) ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ ⲛⲉ (Ch. 102)
5. ⲁⲛⲟⲕ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ (A I 370)
   [OBS. This is the "theological" existential "ⲁⲛⲟⲕ ⲡⲉ"]

(c)

1. ⲛⲉⲕⲕⲁⲣⲡⲟⲥ ⲙ̄ⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲛ ⲛⲉ ⲛⲟⲩⲟⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲟⲩⲟⲩ ⲛⲉ ⲛⲟⲩⲕ (P 130.2 109 vo)
   {NB: ⲛⲟⲩⲟⲩ, ⲛⲟⲩⲕ possessive pronouns: "theirs", "yours"}
2. ⲡ̄ⲣⲣⲟ ⲡⲉⲭ̄ⲥ̄ ⲡⲱⲏⲣⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡ̄ⲣⲣⲟ ⲡⲉⲧⲉ-ⲛⲉⲕⲍⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲛⲉ ⲛⲉⲧⲍⲃⲏⲩⲉ ϧⲓⲛ-ⲧⲁⲣⲭⲏ ⲙ̄ⲡⲥⲱⲛⲧ̄ (RE 10 162)
   {NB: ⲡⲉⲧⲉⲛⲉⲕ- ... "You whose ...."
3. ⲛⲉⲧⲙⲉⲗⲟⲥ ⲛⲉ ⲛⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲙⲉⲗⲟⲥ (A II 2)
4. ⲁⲛⲟⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲧⲕ (III 22)

(*)4 THE PROPER NAME: SELECTED SPECIAL CONSTRUCTIONS

(a) Determination. The personal Proper Name is normally not determinated, and functions in many ways like a personal pronoun. Some place-names differ in this respect.

(b) The Proper Name as nucleus (grammatical center of its construction). The Proper Name is qualified (expanded) *appositively*, by a noun apposition that is usually definite or by a definite relative verb form. The expansion marker ⲛ̄- (1.2-1.3) expresses possession only.

(c) The Proper Name as expansion (satellite, grammatical periphery). The Proper Name itself may "name-identify" (expand) an appellative (common) noun, in appositive or conjunctional (ⲭⲉ- "quoting") constructions.

(d) The Proper Name as rheme (predicate): naming constructions, name-identifying constructions.

(a)

1. ⲡⲉⲥⲙⲟⲧ ⲛ̄ⲁⲃⲉⲗ ⲡⲁⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲥ ⲙⲛ̄-ⲥⲏⲙ ⲙⲛ̄-ⲓⲁⲫⲉⲧ ⲙⲛ̄-ⲓⲥⲁⲁⲕ ⲙⲛ̄-ⲓⲱⲥⲏⲫ (III 173)
2. ⲁⲛⲁⲛⲓⲁⲥ·ⲙⲓⲍⲁⲏⲗ·ⲁⲍⲁⲣⲓⲁⲥ (E 76)
3. ⲁⲃⲣⲁϩⲁⲙ ⲁⲃⲣⲁϩⲁⲙ (Genesis 22:11)
   [OBS. The Proper Name is reiterated in address ("vocative"), esp. in the Scriptures]

4. ⲛ̄ⲧⲟ ⲧⲁϩⲟⲙ ⲙⲁⲧⲁⲙⲟⲓ (P 130.2 100 vo)
   {NB: ⲙⲁⲧⲁⲙⲟⲓ imperative of a causative verb (section 8), with a 1st person sgl. object: "tell me"}
5. ⲡ̄ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛ̄ⲥⲟⲇⲟⲙⲁ ⲙⲛ̄ⲅⲟⲙⲟⲣⲣⲁ (III 132)
6. ⲡⲉⲡⲓⲥⲕⲟⲡⲟⲥ ⲛ̄ⲕⲁⲣⲭⲁⲣⲓⲥ ⲛ̄ⲧⲙⲉⲥⲱⲡⲟⲧⲁⲙⲓⲁ (III 109)
7. ⲧⲃⲁⲃⲩⲗⲱⲛ (III 165)
8. ϩⲁⲧⲛ̄-ⲑⲁⲗⲁⲥⲥⲁ ⲛ̄ⲧⲅⲁⲗⲓⲗⲁⲓⲁ (III 99)
9. ⲑⲓⲉⲗⲏⲙ ⲑⲓⲉⲗⲏⲙ (III 167)
   {NB: ⲑⲓⲉⲗⲏⲙ = ⲧ-ϩⲓⲉⲣⲟⲩⲥⲁⲗⲏⲙ}

(b)

1. ⲡⲁⲩⲗⲟⲥ ⲡⲁⲡⲟⲥⲧⲟⲗⲟⲥ (IV 198)
2. ⲓ̄ⲥ̄ ⲡⲉⲛϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ (III 224)
3. ⲁⲡⲟⲗⲗⲱⲛ ⲡⲕⲓⲑⲁⲣⲱⲇⲟⲥ (A I 386)
4. ⲧⲁⲩⲣⲓⲛⲟⲥ ⲡϩⲏⲅⲉⲙⲱⲛ (III 30)
5. ⲁⲛⲛⲁ ⲧⲱⲛⲣⲉ ⲙ̄ⲫⲁⲛⲟⲩⲏⲗ (IV 29)
6. ⲍⲁⲭⲁⲣⲓⲁⲥ ⲡⲱⲛⲣⲉ ⲛ̄ⲃⲁⲣⲁⲭⲓⲁⲥ ⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄ϩⲟⲧⲃⲉϥ (III 166)
   {NB: ⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄ϩⲟⲧⲃⲉϥ determinated (definite) relative perfect (sections 6.1.1, 31.1) in apposition to the Proper Name: "he whom you (pl.) murdered" (the verb ϩⲱⲧⲃ̄)}
7. (NOT SHENOUTE) ⲥⲉⲣⲕⲓⲟⲥ ⲡⲁⲩⲗⲟⲥ ⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛ̄ⲣⲙ̄ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧ (Act. 13:7)

(c)

1. ⲡⲁⲣⲭⲓⲉⲡⲓⲥⲕⲟⲡⲟⲥ ⲕⲩⲣⲓⲗⲗⲟⲥ (III 89)
2. ⲡⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲉⲓⲱⲧ ⲛ̄ⲛⲁⲱⲧ-ϩⲏⲧ ⲫⲁⲣⲁⲱ (III 50)
3. ⲡⲁⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲥ ⲓⲱⲃ (III 78)
4. ⲡⲉⲓⲁⲛⲟⲙⲟⲥ ⲛⲁⲃⲟⲩϫⲟⲇⲟⲛⲟⲥⲟⲣ (III 84)
5. ⲡⲓⲡⲉⲧⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ ⲓⲱϩⲁⲛⲛⲏⲥ (III 106)
   {NB: ⲡⲉⲧⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ nominalized relative, "one who is holy"}
6. ⲡⲣⲉϥⲣ̄ⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲡⲥⲁⲧⲁⲛⲁⲥ (IV 127)
7. ⲟⲩⲙⲁ ϫⲉ-ⲃⲉⲗⲁⲙⲱⲛ (III 59)
8. ⲡⲉⲓⲥϫⲏⲙⲁ ϫⲉ-ⲙⲟⲛⲁⲭⲟⲥ (BM 253)
   [OBS. Note the affinity of zero-determinated appellatives with Proper Names; the former are in this case "lexeme" or "notion" names]
9. ⲡⲁⲥⲉⲃⲏⲥ ϫⲉ-ϩⲱⲣⲓⲅⲉⲛⲏⲥ (Wess. 9 133b)
10. ⲟⲩ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲉⲓⲣⲁⲛ ϫⲉⲇⲁⲓⲙⲟⲛⲓⲟⲛ (A I 391)

(d)

1. ⲡⲉϥⲣⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲃⲉⲣⲱⲃ (Rossi 2/3)
2. (NOT SHENOUTE) ⲟⲩⲡⲟⲗⲓⲥ ⲉⲡⲉⲥⲣⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲛⲁϩⲁⲣⲉⲑ (Luc. 1:26)

{NB: ϵ- circumstantial converter, marking the naming clause as adnominal to (qualifying) ⲟⲩⲡⲟⲗⲓⲥ}

3. ⲕⲣⲟⲛⲟⲥ ⲉⲧⲉⲡⲉⲧⲃⲉ ⲡⲉ ⲏⲫⲁⲓⲥⲧⲟⲥ ⲉⲧⲉⲡⲧⲁϩ ⲡⲉ (A I 383f., 385)
   [OBS. The relative Nominal Sentence ⲉⲧⲉ...ⲡⲉ serving as a hermeneutical (glossing) construction (section 3.3.1) is not appositive, even when describing a Proper Name]
4. ⲡⲁⲓ ⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ⲉⲧⲉⲓⲥⲙⲁⲏⲗ ⲡⲉ (IV 26)
   {NB: ⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ "who is there", "yonder": relative present predicating the adverb ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ "there"}
5. ⲥⲟⲛ ⲥⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲧⲉⲥⲓⲙⲱⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲙⲛ̄-ⲁⲛⲇⲣⲉⲁⲥ (III 99)
6. ⲁⲩⲙⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲉⲡϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲓ ϫⲉ-ⲃⲉⲉⲗϩⲉⲃⲟⲩⲗ (IV 35)
   {NB: ⲁⲩⲙⲟⲩⲧⲉ 3rd person plural perfect form (section 6.1), predicating ⲙⲟⲩⲧⲉ: "they called"}
7. (The Pharisees who wished) ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲩⲙⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲓⲧⲟⲟ-ⲧⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲛ̄ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ϫⲉ-ϩⲣⲁⲃⲃⲉⲓ ⲁⲩⲱ ϫⲉ-ⲣⲉϥ†-ⲥⲃⲱ (III 161)
   {NB: ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲩ- "that they should ...", the preposition ϵ- with the causative infinitive ⲧⲣⲉⲩⲙⲟⲩⲧⲉ (9.0.1b); ϩⲓⲧⲟⲟⲧⲟⲩ see ϩⲓⲧⲛ̄-}
   [OBS. ϩⲓⲧⲟⲟⲧⲟⲩ ⲛ̄- an indirect construction (= 3rd-person suffix pronoun + ⲛ̄- + noun) for attaching a nominal possessor to an intimately possessed noun (in this case, ⲧⲱⲣⲉ (ⲧⲟⲟⲧ-) "hand"; "they" in ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲩ- is generic ("impersonal"), serving with ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲓⲧⲛ̄- to express the passive]

5 THE ADVERB PHRASE

Adverbs (lexemes, inanalyzable) are rare: ⲧⲁⲓ "here". Prepositional phrases (preposition + noun, with the *prenominal* form of the preposition, i.e. its glossary form; preposition + (suffix) pronoun, with the preposition in its special *pronominal* alternant form: ϩⲙ̄-ⲡⲏⲓ "in the house", ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧ-ⲟ "in it (him)", ⲙⲛ̄-ⲛ̄ⲣⲱⲙⲉ "with the people", ⲛⲙ̄ⲙⲁ-ⲩ "with them".

The three fixed phrases ⲉⲃⲟⲗ "out" (ϵ- + ⲃⲟⲗ)
ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ "in(to)" (ϵ- + ϩⲟⲩⲛ)
ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ "up" or "down" (ϵ- + ϩⲣⲁⲓ), in turn further specified by prepositional phrases. The whole complex usually modifies verb lexemes (infinitives).

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

STERN parr. 512-588; STEINDORFF parr. 174-206; TILL parr. 233-240; VERGOTE

parr. 173-177; LAMBDIN parr. 1.4, 7.2, 8.1, 9.1, 10.1f., 10.4, 18.3; LAYTON, "Compound Prepositions", *SHISHA-HALEVY, Chapter 1

1. ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲉϩⲟⲟⲩ (III 138)
2. ϩⲓⲧⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲙ̄ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲥϩⲓⲙⲉ (Or. 166)
3. ⲧⲙⲁⲥⲧⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ (Or. 168)
4. ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲓϩⲉ (IV 80)
5. ⲛ̄ⲁⲱ ⲛ̄ϩⲉ (Ch. 76)
6. ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲓⲧⲙ̄ⲡϩⲁ̄ⲗⲟ ϩⲁⲧⲏⲛ ⲁⲩⲱ ϩⲓⲧⲛ̄ⲑⲁ̄ⲗⲱ ϩⲁⲧⲛ̄-ⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ̄ (IV 79)
7. ϩⲉⲛⲁⲛⲁⲱ ⲉⲡⲭⲓⲛⲭⲏ (A I 298)
8. ⲭⲓⲛⲛ̄ⲱⲟⲣⲡ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲟⲛ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ (III 98)
9. ϩⲟⲓⲛⲉ ϩⲁⲧⲛ̄ⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ̄ (IV 28)
10. ϩⲉⲛⲕⲁⲧⲁⲥⲁⲣⲝ̄ (IV 81)
11. ⲟⲩⲡⲁⲣⲁⲧⲉⲛⲫⲩⲥⲓⲥ (IV 112)
    [OBS. The definite article here is specified by a prepositional phrase]
12. ⲡⲥⲟⲃ ⲁⲗⲏⲑⲱⲥ (A II 18)
13. ϩⲉⲛⲁⲧⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛⲉ ⲫⲁⲛⲉⲣⲟⲛ (P 130.4 125 37)
14. ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ (Or. 157)
15. ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲡⲁⲓ (Or. 156)
16. ⲛⲓⲙ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧⲛ̄ (Or. 154)
17. ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲏⲧⲟⲩ (Or. 164)
18. ϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧⲉ (III 201)
    {NB: ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧⲉ: 2nd sgl. fem. of ϩⲛ̄-/ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧ- "in"}
19. ⲕⲁⲁϥ ⲛⲉ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ (III 202f.)
    {NB: ⲛⲉ: 2nd sgl. fem. of ⲛ̄-/ⲛⲁ- "to"; ⲕⲁⲁϥ see ⲕⲱ}
20. ⲉⲭⲟⲟⲥ ⲛⲉ (III 202)
    {NB: ⲉⲭⲟⲟⲥ: ⲉ- + infinitive (ⲭⲱ with 3rd sgl. fem. object, "it")}
21. †ϩⲁⲡ ⲉⲣⲟ (III 201)
22. ⲓⲟⲩⲟⲙⲟⲩ ⲧⲁⲭⲩ (Ch. 114)
23. ⲓⲭⲓⲧⲟⲩ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲡⲉⲫⲙⲁ ⲛ̄ⲙ̄ⲧⲟⲛ (E 82)
24. ⲓⲕⲱ ⲛ̄ⲥⲱⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲩⲥⲩⲛⲁⲅⲱⲅⲏ (E 83)
25. ⲓⲃⲱⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲓⲧⲟⲟⲧⲛ̄ (E 85)
26. ⲓⲣⲁⲱⲉ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲭⲱⲛ (E 91)
27. ⲓⲫⲓ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲉⲓⲃⲉ (Or. 155)
28. ⲓⲱⲁⲭⲉ ⲛⲙ̄ⲙⲉ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ϩ ⲓⲭⲙ̄ⲡⲕⲁϩ (III 203)
29. ⲓⲙⲉⲧⲁⲛⲟⲉⲓ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲭⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲩⲛⲟⲩⲃⲉ (E 91)
30. ⲓⲃⲱ ⲛⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲛ (E 87)
31. ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲛⲓⲙ ⲏ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲏⲧ ⲛⲙ̄ⲙⲉ (Wess. 9 112)
    {NB: ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲏⲧ 1st person sgl., ⲛⲙ̄ⲙⲉ 2nd person sgl. fem. forms of the prepositions ⲉⲧⲃⲉ-, ⲙⲛ̄-}

UNIT (II): THE TENSE-BASE CONJUGATION (TRIPARTITE PATTERN)
(Sections 6-7)

6 MAIN-SENTENCE conjugation:

6.1 The PERFECT base: ⲁ- (*affirmative*), ⲙ̄ⲡ(ⲉ)- (*negative*)
6.1.1 The perfect, converted

6.2 The AORIST base: ϣⲁ(ⲣⲉ)- (*affirmative*), ⲙⲉ(ⲣⲉ)- (*negative*)
6.2.1 The aorist, converted

6.3 ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲧ(ⲉ)- "NOT YET":
6.3.1 ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲧⲭⲥⲱⲧⲙ converted

6.4 The OPTATIVE ("Third Future") base: ⲉ- ... ⲉ- (*affirmative*), ⲛ̄ⲛⲉ- (*negative*)

7 DEPENDENT CLAUSE conjugation:

7.1 ϣⲁⲛⲧ(ⲉ)-

7.2 TEMPORAL: ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲣⲉ- ("since-", "after-", "having ...")

7.3 CONDITIONAL: ⲉ- ... ϣⲁⲛ-, ⲉⲣϣⲁⲛ- ("if-", "when(ever)"), *negatived*: ⲉ- ... ϣⲁⲛⲧⲙ̄-/ⲉⲣϣⲁⲛⲧⲙ̄-

7.4 The CONJUNCTIVE: "... and ...", "... or ..." ⲛ̄-/ⲛ̄ⲧⲉ-, *negatived*: ⲛ̄- ... ⲧⲙ̄-/ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲧⲙ̄-

6-7 THE TENSE-BASE CONJUGATION (Table C) conjugates a *verb phrase*, consisting of the infinitive discontinuously preceded by a set of tense prefixes for an *actor* (noun phrases, demonstrative or indefinite pronouns, or a suffix pronoun, with a special presuffixal base often used); the verb phrase (base + infinitive) is predicate (rheme), the actor is subject (theme).

NB: (1) The nominal actor can either occur after the base, in substitution to the actor suffix (ⲁ-ⲫ-ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ / ⲁ-ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄), or follow the

whole conjugation form in apposition to a 3rd person suffix, in which case it must be introduced by ⲛ̄ⲑⲓ- (ⲁⲩⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲛ̄ⲑⲓ-ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ).

(2) the direct object of the verb is constructed in two different ways:

(I) immediately following the infinitive — a nominal object combined with a special prenominal (or "construct state") form of the infinitive: ⲁⲩϩⲉⲧⲃ̄-ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ, and a pronominal suffix object combined with the special presuffixal (or "pronominal state") form of the infinitive; ⲁⲩϩⲟⲧⲃⲉ-ⲩ.

(II) introduced by the preposition (for a nominal object) or (for a pronominal suffix object).

6 THE MAIN CLAUSE conjugation pattern consists of a set of affirmative/negative pairs of bases for every tense, with the sector interposing between base and infinitive, i.e. infixed in the noun phrase:

base (affirmative) + actor + infinitive

(e.g. ⲁ-ⲩ-ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "He (has) heard"),

base (negative) + actor + infinitive

(e.g. ⲙ̄ⲡ-ⲩ-ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "He has not heard/did not hear")

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

POLOTSKY, "Conjugation System", parr. 1-4, 7, 26; VERGOTE par. 159

6.1 THE PERFECT BASE (Table C(I)1):

Affirmative: ⲁ- + actor + infinitive – ⲁⲩⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄

Negative: ⲙ̄ⲡ- + pronominal actor + infinitive – ⲙ̄ⲡⲩ̄ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄

ⲙ̄ⲡⲉ- + nominal (or demonstrative/indef. pron., also 2nd sgl. fem. zero suffix) actor + infinitive – ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄

The Coptic perfect corresponds approximately to the Latin *perfectum*, or the English (and generally West European) past simple and present perfect tenses combined. Note its narrative function, with conjunctionless (asyndetic) coordination of several progressing perfect forms.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

STERN parr. 374, 392; STEINDORFF parr. 334-338, 359-360; TILL parr. 313, 315; VERGOTE par. 159(1); LAMBDIN parr. 7.1, 8.2, 10.1-10.3

(a) Affirmative:

1. ⲁ-ⲓ-ⲣⲁⲯⲉ ⲉⲙⲁⲧⲉ (III 15)
2. ⲡⲉⲓϩⲱⲃ ⲁⲓⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲣⲟⲩ (III 38)

3. ⲁⲓⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲩⲣⲁⲥⲟⲩ (IV 125)
{NB: preposition governed by ⲛⲁⲩ; -ⲩ the indefinite article following ⲉ-}
4. ⲁ-ⲩ-ⲧⲁⲕⲟ ⲙ̄ⲡϩⲁⲡ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲃⲓⲏⲛ
5. ⲁⲩⲥⲟⲱⲧ̄ⲕ ⲁⲩⲛⲉϫ-ⲡⲁⲃⲥⲉ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲕ ⲁⲩϩⲉⲃⲥ̄-ⲡⲉⲕϩⲟ ⲁⲩ-ϩⲓⲟⲩⲉ ⲉⲣⲟⲕ ⲁⲩⲥⲱⲃⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲕ ⲁⲩⲧ-ⲕⲁ̄ⲯ ⲉϫⲱⲕ (III 101)
{NB: ⲉϩⲣⲁ-, ⲉⲣⲟ-, ⲙ̄ⲙⲟ-, ⲉϫⲱ- are the pronominal forms of the prepositions ⲉϩⲣⲛ̄-, ⲉ-, ⲛ̄- (dir. object) and ⲉϫⲛ̄-}
6. ⲁⲛϫⲉ-ϩⲁϩ ⲙⲉⲛ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲁⲛⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲉϩⲁϩ (Leyd. 332)
7. ⲁⲩⲡⲱⲧ ⲛ̄ⲑⲉ ⲛ̄ϩⲉⲛⲟⲩϩⲟⲟⲣ (III 202)
{NB: ⲛ̄ⲑⲉ ⲛ̄-: "in the manner of", "like"}
8. ⲁϥⲁⲣⲭⲉⲓ ⲛ̄-ϥⲓ-ⲧⲉϥⲃⲓϫ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲣⲟⲓ ⲉϥ-ⲡⲟⲗⲉⲙⲟⲥ ⲛⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲓ ⲁ-ⲛⲟ̀ⲕ ϩⲱⲱⲧ ⲁⲓ† ⲟⲩⲃⲏϥ (III 38f.)
{NB: ⲛ̄-: preposition, governed by ⲁⲣⲭⲉⲓ, preceding the infinitive ϥⲓ; ϩⲱⲱ-ⲧ reinforcer or augens, in the 1st sgl.}
9. ⲁⲩⲡⲗⲁⲛⲁ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲥ ϩⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲥϩⲁⲏ ⲛ̄ⲃⲓ-ⲛⲓⲁⲛⲟⲙⲟⲥ (Ch. 122)
10. ⲁⲛⲉⲓⲙⲉ ⲉⲧⲉⲩⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲃⲱⲃ (P 131.5 63 vo)
11. ⲟⲩϩⲟⲟⲩⲧ ⲙⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲥϩⲓⲙⲉ ⲁϥⲧⲁⲙⲓⲟⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲃⲓ-ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ (IV 37)
12. ⲁϥⲧⲱⲟⲩⲛ ⲁϥⲁⲥⲡⲁϩⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲁϥⲥⲙⲟⲩ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ (IV 198)
13. ⲁⲛϥⲓ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲛⲥⲧⲁⲩⲣⲟⲥ ⲁⲛⲟⲩⲁϩⲛ̄ ⲛ̄ⲥⲁ-ⲡϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ (III 72)
14. ⲁⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲣ̄-ⲁⲑⲏⲧ (III 49)
[OBS. For ⲣ̄- "become", see text 18]
15. ⲁⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲥⲩⲛϩⲓⲥⲧⲁ ⲙ̄ⲙⲱⲧⲛ ϩⲱⲥ-ⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲥ ⲉ-ⲛⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄ϩⲉⲛⲱⲁϥⲧⲉ ϩⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲧⲥⲃⲱ ... ⲁⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲣ̄-ⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ̄ ⲙ̄ⲙⲉ ⲉⲛⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄ϩⲉⲛⲃⲟⲗ (III 135)
{NB: ⲉⲛⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄ϩⲉⲛⲱⲁϥⲧⲉ and ⲉⲛⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄ϩⲉⲛⲃⲟⲗ are two circumstantial interlocutive Nominal Sentences (section 3.1.2); ⲣ̄- ... ⲛ̄-(ⲉⲓⲣⲉ) "render", "make into"}
16. ⲁⲙⲟⲟⲩⲧⲕ̄ (P 130.2 24 555)
{NB: the actor here is pronominal and "zero" — the 2nd person sgl. feminine suffix: ⲁ-∅-ⲙⲟⲟⲩⲧϥ}
17. ⲁⲣⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲛⲟⲟⲩ ⲃⲉ ⲛⲁⲛ (Leyd. 410)
{NB: ⲁⲣⲉ- a variant form of the perfect base before the 2nd sgl. fem. zero pronoun}
18. ⲟⲩⲡⲛⲁ ⲛ̄ⲁⲕⲁⲑⲁⲣⲧⲟⲛ ⲁϥⲣ̄-ⲟⲩⲇⲁⲣⲁⲕⲱⲛ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲟⲩϩⲟϥ ... ⲟⲩ-ⲟⲩⲱⲛⲱ̄ ⲁϥⲣ̄-ⲟⲩⲃⲁⲯⲟⲣ (RE 10 160)
[OBS. ⲣ̄- "become": the "copular" ⲣ̄-, prenominal form of the infinitive ⲉⲓⲣⲉ]
19. ⲁ-ⲡⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲃⲣⲟ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ (III 151)
20. ⲁⲡϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲧⲥⲧⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ (Ch. 26)

{NB: ⲧⲥⲧⲟⲟⲩ 3rd person plural pronominal object with the causative verb ⲧⲥⲧⲟ}

21. ⲁⲛⲁⲁⲓⲙⲟⲛⲓⲟⲛ ⲥⲟⲩⲛ̄-ⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲓⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲱ ⲁⲩⲡⲁϩⲧⲟⲩ ⲁⲩ-ⲟⲩⲱⲱⲩ̄ ⲛⲁϥ ⲁⲩⲁⲱ-ⲕⲁⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲛⲟⲃ ⲛ̄ⲥⲙⲏ (III 85)
{NB: ⲡⲁϩⲧ- presuffixal form of the infinitive ⲡⲱϩ̄, with a 3rd person plural object}
22. ⲁⲙⲡⲓⲥⲧⲟⲥ ⲣ̄-ⲙⲟⲉⲓϩⲉ (III 72)
[OBS. ⲣ̄- "do, make": the "transitive" auxiliary ⲣ̄- (prenominal of ⲉⲓⲣⲉ), deriving compound verbs from nouns}
23. ⲁϩⲁϩ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲭⲉ-ϩⲁϩ ⲙ̄ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲣⲉϥⲭⲓⲟⲩⲁ ⲉⲧⲃⲉ-ⲛⲉⲓⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲣⲉϥⲧⲱϩ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲓϩⲉ ⲛ̄ⲟⲥⲉ ϩⲓⲱⲧⲟⲣⲧⲣ̄ (IV 188)
{NB: ⲭⲉ- see ⲭⲱ; divide ⲛⲉⲓ-ⲙⲛ̄ⲧ-ⲣⲉϥ-ⲭⲓ-ⲟⲩⲁ, ⲛⲉⲓ-ⲙⲛ̄ⲧ-ⲣⲉϥ-ⲧⲱϩ}
24. ⲧⲁⲓ ⲧⲉ ⲑⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲥⲩⲛⲁⲅⲱⲅⲏ ⲛ̄ⲛⲓⲟⲩⲁⲁⲓ ⲁⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲙⲉⲣⲓ-ⲧⲟⲩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲟⲩⲧⲉ-ⲗⲁⲟⲥ ⲛⲓⲙ (Ch. 145)
{NB: ⲧⲁⲓ ⲧⲉ ⲑⲉ "thus", "this is the manner"}
25. ⲧⲉⲭⲁⲣⲓⲥ ⲛ̄ⲧⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲙⲟⲛⲁⲭⲟⲥ ... ⲁⲣⲉⲭⲁϩⲙⲉⲥ (III 206)
{NB: ⲁⲣⲉ-: a variant form of the 2nd sgl. fem. perfect; ⲭⲁϩⲙⲉⲥ: see ⲭⲱϩⲙ̄}
26. ⲁⲙⲓⲱⲉ ϩⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲛⲟⲃ ⲛ̄ⲁⲅⲱⲛ (A I 151)
27. ⲁⲙⲉⲥⲧⲱⲩ (A I 445)
{NB: ⲙⲉⲥⲧⲱ- see ⲙⲟⲥⲧⲉ}

(b) Negative:

1. ⲙ̄ⲡⲛ̄ⲭⲓ-ⲥϩⲓⲙⲉ ⲟⲩⲇⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛ̄ⲭⲓ-ϩⲁⲓ (A I 203)
2. ⲉⲧⲃⲉ-ⲟⲩ ⲃⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲓⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲉⲛⲁⲓ ⲏ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲓⲛⲟⲉⲓ ⲛ̄ⲛⲁⲓ (IV 187)
3. ⲙ̄ⲡⲓⲭⲓ-ⲛⲁⲓ ⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ⲟⲟⲛⲥ̄ (Wess. 9 163d)
{NB: ⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ "which is there", "yonder", rel. present predicating an adverb}
4. ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲱⲓⲡⲉ (BM 253f. 159)
5. ⲙ̄ⲡⲟⲩϥⲓ-ⲗⲁⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲟⲧ (III 57)
{NB: ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲟⲧ: the preposition ⲛ̄ⲧⲛ̄- with the 1st sgl. suffix (-ⲧ zeroed after a final -ⲧ)}
6. ⲙ̄ⲡⲟⲩϯ ⲟⲩⲃⲉ-ⲡⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲙ̄ⲡⲟⲩⲡⲱⲧ ⲛⲥⲱϥ ϩⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲩⲡⲣⲁⲝⲓⲥ ⲛ̄ⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲛ (Ch. 120)
7. ⲁⲗⲉⲝⲁⲛⲇⲣⲟⲥ ⲡϩⲏⲅⲉⲙⲱⲛ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲟⲛ ⲡⲉⲧⲣⲟⲥ ⲡϩⲏⲅⲉⲙⲱⲛ ⲁⲓ-ⲱⲁⲭⲉ ⲛⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ϩⲁϩ ⲛ̄ⲥⲟⲡ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲙ̄ⲡⲟⲩⲭⲱ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲓⲙⲓ̄ⲣⲥⲟⲃ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲓ-ⲙⲓⲛⲉ (III 32)
{NB: ⲛⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ: 3rd person plural with ⲛⲙ̄ⲙⲁ-, see ⲙⲛ̄-}
8. ⲉⲱⲭⲉ-ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲥⲟⲩⲱⲛⲧ̄ ⲱⲁ-ⲡⲟⲟⲩ ⲁⲓⲥⲟⲩⲱⲛⲉ ⲁⲛⲟⲕ (III 21)
{NB: ⲥⲟⲩⲱⲛⲧ̄, ⲥⲟⲩⲱⲛⲉ are 1st sgl. and 2nd sgl. fem. pronomi-

nal objects of COOYN; ⲙ̄ⲡⲉ- 2nd sgl. fem. actor. ⲁⲛⲟⲕ reinforcer or augens}

9. ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲣ-ϩⲟⲧⲉ ϩⲛⲧⲟ̄ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ (Leyd. 317)
{NB: ⲙ̄ⲡⲉ- 2nd sgl. fem. form of the neg. perfect; ϩⲛⲧ- "before"}

10. ⲙ̄ⲡⲟⲩⲃⲛ̄ⲧ (III 158)
{NB: -ⲃⲛ̄ⲧ 1st sgl. object zeroed after the final -ⲧ of the pronominal form of ⲃⲓⲛⲉ}

11. ⲁⲡⲉⲛϩⲛⲧ ⲯⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲁϩⲛⲧⲛ̄ ⲯⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲁⲛⲉⲛⲥⲁⲣⲝ̄ ⲯⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉ-ⲛ̄ⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲣⲱ ⲙ̄ⲙⲓⲛⲉ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲙ̄ⲡⲭⲁⲭⲉ ⲛ̄ⲇⲁⲓⲙⲟⲛⲓⲟⲛ ⲯⲟⲟⲩⲉ ϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲛ̄ϩⲛⲧⲛ̄ (IV 23)
{NB: ϩⲛⲧⲛ̄ possessed form of ϩⲛ (1st plural possessor)}

12. ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲁⲛⲁⲯ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉϩⲟⲧⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲣⲙ̄ⲉⲓⲛ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲭⲡⲓⲟ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲃⲱⲛⲧ̄ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉ-ⲥⲁϩⲟⲩ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲯⲁⲭⲉ ... ⲁⲙⲁϩⲧⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲓⲙⲓⲛⲉ ⲛ̄ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲣ̄ⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲉⲧⲉⲩⲯⲩⲭⲏ (A I 80)

6.1.1 THE PERFECT CONVERTED (Tables C(I)1, G)

(a) Circumstantial ⲉ-ⲁⲫⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "he having heard", "after/since he had heard"; adnominal; "... and then he heard" (in narrative) (27-30)
Negative ⲉ-ⲙⲡⲙ̄ⲫⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄

(b) Relative ⲉⲛⲧ-ⲁⲫⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ (ⲉⲣⲟⲫ) "who (whom) he heard/has heard" (31-33)
Negative ⲉⲧⲉ-ⲙ̄ⲡⲙ̄ⲫⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ (ⲉⲣⲟⲫ)
NB: the relative perfect is often written ⲛ̄ⲧ-ⲁⲫⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄

(c) Second Tense (Second Perfect) ⲛ̄ⲧ-ⲁⲫⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "(It is ...) that he heard/has heard" (34-38)
Negative ⲉⲧⲉ-ⲙ̄ⲡⲙ̄ⲫⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "(It is ...) that he did not hear/has not heard", ⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲫⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ... ⲁⲛ "(it is) not (...) that he heard/has heard"
NB: the Second Perfect (affirmative) is often written ⲉⲛⲧ-ⲁⲫⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄

(d) Preterite ⲛⲉ-ⲁⲫⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "he had heard" (40-41). (In the protasis of a hypothetical condition ⲉⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲫⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄)
Negative ⲛⲉ-ⲙ̄ⲡⲙ̄ⲫⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ (ⲉⲛⲉⲙ̄ⲡⲙ̄ⲫⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ in the protasis of a hypothetical condition).
NB: the preterite form is often followed by ⲡⲉ, the function of which is not entirely clear. It seems to characterize the preterite form as *background*.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

STERN parr. 423-424, 376; STEINDORFF parr. 374, 378, 465, 472; TILL parr. 316,

327, 329, 461-462; VERGOTE parr. 163(3), 164(3), 165(3), 166(6); LAMBDIN parr. 12.1-12.3, 14.1, 25.1(a); POLOTSKY, "Conjugation System" parr. 10-11, 16-18, * *Nom. Transposition* parr. 16-18

(a) Circumstantial:

1. ⲁⲕ†-ϩⲧⲏⲕ ⲙⲉⲛ ⲉⲡⲉϥⲱⲗⲭⲉ ⲉ† ⲉⲙⲏⲥⲉ ⲉⲁⲕⲡⲁⲣⲁⲃⲁ ⲇⲉ ϩⲱⲱϥ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉϥⲕⲉⲱⲗⲭⲉ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ (III 64)
   {NB: ϩⲧⲏⲕ see ϩⲛ†}
2. ⲁⲕⲙⲉⲣⲓⲧⲛ̄ ⲡⲁⲣⲁⲡⲉⲛⲛ̄ⲡⲱⲁ ⲉⲁⲕ† ⲛ̄ⲡⲉⲕⲙⲟⲛⲟⲅⲉⲛⲏⲥ ⲛ̄ⲱⲟⲏⲣⲉ ϩⲁⲣⲟⲛ (RE 10 162a)
   {NB: ⲙⲉⲣⲓⲧⲛ̄ see ⲙⲉ (verb); ϩⲁⲣⲟⲛ see ϩⲁ-}
3. ⲁⲛⲙⲟⲩ ⲙ̄ⲡⲡⲉⲭ̄ⲥ ϩⲓⲧⲙ̄-ⲡⲃⲁⲡⲧⲓⲥⲙⲁ ⲉⲁⲩⲧⲟⲙⲥⲛ̄ ⲛⲙ̄ⲙⲁϥ ϩⲓⲧⲙ̄ⲡ-ⲃⲁⲡⲧⲓⲥⲙⲁ ⲉⲡⲉϥⲙⲟⲩ (Ch. 166)
   {NB: ⲛⲙ̄ⲙⲁϥ see ⲙⲛ̄-}
   [OBS. ⲉⲁⲩⲧⲟⲙⲥⲛ̄ the 3rd person plural actor with a direct object to the infinitive convey a notion corresponding to the passive voice]
4. ⲁⲩⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲟⲟⲩ ⲓ̄ⲥ̄ ⲉⲁϥⲭⲓ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲙⲟⲣⲫⲏ ⲛ̄ϩⲙ̄ϩⲁⲗ ⲉⲧ-ⲃⲏⲏⲧⲛ̄ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲟⲛ ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲭⲓⲛⲛ̄-ⲱⲟⲣⲡ̄ ⲉⲁϥⲱⲱⲡⲉ ⲛ̄ⲣⲉϥⲣ̄ϩⲱⲃ (IV 36)
   {NB: ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲏⲧⲛ̄ see ⲉⲧⲃⲉ-}
5. ⲉⲧⲃⲉ-ⲟⲩ ⲁⲕⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲛ̄ⲥⲁ-ⲡⲛⲟⲙⲟⲥ ⲉⲭⲓ-ⲙⲏⲥⲉ ⲉⲙⲡⲕ̄ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲇⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟϥ ⲛ̄ⲥⲱ-ϥ ϩⲛ̄ⲛⲉϥⲕⲉⲱⲗⲭⲉ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ (III 64)
6. ⲙⲉⲱⲗⲕ ⲁⲓⲭⲓ-ϩⲟⲓⲛⲉ ⲛ̄ⲃⲟⲛⲥ̄ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧ-ⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ̄ ⲉⲙⲡⲓⲉⲓⲙⲉ (III 139)
   {NB: ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ̄ see ϩⲛ̄-}
7. ⲙ̄ⲡⲕ̄ⲁ-ⲃⲉ-ϩⲱⲃ ⲙ̄ⲡⲕ̄ⲁⲃⲉⲗⲁⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ⲱⲗⲭⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲧ̄ⲁⲙⲟⲛ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ (III 94)
8. ⲁⲩϩⲟⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲱⲧ ⲟⲩⲉⲓⲛⲉ ⲏ ⲟⲩⲉⲃⲟⲧ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲱⲧ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲟⲩⲣⲟⲙⲡⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲛ†-ⲛⲟⲩⲃ̄ⲥ̄ ⲛⲁⲕ (RE 10 164)
   {NB: ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲛ†- = ⲉⲙⲡⲛ̄†-}
   [OBS. The circumstantial converter is often zeroed before a syllabic nasal consonant (ⲙ̄ or ⲛ̄)]

(b) Relative:

1. ⲡⲉⲓⲕⲉⲣⲁⲩⲛⲟⲥ ⲉⲛⲧⲁϥⲉⲓ ⲉϫⲱ-ⲛ (III 220)
2. ⲡⲣⲁⲙⲟⲥ ⲛⲧⲁ-ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲧⲁⲉⲓⲟϥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲁϥⲧⲃ̄ⲃⲟϥ (III 27)
3. ⲛ̄ⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲉⲛⲧⲁϥϫⲟⲟⲩ (III 64)
   [OBS. Note the position of the reinforcer (augens) which, while expanding the object suffix in ϫⲟⲟⲩ, occurs in the second position of the prosodic unit]
4. ⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁϥⲡⲗⲁⲥⲥⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲛ (Ch. 118)

{NB: ⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩ- the relative expanding a definite article (section 31.1): "he who"}

5. ⲧⲃⲁⲃⲩⲗⲱⲛ ⲉⲧⲉⲙⲡⲥ̄ⲭⲓ-ⲡⲁϩⲣⲉ (III 165)
6. ⲛⲓⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛ̄ⲥⲛⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲉⲙ̄ⲡⲟⲩⲥⲓ ⲛ̄ⲣ̄-ⲛⲟⲃⲉ ϩⲛ̄-ⲉⲡⲓⲃⲟⲩⲗⲏ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲙ̄ⲡⲟ-ⲛⲓⲣⲟⲛ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲛⲉⲭⲣⲓⲥⲧⲓⲁⲛⲟⲥ (III 89)
7. ⲛⲉ-ϩⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲉⲧⲉⲙ̄ⲡⲉ-ⲕⲉⲟⲩⲁ ⲗⲁⲩ (Ch. 17)
8. ⲧⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲡⲁⲣⲑⲉⲛⲟⲥ ⲉⲧⲉⲙⲡⲭ̄ⲥⲉⲓ ⲛ̄ⲱⲗⲁϩⲉ ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲏⲧⲥ̄ ⲛ̄ⲑⲓ-ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛ̄ⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲥ ⲁⲑⲁⲛⲁⲥⲓⲟⲥ ⲡⲁⲣⲭⲓⲉⲡⲓⲥⲕⲟⲡⲟⲥ (III 108)
   {NB: -ⲥ in ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲏⲧⲥ̄ refers back to the antecedent: "about which ..."}
9. ⲛⲉⲓⲱⲗϩⲉ ⲉⲧⲉⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲥⲟⲩⲱⲛⲟⲩ ϫⲉ-ⲟⲩ ⲛⲉ (III 75)
10. ⲁⲡⲁⲧⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡⲉⲧⲉⲙ̄ⲡⲭ̄ⲥⲟⲩⲛ̄-ⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲁⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ⲛⲟⲃⲉ ϩⲁⲣⲟⲛ ⲏ ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲏⲧⲛ̄ (A I 86)
    {NB: ⲁⲁ- ⲛ̄- "make into" (see ⲉⲓⲣⲉ); ⲡⲉⲧⲉⲙ̄ⲡⲭ̄- definite relative, i.e. the relative with a def. article as antecedent}

(c) Second Perfect:

1. ⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲩⲣ̄-ⲱⲙ̄ⲙⲟ ⲉⲣⲱⲧⲛ̄ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲛⲉⲩϩⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲉⲑⲟⲟⲩ (III 143)
   {NB: ⲉⲧⲃⲉ- is emphasized by the Second Perfect: "It is because of ... that ..."; ⲉⲑⲟⲟⲩ "which are evil", relative present}
2. ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲟⲩⲁ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲱⲧ ⲉⲓ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲛⲉⲓⲥⲩⲛⲁⲅⲱⲅⲏ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲏⲓ ⲏ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲙⲁ ⲏ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲉⲓⲟⲡⲉ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲛⲉⲓ ⲧⲏⲣⲛ̄ ⲉⲙⲉⲧⲁⲛⲟⲉⲓ ⲉϫⲛ̄-ⲛⲉⲛⲛⲟⲃⲉ (IV 164)
   {NB: ⲉ-ⲙⲉⲧⲁⲛⲟⲉⲓ is emphasized by the Second Perfect: "It is in order to ... that ..."}
3. ϩⲱⲃ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲛ̄ⲧⲁϥⲁⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ⲧⲁϥⲁⲁⲩ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲡⲉⲛⲟⲩϫⲁⲓ (A II 436f.)
   {NB: the first ⲛ̄ⲧⲁϥ- is the relative, the second Second Perfect, emphasizing ⲉⲧⲃⲉ-}

(d) Preterite:

1. ⲛⲉⲁⲩⲉⲓ ⲡⲉ ⲉⲧⲃⲉϩⲉⲛⲁⲡⲟⲗⲟⲅⲓⲁ (A II 44)
   {NB: ⲡⲉ a "backgrounding" morpheme often accompanying the preterite conversion}
2. ⲛⲉⲁⲓϫⲉ-ⲡⲁⲓ ⲟⲛ (III 37)
3. ⲛⲉⲁϥⲁϩⲉ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲉⲣⲁⲧⲟ̄ ϩⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲕⲕⲗⲏⲥⲓⲁ (III 37)
   {NB: ⲁϩⲉ ... ⲉⲣⲁⲧ- see ⲱϩⲉ}
4. ⲛⲉⲁϥⲟⲡⲥ̄ ⲅⲁⲣ ϫⲉ-ⲟⲩⲁⲛⲁⲅⲕⲁⲓⲟⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲕⲁⲁⲩ ⲉⲱⲗϩⲉ (A II 44)
   {NB: -ⲥ 3rd sgl. feminine object of ⲱⲡ, "it", the fem. pronoun in a

"neuter" sense; ϵτm̄ⲕⲁⲁγ the infinitive (ⲕω, with a 3rd person plural object) negatived by τm̄)

5. ϵⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲛⲟγⲱⲱ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲡⲉ ϵⲣγⲙⲛⲁⲍⲉ ϩⲓⲛ̄ⲛⲟⲙⲟⲥ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲕⲭⲟⲟγ (you would not escape their vengeance) (Ch. 95)

6.2 THE AORIST BASE (Table C(I)2):

Affirmative: ⲱⲁ- + pronominal actor + infinitive – ⲱⲁϥⲥⲱⲧm̄
ⲱⲁⲣⲉ- + nominal (dem./indef./2nd sgl. fem.) actor + infinitive – ⲱⲁⲣⲉⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲧm̄

Negative: ⲙⲉ- + pronominal actor + infinitive – ⲙⲉϥⲥⲱⲧm̄
ⲙⲉⲣⲉ- + nominal (dem./indef./2nd sgl. fem.) actor + infinitive – ⲙⲉⲣⲉⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲧm̄

The Coptic aorist expresses timelessness, a general truth, habitude, propensity, natural consequence, approx. corresponding to the English Present Simple. The negative aorist expresses also the lack of (natural) ability ("He cannot ...", "It is not in his nature to ...").

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

STERN parr. 377, 393, 396; STEINDORFF parr. 342-343, 364-365; TILL parr. 304-305; VERGOTE par. 159(3); LAMBDIN par. 28.1; YOUNG, "Present I"

(a) Affirmative:

1. ⲱⲁγⲭⲟⲟⲥ ⲉⲧⲃⲉ-ⲡϩⲟϥ ⲭⲉ-ⲱⲁϥⲣ̄-ϩⲟⲧⲉ ϩⲛⲧⲫ̄ ⲙⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉϥⲕⲛ ⲕⲁϩⲏγ (A I 260)
{NB: ϩⲛⲧ- ⲛ̄- the construction of the preposition ϩⲛⲧ- with a noun. ⲉϥⲕⲛ ⲕⲁϩⲏγ circumstantial present, "when he is naked"}
2. ⲉⲱⲭⲉ-ⲱⲁγⲱⲓⲃⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲙⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟγⲧⲉ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲃⲟⲗ ... ⲱⲁγⲱⲓⲃⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲙ̄ⲡⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲛ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲭⲓ ⲛ̄ⲃⲟⲛⲥ̄ ⲁγⲱ ⲡⲧⲃ̄ⲃⲟ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲭⲱϩⲙ̄ (P 130.4 104 123)
3. ⲱⲁⲣⲉⲧⲥⲓⲟ ⲙ̄ⲡⲟⲉⲓⲕ ⲙⲛ̄ⲡⲙⲟⲟγ ... ⲱⲁⲣⲉⲧⲥⲓⲟ ⲟⲛ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲡⲛⲟⲃⲉ (III 204)
{NB: both actor of the aorist and object of ⲧⲥⲓⲟ are the 2nd sgl. fem. zero pronoun (reflexive object)}
4. (The dead sheep, once it is dead,) ⲱⲁϥⲣ̄-ⲡⲱⲟγ (i.e. the wild beasts') ⲱⲁϥⲱⲱⲡⲉ ⲛⲁγ ⲛ̄ϩⲣⲉ (III 47)
5. ⲱⲁⲣⲉ-ⲡⲁⲑⲏⲧ ⲅⲁⲣ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲉϥⲥⲱⲃⲉ ⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲛ̄ⲟγⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲱⲁϥⲧⲉ (IV 80)
6. ⲱⲁⲣⲉⲡⲙⲟⲥⲧⲉ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲧⲟγⲛⲉⲥ-ⲟγϯ-ⲧⲱⲛ (III 122)
7. ⲉⲡⲙⲁ ⲛ̄ⲧⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲓⲁ ⲙ̄ⲡⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲥ ⲛ̄ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲱⲁⲣⲉⲧⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲥ

ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲥ ⲛ̄ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲫⲓ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ⲧⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲓⲁ ⲙ̄ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛ̄ⲭⲁⲭⲉ (IV 124)

8. ⲙⲏ ⲭⲱⲣⲓⲥ-ⲧⲁⲕⲟ ⲏ ⲕⲛⲟⲥ ⲱⲁⲣⲉⲫⲛ̄ⲧ ⲱⲱⲡⲉ ⲥⲛ̄ⲥⲛⲁⲁⲩ ⲉⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩϥ (E 73)
{NB: ⲉⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩϥ adnominal circumstantial Adjective Verb, qualifying (sections 22.1, 22.5, 27.1) "that is good"}
9. ⲙⲏ ⲱⲁⲣⲉⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲁϥⲙⲟⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲁⲩⲧⲟⲙⲥϥ ⲣⲛⲟⲃⲉ (Ch. 103)
{NB: the infinitive of the aorist is ⲣ̄-(ⲛⲟⲃⲉ). The circumstantial perfect qualifies ⲣⲱⲙⲉ}
10. ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲓⲥⲉ ⲱⲁⲣⲉⲡⲙⲁⲓ-ⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲟⲩⲱⲛⲥ̄ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉϥⲟⲩⲱⲱ ⲧⲏⲣϥ̄ ⲉⲥⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲭⲉ-ⲁϥⲙⲉⲣⲓⲧϥ̄ ⲉⲥⲟⲩⲉ-ⲡⲉϥⲥⲟⲛ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛ̄ⲥⲟⲩⲟ ⲉⲡⲉϥⲉⲓⲱⲧ ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲉϥⲙⲁⲁⲩ (IV 128)
{NB: ⲙⲉⲣⲓⲧ- the pronominal form of the infinitive ⲙⲉ (i.e. its alternant form before a nominal object)}

(b) Negative:

1. ⲁⲣⲁ ⲙⲉⲕⲟⲩⲱⲙ ⲥⲛ̄ⲛⲓⲟⲉⲓⲕ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩ·ⲱⲧ ⲛⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲓⲃⲓⲛ-ⲟⲩⲱⲙ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲱⲧ (IV 38)
{NB: ⲛⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲥ see ⲙⲛ̄-}
2. ⲙⲉⲫⲣ̄ⲱⲁⲩ ⲉⲡⲓⲓⲓ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ (Z 189)
3. ⲉⲧⲃⲉ-ⲧⲁⲛⲟⲭⲏ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲙⲉⲩⲫⲱⲧⲉ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲥⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲃⲉⲡⲏ ⲛⲛ̄ⲣ-ⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲧⲣ̄ⲛⲟⲃⲉ (III 194)
{NB: ⲉⲧⲣ̄ⲛⲟⲃⲉ relative present; for the verb, see ⲛⲟⲃⲉ}
4. ⲙⲉⲩⲉⲱ-ⲃⲙ̄ⲃⲟⲙ ⲉⲱⲗⲏⲗ ⲛ̄ⲑⲉ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩ·ⲱⲏⲣⲉ ⲱⲏⲙ (IV 52)
{NB: -ⲉⲱ- or -ⲱ- (after a vowel), with ⲃⲙ̄ⲃⲟⲙ (see ⲃⲟⲙ, ⲃⲓⲛⲉ) and other infinitives: "be able"}
5. ⲥⲛ̄ⲧⲕⲉ-ⲟⲩⲱⲏ ⲙⲉⲣⲉ-ⲡⲉⲫⲥⲛⲧ ⲥⲓⲛⲛⲃ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲙⲉ (A II 435)
{NB: ⲥⲛ̄-ⲧ-ⲕⲉ "even in the..."}
6. ⲙⲉⲕⲥⲱⲡ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ (Ch. 24)
7. ⲙⲉⲛⲭⲱⲕⲙ̄ ⲥⲛ̄-ⲥⲓⲟⲟⲩⲛⲉ (III 83)

6.2.1 THE AORIST CONVERTED (Tables C(I)2, G)

(a) Circumstantial: ⲉ-ⲱⲁⲫⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ adnominal ("who hears", qualifying an indefinite nucleus; 27)
Negative ⲉ-ⲙⲉⲫⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "who/when he does not, cannot hear" (27-30)

(b) Relative: ⲉ-ⲱⲁⲫⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "who hears" (31-33)
Negative ⲉ-ⲙⲉⲫⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲉⲧⲉ-ⲙⲉⲫⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "who cannot, does not hear"

(c) Second Tense (Second Aorist): ϵ-ϣⲁϥcωτⲙ̄ "(It is ...) that he hears" (34-38)
Negative ϵϣⲁϥcωτⲙ̄ ... ⲁⲛ ... "(It is) not ... that he hears"
(d) Preterite: ⲛϵ-ϣⲁϥcωτⲙ̄ "He would hear", expressing past habit/propensity (39-40)
Negative ⲛϵ-ⲙϵϥcωτⲙ̄

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STERN parr. 426, 427, 433-434; STEINDORFF parr. 374, 378, 465, 474; TILL parr. 327, 334, 461-462; VERGOTE parr. 163(4), 164(5), 165(5), 166(5); LAMBDIN par. 28.1; POLOTSKY, "Conjugation System" parr. 10-11, 16-18

(a) Circumstantial:

1. ϩⲉⲛⲉⲛⲧⲏϭ ϵϣⲁⲩⲙⲟⲗϩⲟⲩ (IV 85)
2. ⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲟⲩⲕⲣⲓⲧⲏⲥ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ ⲡⲉ ⲉⲙⲉϥⲭⲓ-ϩⲟ (III 129)
3. ⲟⲩⲥⲱⲙⲁ ϵϣⲁϥⲙⲟⲩ (P 130.2 88 ro)
4. (They say "we are praying") ⲉⲙⲉⲩⲣ̄ϩⲱⲃ (III 92)
5. (They that enter the House of God) ⲉⲙⲉⲩⲡⲣⲟⲥⲉⲭⲉ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲉϩ-ⲥⲁϩⲛⲉ (IV 38)
{NB: ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲉϩⲥⲁϩⲛⲉ = ⲉⲛⲟⲩⲉϩⲥⲁϩⲛⲉ the preposition ϵ- (governed by ⲡⲣⲟⲥⲉⲭⲉ) zeroed before the syllabic nasal}
6. (We have the Tree of Life, the Cross, shining day and night) ⲉⲙⲉⲣⲉⲡⲉϥⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲛ ϩⲧⲟⲙⲧⲙ̄ ⲉⲛⲉϩ (III 94)

(b) Relative:

1. ⲛⲉ-ϩⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲉⲧⲉϣⲁⲛⲥⲡⲟⲩⲇⲁⲍⲉ ⲉⲁⲩ (A II 433)
{NB: ϵ-ⲁⲁⲩ see ⲉⲓⲣⲉ}
2. ⲡϩⲟⲩⲙ̄ⲡⲉ ⲉϣⲁϥⲉⲓ ⲉⲭⲙ̄-ⲡⲕⲁϩ (Ch. 11)
{NB: ⲡϩⲟⲩ-: see ϩⲱⲟⲩ}
3. ⲡϥⲛ̄ⲧ ⲉⲧⲉⲙⲉϥⲛ̄ⲕⲟⲧⲕ̄ (P 131.6 81 vo)
4. ⲛⲉⲧⲉϣⲁⲩϩⲉ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲧⲣⲁⲡⲉⲍⲁ (III 78)
[OBS. The def. article antecedent of the relative ⲉⲧⲉϣⲁⲩ- "the one who ..."]
5. ⲡⲙⲁ ⲉⲧⲉⲙⲉⲣⲉ-ⲭⲟⲟⲗⲉⲥ ⲟⲩⲧⲉ ϩⲟⲟⲗⲉ ⲧⲁⲕⲟ ⲛ̄ϩⲛⲧⲏ (A II 237 = Mt. 6:20))
{NB: ⲛ̄ϩⲛⲧⲏ see ϩⲛ̄-}
6. ⲛ̄ⲥⲙⲟⲧ ⲉⲧⲉϣⲁⲕⲃⲱⲕ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲛ̄ϩⲛⲧⲟⲩ ϣⲁ-ⲛⲉⲧⲉ-ⲛⲟⲩⲕ ⲛⲉ (Ch. 23)
{NB: ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩⲕ ⲛⲉ determinated relative form of the delocutive Nominal sentence}
7. ⲙⲏ ⲡⲉϣⲁϥϩⲉ ⲃⲉ ⲙⲉⲩⲧⲱⲟⲩⲛ ϩⲟⲗⲱⲥ (Leyd. 345)
{NB: ⲡⲉϣⲁϥ- determinated relative aorist, "the one who ..."}

8. ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲙⲉⲩⲥⲉⲓ ⲛ̄ⲧⲱⲣⲡ̄ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛ̄ⲛⲓ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩⲟⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲉ (IV 99)
{NB: ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲙⲉⲩⲥⲉⲓ det. rel. negatived Nominal Sentence: "they that are not ..."; ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩⲛⲟⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲉ see note to text 6}
9. ⲛⲉϩⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲉⲧⲉⲙⲉⲱⲱⲉ (A I 197)
10. ⲧⲁⲓ ⲧⲉ ⲑⲉ ⲉⲱⲁⲛⲧⲱⲟⲩⲛ ϩⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲱⲱⲧ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ (III 149)

(c) Second Aorist:

1. ⲉⲱϫⲉ-ⲁⲩⲱⲓⲛⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲛ̄ⲥⲁ-ⲟⲩⲱⲁϫⲉ ⲉⲱⲁⲩⲱⲓⲛⲉ ϩⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲙⲛ̄ⲧϩⲁⲕ (III 32)
{NB: ϩⲛ̄- is emphasized by the Second Aorist ("It is ... that ...")}
2. ⲉⲱⲁⲩⲥⲁⲛⲱ̄-ⲧⲁⲣⲉⲧⲏ ⲁⲛ ϩⲓⲧⲛ̄-ⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲕ (A II 438)
{NB: ϩⲓⲧⲛ̄- is emphasized by the Second Aorist ("It is not ... that ...)}
[OBS. The negativer ⲁⲛ negatives the nexus (the subject-predicate relation, corresponding to "it is ...") between the Second Aorist ("that ...") and the adverb]
3. ⲛⲉⲧⲙⲟⲩ ⲉⲱⲁⲣⲉ-ⲧⲉⲩⲯⲩⲭⲏ ⲉⲓ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧⲟⲩ ⲉⲱⲁⲥⲃⲱⲕ ⲉⲛ-ⲥⲱⲙⲁ ⲛ̄-ⲛⲉⲧⲟⲩⲭⲡⲟ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ (Wess. 9 145b)
{NB: ⲛⲉⲧⲙⲟⲩ "they who die", determinated relative present; so too ⲛⲉⲧⲟⲩⲭⲡⲟ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ "they whom they beget". ⲉ- is emphasized by the Second Aorist}

(d) Preterite:

1. ⲛⲉⲓⲱⲁϫⲉ ⲇⲉ ⲙ̄ⲛⲛⲉⲓϩⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲙ̄ⲛϩⲉⲛⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲉⲛⲁⲱⲱⲟⲩ ⲛⲉⲱⲁⲛⲁ-ⲁⲩ ⲡⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲉⲱⲁⲛϫⲟⲟⲩ ... ⲁⲩ̈ⲱ ⲛⲉⲙⲉⲛⲉⲱ-ⲡⲉⲓⲑⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲡⲉ (III 149)
{NB: ⲉⲛⲁⲱⲱⲟⲩ circumstantial conversion of the Adjective Verb (sections 22.2, 22.5, 27.1), qualifying ϩⲉⲛⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ; ⲁⲁⲩ see ⲉⲓⲣⲉ; ϫⲟⲟⲩ see ϫⲱ; ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ 3rd plural pronoun after the preposition ⲛ̄- introducing the direct object}
2. ⲛⲉⲱⲁⲣⲉⲱⲗⲏⲗ (III 203)
{NB: 2nd sgl. fem. actor}
3. ϩⲁϩ ⲛ̄ⲥⲟⲡ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲡⲉⲙⲕⲁϩ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ⲛⲉⲙⲉⲓⲉⲱ-ⲃⲙ̄ⲃⲟⲙ ⲛ̄ⲁⲡⲁⲧⲁ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲧⲛⲏⲩ ⲛⲁⲛ ϩⲓⲃⲟⲗ (A I 475)
{NB: ⲛⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ, ⲛⲉⲧⲛⲏⲩ det. relative present, the first predicating the adverb ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ "there" ("they who are there", "they yonder", "those"), the second a stative (section 16.1.1, "they who are coming")}

6.3 ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲧⲭ̄ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "NOT YET" (Table C(I)3):

ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲧ- + pronominal actor + infinitive – ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲧⲭ̄ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄
ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲧⲉ- + nominal (dem./indef./2nd sgl. fem.) actor + infinitive –
ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲧⲉⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "He/the man has not yet heard"

Bibliography:
Stern par. 395; Steindorff parr. 362-363; Till par. 320; Vergote par. 159(2); Lambdin par. 30.5

1. ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲧⲟⲩⲛⲟⲩϫⲕ̄ ⲣⲱ ⲉⲛⲉⲱⲧⲉⲕⲱⲟⲩ (III 103)
   {NB: ⲛⲟⲩϫ- the pronominal form ("state") of the verb ⲛⲟⲩϫⲉ i.e. its alternant form before a pronominal direct object. ⲱⲧⲉⲕⲱⲟⲩ the plural form of ⲱⲧⲉⲕⲟ}
2. ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲧⲉ-ⲧⲉⲕⲧⲏⲥⲓⲥ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲥⲟⲩⲱⲛⲥ̄ ⲙ̄ⲙⲓⲛ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲥ ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲡⲱϣⲁϫⲉ ⲟⲩⲇⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲧⲉⲥⲉⲓⲙⲉ ϫⲉ-ⲁϥ ⲧⲉ ⲧⲟⲩⲥⲓⲁ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲩⲯⲩⲭⲏ ⲁϥ ⲧⲉ ⲧⲉⲫⲩⲥⲓⲥ ⲙ̄ⲡⲥⲱⲙⲁ (III 224)
   {NB: ⲕⲧⲏⲥⲓⲥ = ⲕⲧⲓⲥⲓⲥ. ⲥⲟⲩⲱⲛⲭ̄ pronominal form of ⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ}
3. ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲧⲉⲛⲱⲥⲕ̄ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲛ̄ⲭⲓ ϩⲁ-ⲛⲉⲛⲉⲣⲡⲩ (IV 34)
4. ⲙ̄ⲡⲁϯⲉⲓⲱ ⲣⲱ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲥⲁϩⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲛⲁⲡⲉⲑⲟⲟⲩ ⲙⲛ̄ⲡⲥⲁϩⲟⲩ ⲉⲛⲧⲁⲓⲛ̄ⲧⲭ̄ ⲏ ⲉⲛⲧⲁⲓⲥⲟⲕⲭ̄ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉϫⲱⲓ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲧ (A I 103)
   {NB: ⲙⲁ-ⲡⲉⲑⲟⲟⲩ: pl. possessive pronoun + det. relative present ("that which is evil"); ⲛ̄ⲧ- see ⲉⲓⲛⲉ. ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲧ 1st sgl. form of ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁ-}

6.3.1 ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲧⲭⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ("Not Yet") CONVERTED (Tables C 3, G)

(a) Circumstantial ⲉ-ⲙⲡⲁⲧⲭ̄ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "before he has heard"; also adnominal (27-30). Note the especially prevalent ϩⲁⲑⲏ (ⲉ)ⲙⲡⲁⲧⲭ̄ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ (ϩⲁ-ⲑⲏ "before")
(b) Relative (ⲉⲧⲉ-ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲧⲭ̄ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄) "who has not yet heard" (31-33)

Bibliography:
Stern par. 437; Steindorff parr. 378, 465; Till parr. 320, 327-328, 461-462; Vergote parr. 164(4), 165(4); Lambdin par. 30.5; Polotsky, "Conjugation System" parr. 10-11. 16-18

(a) Circumstantial:

1. ⲙⲉⲩⲟⲩⲱϩ ϩⲛ̄-ⲛⲓ ⲉⲙⲡⲁⲧⲟⲩⲕⲟⲧⲭ̄ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲙⲉⲩⲕⲁ-ϩⲉⲛϩⲛⲁⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ⲁⲛⲁⲅⲕⲁⲓⲟⲛ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧⲭ̄ (A II 147)
   {NB: ⲕⲁ- prenominal form of ⲕⲱ}

2. ⲁⲧⲉⲫⲯⲩⲭⲏ ⲣ̄ⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲉⲙⲡⲁⲧⲥ̄ⲉⲓ ⲁⲡⲉⲫⲥⲱⲙⲁ (Wess. 9 144c)
3. ⲧⲙ̄ⲛ̄ⲧⲣⲙ̄ⲛ̄ⲍⲏⲧ ⲡⲉ ⲉⲓⲙⲉ ⲭⲉ-ⲁⲛⲟⲛⲍⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲍⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲛⲉ ⲛⲉⲛⲍⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲉⲙⲡⲁⲧⲉ-ⲡⲉⲛⲁⲍⲉ ⲱⲭⲛ̄ (IV 20)
{NB: divide ⲧ-ⲙⲛ̄ⲧ-ⲣⲙ̄-ⲛ̄-ⲍⲏⲧ}
4. ⲥⲉⲟⲩⲱⲙ ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲧⲟⲩⲃⲱⲕ ⲉⲧⲉⲡⲣⲟⲥⲫⲟⲣⲁ (Ch. 50)
{NB: ⲥⲉⲟⲩⲱⲙ present (section 15.1) "they eat". ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲧⲟⲩ- = ⲉⲙⲡⲁⲧⲟⲩ-, with the converter ⲉ- zeroed before the syllabic nasal}
5. ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲉⲱ-ϥⲓ ⲉⲣⲟ ⲱⲁ-ⲡⲙⲉⲍⲱⲟⲙⲛ̄ⲧ ⲏ ⲡⲙⲉⲍϥⲧⲟⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲍⲟⲟⲩ ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲛⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲁⲛ ⲛ̄ⲛⲟⲩⲱⲁⲭⲉ ⲛ̄ⲙ̄ⲕⲁⲍ ⲛ̄ⲍⲏⲧ (Z 397)
{NB: the actor of ⲙ̄ⲡⲉ-, ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲧⲉ- (= ⲉⲙⲡⲁⲧⲉ-) and possessor in the possessive article ⲛⲟⲩ- is the 2nd sgl. fem. zero suffix pronoun. This is a rhetorical question.}
6. ⲍⲉⲛⲱⲏⲣⲉ ⲱⲏⲙ ... ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲧⲟⲩⲛⲟⲉⲓ ⲉⲑⲏⲗⲓⲕⲓⲁ (IV 103)
{NB: ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲧⲟⲩ- = ⲉⲙⲡⲁⲧⲟⲩ}
7. (Christ, who existed with His Father) ⲉⲙⲡⲁⲧϥ̄ⲧⲁⲙⲓⲉ-ⲁⲅⲅⲉⲗⲟⲥ ⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲁⲣⲭⲁⲅⲅⲉⲗⲟⲥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛ̄ⲃⲟⲙ ⲙⲛ̄ⲛ̄ⲥⲁⲣⲁⲫⲓⲛ (Z 246)
8. (How many tribulations have weighed upon you) ⲍⲁⲑⲏ ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲧⲉⲉⲓ ⲉⲍⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲡⲓⲃⲓⲟⲥ (III 105)
9. ⲍⲁⲑⲏ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲧⲟⲩⲣ̄-ⲕⲟⲓⲛⲱⲛⲓⲁ ⲛⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲛ (we used not to fear that our clothes might be stolen) (IV 105)

(b) Relative:

1. ⲡⲉⲛⲉⲓⲱⲧ ⲛ̄ⲍⲗ̄ⲗⲟ ... ⲡⲁⲓ ⲉⲧⲉⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲧϥ̄ⲱⲥⲕ̄ ⲭⲓⲛⲧⲁϥⲃⲱⲕ ⲉⲣⲁⲧϥ̄ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ (III 142)
{NB: ⲛ̄ⲧⲁϥ- the form of the perfect (actually Second Perfect) following ⲭⲓⲛ- "since"}
2. ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲧⲟⲩ ⲉⲓ ⲉⲍⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲣⲟϥ (i.e. down to moral disease) (IV 20)
3. ⲟⲩⲟⲛ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲉⲧⲉⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲧⲟⲩⲥⲟⲩⲱⲛⲣ̄ ⲙⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲕⲙⲁⲣⲓⲁ (III 77)
{NB: ⲥⲟⲩⲱⲛ- pronominal state of ⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ; r alternant of ⲕ after a nasal (here a 2nd sgl. masc. suffix as object)}

6.4 THE OPTATIVE (or "THIRD FUTURE", Table C(I)4):

Affirmative: ⲉ- + pronominal actor + ⲉ- + infinitive – ⲉϥⲉⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄
ⲉⲣⲉ- + nominal (dem./indef./2nd sgl. fem.) actor + infinitive – ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄
Negative: ⲛ̄ⲛⲉ- + nominal/pronominal actor + infinitive – ⲛ̄ⲛⲉϥⲥⲱ-ⲧⲙ̄, ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄

(a-b) The optative expresses wish, with shades of meaning varying according to the actor person and to whether the form is affirmative

or negative. In the 1st persons: willingness/unwillingness, intent, agreement/refusal, exhortation/prohibition. In the 2nd persons: request, desire, polite demand (negative request, prohibition). In the 3rd persons: wish, desire, prayer, "prophetic future".

(c) Following ⲭⲉ- ("that") or ⲭⲉⲕⲁ(ⲁ)ⲥ (originally "that let it", in the negative constructed with the circumstantial optative ⲉⲛⲛⲉϥ-), the optative, affirmative or negative, expresses in all persons purpose ("final clause", "in order that ...") and result ("consecutive clause", "so that ...")
NB: except for the circumstantial negative optative after ⲭⲉⲕⲁ(ⲁ)ⲥ (ⲭⲉⲕⲁ(ⲁ)ⲥ (ⲉ)ⲛⲛⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄), the optative is not converted.

(a) Affirmative:

1. ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲉϥⲉⲕⲱ ⲛⲁⲓ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ (Wess. 9 163a)
2. ⲉⲩⲉϩⲁⲣⲉϩ ⲛ̄ⲥⲁⲭⲉ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲛⲉⲛⲉⲓⲟⲧⲉ ϩⲱⲛ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲟⲟⲧⲛ̄ (IV 65)
{NB: ⲛ̄ⲥⲁⲭⲉ = ⲉⲛⲥⲁⲭⲉ. ⲉⲧⲟⲟⲧⲛ̄ see ⲉⲧⲛ̄- (1st plur. suffix after the pronominal form of the preposition)}
3. ⲡⲉⲩⲥⲛⲟϥ ⲉϥⲉⲥⲱⲡⲉ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲭⲛ̄-ⲧⲉⲩⲁⲡⲉ (III 143)
4. ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲉϥⲉⲥⲙⲟⲩ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉϥⲉϩⲁⲣⲉϩ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲉϩⲱⲃ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲉϥϩⲟⲟⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉϥⲉ†-ⲙ̄ⲧⲟⲛ ⲛⲁⲩ ϩⲛ̄ⲙ̄ⲧⲟⲛ ⲛⲓⲙ (IV 116)
{NB: ⲉϥϩⲟⲟⲩ "that is evil", adnominal circumstantial present}
5. (The houses which we have built in the name of your glory) ⲉⲕⲉⲙⲁϩⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲡⲱⲛϩ̄ ⲉⲕⲉⲙⲁϩⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲗⲁⲟⲥ ⲉⲡⲱⲛϩ̄ (III 218)
{NB: ⲙⲁϩⲟⲩ pronominal form of the infinitive ⲙⲟⲩϩ with 3rd plur. object}
6. ⲉⲛⲉϩⲁⲣⲉϩ ⲉⲙⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲟⲩ (III 203)
{NB: ⲙ̄-ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲟⲩ plur.-definite nominalized relative of the "Adjective Verb" ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩ (sections 22.1, 31.1.1) after the preposition ⲉ- governed by ϩⲁⲣⲉϩ: "those that are good"}
7. ⲉⲕⲉ† ⲛⲁⲛ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲕⲟⲩⲭⲁⲓ (IV 74)
8. ⲉⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲉⲙⲟⲟⲩϣⲉ ϩⲓ-ⲡⲁϩⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲥⲛⲏⲩ (IV 62)
{NB: ⲛⲉⲥⲛⲏⲩ see ⲥⲟⲛ}
9. ⲉⲣⲉⲡϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲉⲓⲛⲉ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉϫⲱⲟⲩ ⲙ̄ⲡⲥⲁϩⲟⲩ ⲧⲏⲣϥ̄ ⲉⲧⲥⲏϩ ϩⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲅⲣⲁⲫⲏ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲧⲥⲏϩ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲓϫⲱⲱⲙⲉ ... ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲣⲉⲡϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲙⲟⲩⲣ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲣⲅⲏ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉϥⲃⲱⲛⲧ̄ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲉϩⲟⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲣⲅⲏ (IV 207)
{NB: ⲉⲧⲥⲏϩ relative present, predicating a stative (section 16.1.1) qualifying the antecedent ⲡⲥⲁϩⲟⲩ: "that is written"}
10. ⲉⲕⲉⲥⲟⲩⲧⲱⲛⲛ̄ (IV 75)

(b) Negative:

1. ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲕⲣ̄-ⲛⲟⲉⲓⲕ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲕϩⲱⲧⲃ̄ ⲛ̄ⲉⲕⲭⲓⲟⲩⲉ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲕⲣ̄-ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲣⲉ ⲛ̄ⲛⲟⲩⲭ (III 64)
2. ⲛ̄ⲛⲉϥⲕⲧⲟϥ ⲉⲣⲟⲛ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲛⲙⲉⲣⲓⲧϥ̄ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲉϥⲉⲯⲱⲡⲉ ⲛⲁⲛ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲭⲁⲭⲉ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲉⲡⲉⲛⲥⲟⲛ ⲡⲉ (IV 128)
   {NB: ⲙⲉⲣⲓⲧ- pronominal form of the infinitive ⲙⲉ}
   [OBS. Note the concessive ("even though") or adversative ("although") meaning of the circumstantial Nominal Sentence]
3. ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲥⲯⲱⲡⲉ (III 116)
   [OBS. This is the native Coptic correspondent to the Greek-origin ⲙⲏ ⲅⲉⲛⲟⲓⲧⲟ]
4. ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲓⲭⲓⲟⲩⲉ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲓⲣ̄-ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲣⲉ ⲛⲛⲟⲩⲭ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲓⲭⲓ-ⲃⲟⲗ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲓⲣ̄-ⲗⲁⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ⲕⲣⲟϥ ϩⲛ̄ⲟⲩϩⲱⲡ (III 20, oath upon entering Shenoute's monastery)
5. ⲡⲓⲃⲱⲛ̄ⲧ ⲇⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲁϥⲉⲓ ⲉⲭⲱⲟⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ϯⲟⲣⲡⲏ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲥⲕⲧⲟⲥ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ (Ch. 124)
6. ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲯⲏⲣⲉ ⲯⲏⲙ ⲥⲱⲃⲉ (IV 168)
   [OBS. Note the generic use of the zero-determinated noun, common in the textual genre of instructions and precepts; cf. also texts 8-9, 11]
7. ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲗⲁⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ⲥϩⲓⲙⲉ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧ-ⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ̄ ⲯⲁⲭⲉ ⲙⲛ̄ⲗⲁⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ⲣⲱⲙⲉ (IV 63)
   {NB: -ⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ̄ a "heavy" form of the suffixed 2nd person plural, following the prenominal and not the pronominal form of the infinitive}
8. ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲥⲁⲃⲓⲛ ϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧⲉ †-ⲡⲁϩⲣⲉ ⲉⲣⲱⲙⲉ ϩⲓⲃⲟⲗ (IV 160)
9. ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲃⲱⲕ ⲉⲣ̄ϩⲱⲃ ⲉⲙⲡⲁⲧⲥ̄ⲛⲉⲥⲛⲏⲩ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲥⲱⲟⲩϩ ⲉⲙⲁⲩ (IV 51)
10. (Books which we do not have and which we need) ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲛⲉⲯ-ⲯⲓⲛⲉ ⲛ̄ⲥⲱⲟⲩ ϩⲓⲃⲟⲗ ⲁⲭⲙ̄-ⲡϩⲗ̄ⲗⲟ (IV 72)
    {NB: -ⲉⲯ- or -ⲯ- after a vowel, preceding the infinitive: "be able to ...". ⲛ̄ⲥⲱⲟⲩ see ⲛ̄ⲥⲁ-}
11. ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲟⲃⲛⲉⲃ ⲛ̄ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧⲛ̄ ⲉⲓⲧⲉ ϩⲟⲟⲩⲧ ⲉⲓⲧⲉ ⲥϩⲓⲙⲉ (IV 80)
12. ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲕⲱⲣⲕ̄ ⲛ̄ⲛⲟⲩⲭ ⲉⲕⲉ† ⲇⲉ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲕⲁⲛⲁⲯ ⲙ̄ⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ (III 66)

(c) Clauses of purpose and result:

1. ⲁϥⲭⲟⲟⲣⲟⲩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲉⲛⲉⲭⲱⲣⲁ ⲭⲉⲕⲁⲥ ⲉⲩⲉⲯⲱⲡⲉ ϩⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲙⲛ̄ⲧ-ⲯⲙ̄ⲙⲟ ⲙⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲙⲛ̄ⲧϩⲛⲕⲉ (III 99)
2. ⲁⲓⲙⲁⲥⲧⲓⲅⲟⲩ ⲙ̄ⲙⲱⲧⲛ̄ ⲭⲉ-ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲣ̄ⲛⲟⲃⲉ (RE 10 164)
3. ⲉⲧⲃⲉ-ⲟⲩ ⲃⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲁⲣⲉⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲛ̄ⲛⲓⲛⲟⲃ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲑⲟⲟⲩ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉϥⲙ̄ⲧⲟ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ

ϫιν-ηογηοϭ ⲛ̄ρωμε ϣⲁ-ηογϣηρε ϣηм ⲁγω ϫιν-ηογηοϭ ⲛ̄ϲϩιме ϣⲁ-ηογϣεερε ϣηм ϫεκⲁϲ ερεϧωκ ερⲁτⲟ̄ ϩⲛ̄ογ-ϣτορτⲣ̄ мⲛ̄ογϣιπε (III 199)

{NB: πεθοογ = πετ-ϩοογ: nominalized relative present, here zero-determinated: "(anything) that is evil"; 2nd sgl. fem. actor and possessor.}

4. (You touch and eat every impurity) ϫεκⲁϲ εγεмεϲτω εϧολ ϩιτⲛ̄-ⲓϲ мⲛ̄ⲛεqⲁrrελοϲ (III 203)
   {NB: мεϲτω 2nd sgl. fem. object with the infinitive мοϲτε}
5. (Let him eat his bread in righteousness) ϫε-ⲛ̄ⲛεqϣωπε ⲛⲁq εγηοϧε (IV 78)
   {NB: εγ- the preposition ε- before the indefinite article}
6. (They fear the angel) ϫε-ⲛ̄ⲛεqπⲁτⲁϲϲε ⲙ̄мοογ (IV 21)
7. ογⲁⲛⲁrⲛωϲτнϲ εⲁγⲛ̄τⲟ̄ ⲛⲙ̄мⲁγ ϫε-εqεωϣ (IV 62)
   {NB: εⲁγⲛ̄τⲟ̄ circumstantial perfect, qualifying the indefinite noun; the pronominal form of the infinitive εινε}

7. THE DEPENDENT CLAUSE CONJUGATION (Table C b): conjugation forms (verbal sentence forms) that do not occur independently. While they too consist of a verb-phrase ('base ... infinitive') with an infixed theme actor (noun or pronoun): # base + actor + infinitive #, they differ formally from the main-sentence conjugation pattern (section 6) in their negation:

(pronominal actor) # base + actor + -τⲙ̄- + infinitive #
   (e.g. ⲛ̄τερεq-τⲙ̄-ϲωτⲙ̄ "since he did not hear"),
(nominal actor) # base + -τⲙ̄ + actor + infinitive #
   (e.g. ⲛ̄τερε-τⲙ̄-πρωмε ϲωτⲙ̄ "since the man did not hear").

Being by themselves in dependent status, the dependent-clause conjugation forms are not converted.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
POLOTSKY, "Conjugation System" parr. 1-4, 7, 27; VERGOTE par. 161

7.1 "UNTIL" (Table C(II)1): ϣⲁнτⲟ̄ϲωτⲙ̄

ϣⲁнт- + pronominal actor + infinitive: ϣⲁнτⲟ̄ϲωτⲙ̄
ϣⲁнτε- + nominal/dem./indefinite/interr./2nd sgl. fem. actor + infinitive: ϣⲁнτεπρωмε ϲωτⲙ̄ "... until he hears/heard", in narrative or dialogue.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STERN par. 449; STEINDORFF par. 373; TILL parr. 312, 444; VERGOTE par. 161(4); LAMBDIN par. 30.3

1. ⲁⲩⲭⲓ-ⲃⲟⲗ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲉⲓⲱⲥⲛϥ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲏ ⲙ̄ⲡⲣⲙ̄ⲛ̄ⲕⲏⲙⲉ ⲯⲁⲛⲧⲟ̄ⲉⲓ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉϩⲉⲛⲛⲟⲃ ⲛ̄ⲑⲗⲓⲯⲓⲥ (III 103)
   {NB: ⲙ̄-ⲡ-ⲣⲙ̄-ⲛ̄-ⲕⲏⲙⲉ}
2. ⲙ̄ⲡⲟⲩⲉⲓ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛϩⲏⲧⲟ̄ (i.e. out of sin) ⲯⲁⲛⲧⲟⲩⲉⲓ ⲉⲧⲟⲟⲧⲟ̄ ⲛ̄ⲁⲙⲛⲧⲉ (P 130.5 59 vo)
3. ⲙ̄ⲡⲉ-ⲛⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ⲉⲓ ⲯⲁⲛⲧⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲃⲱⲛ̄ⲧ̄ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ (III 143)
   {NB: ⲛⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ: determinated relative, predicating ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ "there, yonder": "they who are yonder", "those"}
4. ⲡⲉϩⲙⲉ ⲛ̄ϩⲟⲟⲩ ... ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲯⲕⲁ-ⲟⲉⲓⲕ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲟⲧⲟ̄ ⲉⲡⲧⲏⲣⲟ̄ ϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧⲛ̄ ⲉⲓⲧⲉ ϩⲟⲟⲩⲧ ⲉⲓⲧⲉ ⲥϩⲓⲙⲉ ⲉⲓⲧⲉ ⲛⲟⲃ ⲉⲓⲧⲉ ⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲯⲁⲛⲧⲟ̄ϫⲱⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲧⲏⲣⲟ̄ ϫⲓⲛ-ⲡⲯⲟⲣⲡ̄ ⲛ̄ⲥⲁⲃⲃⲁⲧⲟⲛ ⲯⲁⲛⲧⲟⲩⲉⲓ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲃ ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲥϫⲁ (IV 58)
   {NB: ⲡⲉϩⲙⲉ ⲛ̄ϩⲟⲟⲩ is here adverbial: "during ..."; ⲕⲁ- prenominal ("construct") form of the infinitive ⲕⲱ}
5. ⲁⲣⲉϫⲉⲣⲉ-ϩⲛⲃ̄ⲥ̄ ⲇⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲉⲛⲉϩ ⲯⲁⲛⲧⲉⲃⲱⲡⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡϩⲟϥ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲕⲁⲕⲉ ϫⲉⲣⲟ ⲇⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲙ̄ⲡⲯⲁϫⲉ ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲥⲃⲱ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲟⲩϩⲏⲧ ⲯⲁⲛⲧⲉⲃⲱⲡⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲓⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲙⲛ̄ⲡⲕⲁⲕⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲩⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲧⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ (P 130.2 24 554f.)
   {NB: ⲁⲣⲉ-, ⲯⲁⲛⲧⲉ-, ⲡⲟⲩ-, ⲧⲟⲩ- are all 2nd sgl. fem. (zero suffix) forms, of tense base and possessive article. ϫⲉⲣⲟ imperative}
6. ⲯⲁⲛⲧⲉⲟⲩ ⲯⲱⲡⲉ ⲉⲛϩⲛ̄-ⲛⲉⲓϩⲓⲥⲉ (III 18)
   {NB: ⲉⲛϩⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲓϩⲓⲥⲉ circumstantial present predicating an adverb (prepositional phrase ϩⲛ̄-; 19.1.1) "that (lit. "as, while") we are in these straits"}
   [OBS. ⲯⲁⲛⲧⲉⲟⲩ ⲯⲱⲡⲉ is usually complemented by the circumstantial conversion]
7. ⲯⲁⲓⲯⲗⲏⲗ ⲯⲁⲛ†ⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲡϩⲟ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉϫ̄ⲥ̄ (A I 467)
8. ⲙ̄ⲡⲟⲩⲛⲟϫⲟ̄ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲙⲁ ⲛ̄ⲯⲉⲗⲉⲉⲧ ⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲟⲩϫⲉ-ⲗⲗⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ⲯⲁϫⲉ ⲛⲁϥ ⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲟⲩⲣ̄ⲗⲗⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ϩⲱⲃ ⲛⲁϥ ⲯⲁⲛⲧⲉⲡϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲉⲓ (A I 63)

7.2 THE TEMPORAL (Table C(II)2): ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲣⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄

ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲣⲉ- + nominal/pronominal actor + infinitive: ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲣⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲣⲉⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄

The Temporal expresses temporal and/or causal dependance, especially anterior or background action or event, and may be translated by

English "after/since he (had heard". ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲣⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ is a narrative form, with the main clause following (or preceding) it normally being the perfect ⲁϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STERN par. 425; STEINDORFF parr. 421, 447-450; TILL par. 319; VERGOTE par. 161(3); LAMBDIN par. 13.1

1. ⲁⲓⲣⲁⲱⲉ ⲉⲙⲁ̀ⲧⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲣⲓⲭⲓ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲥϩⲁⲓ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲕⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲓⲱⲧ (III 13)
2. ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲣⲓⲭⲡⲓⲟϥ ⲉⲭⲛ̄-ⲛⲉϥⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲱⲁϥⲧⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲣⲉϥⲉⲓ ⲛⲁⲓ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲭⲛ̄-ⲧⲉⲕⲕⲗⲏⲥⲓⲁ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉϥⲟⲩⲱϩ ⲉⲧⲟⲟⲧϥ̄ ⲉⲱⲁⲭⲉ ⲉϩⲱⲃ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲓϩⲉ ϩⲁ-ⲧⲏⲓ (III 33)
3. ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲣⲟⲩⲭⲡⲟϥ ⲁϥⲙⲟⲩ ⲏ ⲁϥⲙⲟⲩ ϩⲛ̄ⲑⲏ (III 43)
4. ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲣⲟⲩⲧⲁⲙⲓⲟ ⲙ̄ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲧⲉⲩϩⲓⲕⲱⲛ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲡⲉⲩⲉⲓⲛⲉ ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲛⲉⲅⲣⲁⲫⲏ ⲁⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛⲓϥⲉ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲉϩⲣⲁϥ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲡⲛⲟⲏ ⲛ̄ⲱⲛϩ̄ (IV 37)
   {NB: ⲉϩⲣⲁ- = see ⲉϩⲣⲛ̄-}
5. ⲁⲛⲧⲱⲧ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲣⲛ̄ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲉⲛⲱⲁⲭⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲥⲟⲫⲓⲁ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ (III 14)
6. ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲣⲛ̄ⲭⲉ-ⲛⲁⲓ ⲇⲉ ⲁⲛⲉⲓ ⲱⲁⲡⲙⲏⲛⲱⲉ ⲧⲏⲣϥ̄ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲣⲛ̄ⲭⲉ-ⲡⲣⲱⲱⲉ ... ⲁⲡⲕⲟⲙⲉⲥ ⲕⲁⲓⲥⲁⲣⲓⲟⲥ ⲟⲩⲱⲱⲃ̄ (III 29)
   {NB: ⲭⲉ- is the prenominal form of the infinitive ⲭⲱ}
7. ⲁⲥⲱⲱⲡⲉ ⲇⲉ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩϩⲟⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲣⲛ̄ⲱⲁⲭⲉ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲧⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲛⲥⲱⲧⲏⲣ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲭⲉ-ⲁϥⲣ̄-ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲁϥⲟⲩⲱϩ ⲙⲛ̄ⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲁϩⲟⲓⲛⲉ ⲟⲩⲱⲱⲃ̄ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲙⲏⲛⲱⲉ ϩⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲣⲙ̄ⲣⲁⲱ (Cat. 41)
8. ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲣⲉⲕⲗⲉⲓⲛ ⲅⲁⲣ ϩⲱⲧⲃ̄ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉϥⲥⲟⲛ ⲁⲩⲭⲓ-ⲕⲃⲁ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟϥ (P 131.4 141 40)
   [OBS. ⲛ̄-/ⲙ̄ⲙⲟ- introduces the direct object of a compound verb (auxiliary + zero-det. noun)]
9. ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲣⲉⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲇⲉ ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲡⲡⲁⲛⲧⲟⲕⲣⲁⲧⲱⲣ ⲛⲓϥⲉ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲉϩⲣⲁϥ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲡⲛⲟⲏ ⲛ̄ⲱⲛϩ̄ ⲁϥⲱⲱⲡⲉ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲯⲩⲭⲏ ⲉⲥⲟⲛϩ̄ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲁϥⲕⲓⲙ ⲧⲏⲣϥ̄ ⲁϥⲱⲁⲭⲉ ⲁϥⲙⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲁϥⲥⲟⲟⲩⲧⲛ̄ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉϥⲃⲓϫ ⲉⲡⲉⲩ-ϩⲱⲃ ⲁϥⲥⲙⲟⲩ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲉϥⲗⲁⲥ (Cat. 43)
   {NB: ⲉⲥⲟⲛϩ̄ adnominal circumstantial present, qualifying the indefinite noun ("which is alive")}

7.3 THE CONDITIONAL (Table C(II)3): ⲉϥⲱⲁⲛⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄

ⲉ- + pronominal actor + -ⲱⲁⲛ- + infinitive: ⲉ-ϥ-ⲱⲁⲛ-ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄
ⲉⲣⲱⲁⲛ- + nominal/dem./indefinite/2nd sgl. fem. actor + infinitive: ⲉⲣⲱⲁⲛ-ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄

Negatived: ϵ- + pron. actor + -ϣⲁN- + -ⲧⲙ̄- + infinitive: ϵqϣⲁN-ⲧⲙ̄-cωⲧⲙ̄ (rarely, -ϣⲁN- is absent).
ϵpϣⲁN- + -ⲧⲙ̄- + nom. (etc.) actor + infinitive: ϵpϣⲁN-ⲧⲙ̄-ⲡρωmϵ cωⲧⲙ̄

The Coptic Conditional corresponds averagely to an "if and when" conditional clause in English. The conjugation form may be preceded by ϩOTⲁN ("whenever", esp. "as soon as"), ϵϣωⲡϵ ("should it happen") or ⲕⲁN ("even if", "even though"). See below, 42-43.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STERN parr. 420-421; STEINDORFF parr. 328, 421, 492-494, 496; TILL parr. 447-448; VERGOTE par. 161(5); LAMBDIN par. 29.1

(a) Affirmative:

1. ϵNϣⲁNϵIPϵ ⲅⲁP ⲚTMϵ ⲁNTⲁIϵ-TMϵ ⲁNCωϣ ⲘⲡⲃOⲗ ϵNϣⲁNϵIPϵ ⲇϵ ⲘⲡNⲁ ⲁNTⲁIϵ-TMⲚTNⲁHT ⲁNCωϣ ⲚTMⲚTⲁTNⲁ (III 112)
   {NB: ⲧⲁIϵ- prenominal ("construct state") of ⲧⲁIO}
2. ϵTϵTⲚϣⲁNMOY ϩⲚNϵTⲚMⲚTⲁTNⲁϩTϵ MⲚ-TϵTⲚMⲚTⲁTNOYTϵ ϣⲁTϵTⲚϣωⲡϵ ⲘMϵPIC ⲚⲚⲇⲁIMONION (III 48)
   {NB: ϣωⲡϵ Ⲛ̄- "become (as)"}
   [OBS. The aorist is a characteristic result clause ("apodosis") after the Conditional]
3. (In monastic instructions:) ϵYϣⲁNKωⲗϩ̄ ϵⲡMⲁ ⲚOYωM ⲚNϵPω-Mϵ ⲚϩHTⲚ̄ ⲃω (IV 103)
4. (Of flies:) ϣⲁYOYωϩ ϵⲭⲘ̄-ⲡϵBIω ϵYϣⲁNⲃⲚ̄Tϥ̄ (III 48)
5. ⲡMOOY ϵYϣⲁNTⲁϩϥ̄ MⲚⲡHPⲡ̄ ϣⲁϥP̄OYⲁ ⲚOYωT ... ⲡρωMϵ ϩωωϥ ϵqϣⲁNMϵTϵXϵ ϵⲡϵⲡⲚⲁ̄ ϵTOYⲁⲁⲃ ϣⲁϥP̄OYⲁ ⲚOYωT NⲘ̄Mⲁϥ (III 52)
   {NB: ⲧⲁϩ- pronominal state of ⲧωϩ; P̄- construct state of ϵIPϵ; ⲡϵⲡⲚⲁ̄ ϵTOYⲁⲁⲃ "the Holy Ghost"}
6. ϵρϣⲁNⲃωK ϵϩOYN ϵNOYHI NϵϣⲁPϵϣⲗHⲗ ϵρϣⲁNϵI ⲇϵ ON ϵⲃOⲗ ϣⲁPϵϣⲗHⲗ ϵρϣⲁNϩMOOC ϵϩPⲁI ϣⲁPϵωϣ ⲁYω ON ϵρϣⲁNTωOYN ϣⲁPϵMϵⲗϵTⲁ (III 203)
   {NB: 2nd sgl. fem. bases and possessive article}
7. Ⲛ̄OYMOIϩϵ ⲁN Tϵ OYTϵ Ⲛ̄OYNOⲃϵ ⲁN ⲡϵ ϵYϣⲁNMϵCTϵ-ϩϵN-ρωMϵ Ⲛ̄ρϵqⲭIOYϵ (A I 95)
   {NB: Mϵ CTϵ- construct of MOCTϵ}
8. ϵρϣⲁN-NϵCOOY OYωM Ⲙ̄ⲡϵNTⲚⲃ̄ ϵϣⲁYMOY ϵYϣⲁNOYOMϥ̄ ϣⲁPϵⲡϣωC ⲗYⲡH ⲭϵⲁqⲁMϵⲗϵI (RE 11 16a)

{NB: ϣαγ- relative aorist; ογομ= pronominal of ογωμ}

9. ϩοταν ερϣαπρωμε μερεπνοβε ϣαρεπνουτε †-бом ⲙ̄πνοβε ϵϩραι ϵχωϥ (Ch. 68)
10. ("Come and search my dwellings") ϵϣωπϵ ϵκϣανбⲛ̄-ϵιλ-ωλον ⲛ̄ϩητογ (Ch. 43)
    {NB: бⲛ̄- construct of бινϵ}
11. ("You shall not arise eyeless") καν ϵγϣαναπωρⲕ̄ ⲛ̄ⲛϵκβαλ (III 105)
12. καν ϵιϣανμογ ⲛ̄†ναχι-†πϵ αν ⲛ̄λλαγ ⲙ̄πατϥ̄ⲣ̄ναγ (Ch. 107)
    {NB: ⲛ̄†ναχι- αν negatived future, 1st person sgl. (section 17.1) "I shall not taste"; ⲙ̄πατϥ̄- = ϵμπατϥ̄-, circumstantial "not yet" form; "be (proper) time"}
    [OBS. The 3rd sgl. masc. in ⲙ̄πατϥ̄ⲣ̄ναγ is the "impersonal" neuter, "it" in "it is time"]

(b) Negatived:

1. ογοι ⲛⲏⲧⲛ̄ ϵτϵτⲛ̄ϣαντⲙ̄вωκ ϵτϵκκληcια ⲏ ϵτϵτⲛ̄ϣαντⲙ̄χι ϵвολ ϩⲙ̄πcωμα ⲙⲛ̄πϵcνοϥ ⲙ̄πχοϵιc ογοι ⲇϵ ον ⲛⲏⲧⲛ̄ ϵτϵτⲛ̄ϣανвωκ ⲏ ϵτϵτⲛ̄ϣανχι ϵвολ ϩⲙ̄πμγcτηριον ϵτογααв ϵτϵτⲛ̄ⲟ ⲛ̄ϩητ cναγ (III 45)
   {NB: ϵτογααв relative present "which is holy"; ϵτϵτⲛ̄ⲟ ⲛ̄- circumstantial present predicating a stative (section 16.1.1), "you being as..."}
2. ϵγϣαντⲙ̄†-νϵϩ ⲛ̄cα-ϩϵⲛϩⲏвⲥ̄ ⲛ̄бι-ⲛϵτπροcϵχϵ ϵροογ ⲙϵγχϵρο ϣαγχϵⲛα (III 170)
   {NB: πετπροcϵχϵ determinated relative present "they that attend"}
3. ϵρϣαντⲙ̄πϩητ ⲙ̄πρωμϵ ρω χωϩⲙ̄ ⲙϵϥⲣ̄ⲛοвϵ ογτϵ ϵρϣαντⲙ̄τϵϥψγχη λωωμϵ ϩⲛ̄τακαθαρcια ⲙϵϥⲣ̄ατcωτⲙ̄ ⲙϵϥϣωπϵ ⲛαϥ ⲛ̄cαвϵ ⲙαγααϥ (IV 47f.)
4. ϵϣωπϵ ϵγϣαντⲙ̄ⲙⲙϵτανοϵι cϵⲛαρϣⲙ̄ⲙο ϵⲛcγⲛαγωγη ⲛ̄ⲛⲑⲛϵιοτϵ (III 129)
   {NB: cϵⲛαρϣⲙ̄ⲙο 3rd plural future "They will be estranged"}
5. ϵⲛϣαντⲙ̄ϵιμϵ γαρ ϵταγαπη ⲙ̄πϵχⲥ̄ ⲓⲥ̄ ϥⲛαχπιον (RE 10 164)
   {NB: ϥⲛαχπιον 3rd sgl. masc. future "He will rebuke us" (pronominal of χπιο)}

7.4 THE CONJUNCTIVE (Table C(II)4):

ⲛ̄- + pronominal actor + infinitive: ⲛⲉ̄ⲕⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄
ⲛ̄ⲧⲉ- + nominal/dem./indefinite/2nd sgl. fem. actor + infinitive: ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄
Negatived: ⲛ̄- + pronominal actor + -ⲧⲙ̄- + infinitive: ⲛⲉ̄-ⲧⲙ̄-ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄
ⲛ̄ⲧⲉ-ⲧⲙ̄- + nominal/dem./indefinite/2nd sgl. fem. actor + infinitive: ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲧⲙ̄-ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄

The conjunctive (here but briefly illustrated; see in detail below, sections 42-3) continues preceding verb clauses in a special close kind of coordination ("... and ...") or disjunction ("... or ..."), with most of its verbal semantic features (time reference, mode, sometimes the affirmative: negative distinction) induced by the preceding verb. The conjunctive is also used as a verb-clause form after adverbs and conjunctions.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STERN parr. 441, 443, 445, 447; STEINDORFF parr. 366-371, 421; TILL parr. 321-325; VERGOTE par. 161(1); LAMBDIN par. 25.2

1. (If the rich man sleeps) ϣⲁⲣⲉ-ⲛ̄ⲥⲟⲟⲛⲉ ⲉⲓ ⲛ̄ⲥⲉⲥⲩⲗⲁ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲥⲉⲉⲓ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲩⲭⲣⲏⲙⲁ ⲧⲏⲣⲟ̄ (IV 25)
2. ⲟⲩⲛⲟⲃⲉ́ ⲡⲉ ⲟⲩⲱⲙ-ⲡⲟⲉⲓⲕ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛ̄ⲣ̄-ⲧⲙ̄ⲣ̄-ⲡⲉⲩⲭⲱⲃ (Ch. 104)
   [OBS. ⲟⲩⲱⲙ- construct state of the infinitive, unmarked orthographically (in writing coinciding with the absolute form)]
3. ϭⲱϣⲧ̄ ⲛ̄ⲧⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲧⲉⲓⲯⲩⲭⲏ (IV 200)
   {NB: ϭⲱϣⲧ̄ imperative}
4. ⲉⲩⲉⲧⲁⲙⲟⲓ ⲏ ⲛ̄ⲥⲉⲭⲟⲟⲥ ⲉⲡⲭⲗⲗⲟ (III 157)
5. ⲉⲣϣⲁⲛⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲓ ⲉⲭⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲩϣⲱⲛⲉ ⲏ ⲟⲩⲥⲭⲓⲙⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛ̄ⲥⲉⲣ̄ⲭ-ⲣⲓⲁ ⲛ̄ϩⲱⲃ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲓϩⲉ ϩⲓⲧⲛ̄-ⲧⲁⲛⲁⲣⲕⲏ (then those who neglect to tend are to be blamed as unworthy of God's mercy) (IV 99)
6. ⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁ-ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ † ⲛⲁϥ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲙⲛ̄ⲧ-ⲣ̄ⲙⲙⲁⲟ ⲙⲛ̄ϩⲉⲛϩⲩ-ⲡⲁⲣⲭⲟⲛⲧⲁ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲟⲩⲉⲟⲟⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉ-ⲧⲙ̄-ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ †-ⲉⲝⲟⲩⲥⲓⲁ ⲛⲁϥ ⲉⲟⲩⲱⲙ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧⲥ̄ (A II 363f.)
   {NB: ⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ † ⲛⲁϥ... "There was a man to whom God had given...", a narrative opening role of the Cleft Sentence (section 33): ⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲡⲉ ("It is...") + ⲉⲛⲧⲁ- (relative perfect)}
7. (She abandoned herself to the Devil and the demons) ϣⲁⲛⲧⲟⲩ-ⲡⲁⲛⲅⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛ̄ⲥⲉϣⲁⲁⲣ ⲉⲣⲟⲥ (Ch. 121)

8. THE IMPERATIVE — the form of the verb used for commands, instructions and firm requests

Affirmative: the imperative is identical with the infinitive, except for (1) a number of special ⲁ- prefixed forms of certain verbs, e.g. ⲁⲙⲟⲩ "come", ⲁⲭⲓⲥ "say (it)", ⲁⲛⲁⲩ "see!", ⲁⲣⲓ- "do (...)!"; (2) ⲙⲁ- prefixed imperatives for the causative lexemes, (e.g. ⲙⲁⲧⲁⲙⲟ "inform!", for ⲧⲁⲙⲟ "to inform"; see Table I).
Negative: ⲙ̄ⲡⲣ̄- prefixed to the infinitive: ⲙ̄ⲡⲣ̄- is the actual imperative, meaning "do not ...!".

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STERN parr. 384-385, 398; STEINDORFF parr. 287-292; TILL parr. 297-300; VERGOTE parr. 160(1); LAMBDIN par. 17.1; POLOTSKY, "Modes" p. 76-9.

(a) Affirmative:

1. ⲥⲙⲟⲩ ⲉⲣⲟⲛ ⲡⲱⲉ ⲡⲱⲉ ⲥⲙⲟⲩ ⲉⲣⲟⲛ (A II 378)
   [OBS. Note the (obligatory) definite article in addressed nouns ("vocative")]
2. ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲡⲁⲓ ⲙ̄ⲙⲉⲣⲁⲧⲉ ⲧⲱⲕ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧ (III 179)
   {NB: ⲙⲉⲣⲁⲧⲉ plural of ⲙⲉⲣⲓⲧ}
3. ⲛ̄ⲧⲟ ⲏ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲥ ⲥⲁϩⲱⲧⲛ̄ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲏ ⲁⲛⲁⲭⲱⲣⲉⲓ ⲛⲏⲧⲛ̄ (A I 73)
   [OBS. ⲛⲏ-ⲧⲛ̄: "dative" prepositional phrase modifying the imperative in a special reflexive mode-of-action (approx. "... away")]
4. ⲫⲓⲧⲟⲩ ⲫⲓⲧⲟⲩ ⲫⲓ-ⲛⲉⲓⲁⲧⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲕⲟⲗⲁϩⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲕⲟⲗⲁϩⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲱⲗ-ⲉⲛⲉϩ (IV 7)
5. ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲉⲡⲓⲛⲟⲃ ⲛ̄ⲕⲣⲓⲙⲁ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉϫⲱⲛ (Ch. 17)
6. ⲧⲁⲁⲥ ⲛⲁⲛ ⲉⲣⲓⲕⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲛϩⲏⲧ ⲉⲛⲉⲕⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲱⲙⲁ (A II 320)
   {NB: ⲧⲁⲁ- pronominal of †, with the feminine object-suffix -ⲥ corresponding to the neutric "it", here announcing the following ⲉ- + infinitive}
7. ⲛ̄ⲛⲟⲩⲃ ϩⲁⲣⲉϩ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲧⲛ̄ⲛⲟⲟⲩⲥⲟⲩ ⲛⲁⲛ (III 24)
   {NB: ⲥⲟⲩ in ⲧⲛ̄ⲛⲟⲟⲩⲥⲟⲩ is the 3rd person plural of a special object pronoun, in most other persons identical in form with the suffix-pronouns: Table A5a$_1$}
8. ⲕⲁⲁⲕ ϩⲓ-ⲡⲉⲥⲏⲧ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲕⲱⲁϫⲉ ϫⲉ-ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲟⲩ†-ⲧⲱⲛ ⲉⲓ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲓⲧⲟⲟⲧⲕ̄ (IV 41)
   {NB: ⲕⲁⲁ- pronominal of ⲕⲱ; ϫⲉ-ⲛ̄ⲛⲉ- final clause (above, 6.4)}
9. ϩⲁⲣⲉϩ ⲛⲁⲙⲉⲣⲁⲧⲉ ⲉⲧⲙ̄-†ⲧⲱⲛ (P 131.5 1 ro)
   {NB: -ⲧⲙ̄- negatives the infinitive}
10. ⲁⲗⲁⲕ ⲛ̄ⲉⲗⲁϫⲓⲥⲧⲟⲛ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲱⲁϫⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲕⲧⲁⲡⲣⲟ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛ̄ⲑⲁⲗⲁⲕ ⲛ̄-ⲁⲧⲛⲟⲉⲓ ϩⲛ̄ⲧⲙⲏⲧⲉ ⲛ̄ⲛ̄ⲥⲁⲃⲉⲉⲩⲉ (IV 41)

{NB: ⲁⲁ- pronominal of ⲉⲓⲣⲉ; ⲁⲁ- ⲛ̄- "make ... as ..."; ⲛⲧⲁⲁⲕ the conjunctive, coordinated by ⲁⲩⲱ to the imperative}

11. ⲉⲱϫⲉ-ⲁⲓⲣ̄ⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲉⲣⲟⲕ ⲏ ⲁⲕⲣ̄ⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲉⲣⲟⲓ ⲕⲱ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲛ-ⲉⲣⲏⲩ (P 131.6 44 115)
12. ⲁⲙⲟⲩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ (Ch. 20)
{NB: ⲁⲙⲟⲩ is the imperative corresponding to the infinitive ⲉⲓ}
13. ⲁⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲡⲣⲏ (III 31)
14. ⲁⲛⲁⲩ ⲅⲁⲣ ϩⲛ̄ⲛⲟⲩⲃⲁⲗ ⲉⲧⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲃⲓⲏⲛ ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲓ (A II 298)
{NB: divide ⲉ-ⲧ-ⲙⲛ̄ⲧ-ⲉⲃⲓⲏⲛ}
15. ⲁⲗⲟⲕ ϩⲁ-ⲛ̄ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛ̄ⲁⲡⲓⲥⲧⲟⲥ (P 130.4 100 ro)
16. ⲉⲩⲱⲁⲛⲧⲟⲱⲕ̄ ⲉϩⲱⲃ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲁⲣⲓ-ⲥⲟⲩ ϩⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲡⲓⲥⲧⲓⲥ (IV 41)
17. ⲁⲣⲓ ⲁ-ⲡⲁⲧⲟⲟⲧⲕ ⲉⲣ̄-ⲉⲓⲣⲏⲛⲏ ⲛⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ (P 130.4 100 vo)
{NB: ⲡⲁ- possessive pronoun}
18. ⲁⲙⲟⲩ ⲛⲣ̄-ⲧⲥⲁⲃⲉ-ⲉⲓⲁⲧ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ (III 142)
19. ⲟⲩ ⲡⲉⲧⲟ ⲛ̄ϩⲣⲟⲡ ⲛⲁⲕ ⲁϫⲓⲥ ⲉⲣⲟⲓ (IV 38)
{NB: ⲟⲩ ⲡⲉⲧⲟ ⲛ̄ϩⲣⲟⲡ "What is it that is an obstacle ...?" ("What hinders ...?"), Cleft Sentence with an interrogative focus (ⲟⲩ "what?"), section 33; ⲁϫⲓⲥ see ϫⲱ}
20. ⲙⲁⲧⲥⲁⲃⲟⲛ ⲡϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲉⲡⲛ̄ⲛⲁ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲕⲉ† ⲛⲁⲛ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛ̄ⲟⲩϫⲁⲓ (IV 74)
{NB: ⲡⲛ̄- = ⲡⲉⲕ-, possessive article}
21. ⲁⲣⲓ-ⲁⲛⲁⲓ ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲙⲧⲟ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛⲣ̄ⲱⲱⲡⲉ ⲛ̄ⲁⲧⲛⲟⲃⲉ (IV 23)
{NB: ⲛⲣ̄- conjunctive continuing the imperative}
22. ⲙⲁ-ⲧⲁⲙⲟⲓ ϫⲉ-ⲟⲩ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲉϩⲗⲟⲟ ⲛⲛⲉⲧϩⲛ̄†ⲡⲏⲓ ⲉⲧⲉ-ⲛ̄ⲧⲱⲕ ⲁⲛ †ⲉ (Or. 155)
{NB: ⲛⲉⲧϩⲛ̄- definite relative present predicating ϩⲛ̄-: "those that are in ..."; ⲉⲧⲉ- relative converter with a negatived delocutive Nominal Sentence (section 3.2); ⲧⲱⲕ possessive pronoun: "yours" (fem.)}
23. ⲉⲣⲱⲁⲛⲡⲉⲕϫⲁϫⲉ ϩⲕⲟ ⲙⲁⲧⲙ̄ⲙⲟϥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉϥⲱⲁⲛⲉⲓⲃⲉ ⲙⲁⲧⲥⲟϥ (IV 127)
24. ⲉⲓⲱⲁⲛϫⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲉ ⲟⲡ̄ⲧ̄ ⲉⲁⲑⲏⲧ (Wess. 9 111)
{NB: ⲟⲡ̄ⲧ̄ pronominal state of ⲱⲡ with -ⲧ the 1st sgl. suffix pronoun as object after a consonant (Table A 5a); ⲛⲉ 2nd sgl. fem. of the preposition ⲛ̄-/ⲛⲁ-}
25. ⲙⲟⲱⲧⲉ ⲛⲧⲟ ⲧⲡⲁⲣⲑⲉⲛⲟⲥ ⲛ̄ⲥⲟⲃ (A II 64)

(b) Negative:

1. ⲙ̄ⲡⲣ̄ⲕⲣⲓⲛⲉ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛ̄ⲣⲉϥⲣ̄ⲛⲟⲃⲉ (IV 41)
2. ⲙ̄ⲡⲣ̄ⲙⲓⲱⲉ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩⲛⲟⲩⲃ ⲏ ⲟⲩϩⲁⲧ (P 131.5 1 vo)

3. ⲙ̄ⲡ̄ⲣ̄ⲃⲗⲁⲡⲧⲉⲓ ⲛ̄ⲛⲟⲩⲯⲩⲭⲏ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲧⲉ (P 130.1 36 153)
   {NB: ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲧⲉ 2nd sgl. fem. of the reinforcer ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁ-}
4. ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲡⲁⲓ ⲧⲥⲩⲛⲁⲅⲱⲅⲏ ⲙ̄ⲡ̄ⲕⲁ-ⲡⲟⲩⲛⲁϩⲧⲉ ϩⲓⲱⲱⲧⲉ ⲟⲩⲁⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡ̄ⲧⲁϫⲣⲟ ⲉϫⲱ ⲙ̄ⲙⲓⲛ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟ (P 130.2 6 87)
   {NB: the addressee here is the 2nd person sgl. feminine (ⲧⲥⲩⲛⲁⲅⲱ-ⲅⲏ). Note the special forms of the possessive article, prepositions, reinforcer and reflexive object of ⲧⲁϫⲣⲟ (pronominal state of ⲧⲁϫⲣⲟ and zero suffix "yourself")}
5. ⲙ̄ⲡ̄ⲣ̄ⲣ̄-ϩⲟⲧⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲱⲧⲛ̄ (III 88)
   {NB: ⲛ̄ⲧⲱⲧⲛ̄: 2nd person plural of the reinforcer ⲁⲛⲟⲕ, ⲛ̄ⲧⲟ-, similar in form to the personal pronoun}
6. ⲕⲁⲛ ⲙ̄ⲡ̄ⲕⲣⲙ̄ⲣⲙ̄ ⲙ̄ⲡ̄ⲃⲛ̄ⲁⲣⲓⲕⲉ (RE 10 160)
   {NB: ⲕⲁⲛ "at least"}
7. ⲙ̄ⲡ̄ⲣⲁⲁⲧ ⲛ̄ⲱⲙ̄ⲙⲟ ⲉⲡⲉⲓⲙⲁ ϩⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲃⲉⲡⲏ ⲱⲁⲛ†ⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲣⲟⲕ ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ (III 146)
   {NB: ⲁⲁ- pronominal state of ⲉⲓⲣⲉ ("make [as, into]"); -ⲧ suffix pronoun following a double vowel, the notation of a "disappeared" laryngal consonant (Table A 5a)}
8. ⲙ̄ⲡ̄ⲧⲧⲉ-ⲗⲗⲁⲩ ⲟⲥⲉ (Ch. 56)
   [OBS. ⲧⲧⲉ-...ⲟⲥⲉ (pronominal ⲧⲧⲟ-...ⲟⲥⲉ) "make ⟨someone⟩ suffer loss" is the causative lexemic equivalent of †-ⲟⲥⲉ "suffer loss"]

9. THE CAUSATIVE CONJUGATION (Table D)

The causative conjugation consists of a set of forms conjugating the infinitive for person (in this sense, like the tense base conjugation) with a constant base -ⲣⲉ- which, in turn, is attached to prefixed forms of the verb "give", "let, cause", as follows:

The prefixed infinitive of †: ⲧ-ⲣⲉ-: ⲧⲣⲉⲫⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ the CAUSATIVE INFINITIVE "(to) make him hear"; also supplying the infinitive with an actor: "for him to hear", "that he hear" (*negatived* ⲧⲙ̄ⲧⲣⲉⲫⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄) (9.1).

The imperative of †: ⲙⲁ */negative* ⲙ̄ⲡ̄† (ⲙ̄ⲡ̄ⲧ-): the CAUSATIVE IMPERATIVE or JUSSIVE "make/let him hear!", "let him hear!" ⲙⲁⲣⲉⲫ-ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ / ⲙ̄ⲡ̄ⲧⲣⲉⲫⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ (10)

A special grammaticalized first-person sgl. conjugated form of †: ⲧⲁⲣⲉⲫⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ the CONSEQUENTIA CAUSATIVE CONJUNCTIVE, "(Do this,) and (you may be sure that)...".

NB: the 1st sgl. form of ⲧⲣⲉ- is ⲧⲣⲁ.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
POLOTSKY, "Modes"; *POLOTSKY, *Kausativer Infinitiv*

9.1 THE CAUSATIVE INFINITIVE (Table D1): ⲧⲣⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ / ⲧⲣⲉⲙⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄

(1st sgl. ⲧⲣⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄, 2nd sgl. fem. ⲧⲣⲉⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄; also nominal/dem./indef./interr. actor)

(a) In conjugation, occupying the usual infinitive position: "make/let him hear"
(b) After the preposition ⲉ-: "that he hear"; neg. ⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲧⲣⲉ-
(c) After other prepositions: ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲧⲣⲉ-, ⲙⲛ̄ⲛⲥⲁⲧⲣⲉ-, ⲁⲛⲧⲓⲧⲣⲉ-, ⲛ̄ⲥⲁⲧⲣⲉ-, ⲛ̄ⲧⲣⲉ-, ⲭⲱⲣⲓⲥⲧⲣⲉ-, ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲧⲣⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "in (the event of) his hearing"

ⲙⲛ̄ⲛⲥⲁⲧⲣⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄	"after (the event of) his hearing"
ⲁⲛⲧⲓⲧⲣⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄	"instead of his hearing"
ⲛ̄ⲥⲁⲧⲣⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄	"except that he hear",
ⲭⲱⲣⲓⲥⲧⲣⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄	"without his hearing"
ⲛ̄ⲧⲣⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄	"of his hearing"

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STERN parr. 461-463; STEINDORFF parr. 383-387, 452; TILL parr. 335-342, 351; VERGOTE parr. 161(5), 204, 206-207; LAMBDIN parr. 20.1, 30.4; *POLOTSKY, *Kausativer Infinitiv* parr. 7, 10-21, 22-30

(a) In conjugation:

1. ⲁϥⲧⲣⲉⲩⲯⲱⲡⲉ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲙ̄ⲡⲏⲩⲉ ⲙⲛ̄ⲡⲕⲁϩ (IV 36)
[OBS. The two coordinated nouns stand in apposition to the 3rd plural pronoun in ⲧⲣⲉⲩ-; nominal apposition to 3rd-person pronominal actor expressions in tense forms and ⲧⲣⲉ- after prepositions would be normally introduced by ⲛ̄ⲑⲓ-]
2. ⲁⲕⲧⲣⲉⲛⲥⲟⲩⲱⲛⲛ̄ (III 90)
{NB: -ⲥⲟⲩⲱⲛⲛ̄; r the object suffix alternant of ⲕ after final ⲛ}
3. ⲁⲡⲉⲓⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲏ ⲛⲉⲓⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲣⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲁⲩⲧⲣϩⲣⲛⲟⲃⲉ ϩⲱ (A I 79)
{NB: ϩⲱ 1st sgl. of the reinforcer (augens) ϩⲱⲱ-}
4. ⲁⲣⲉⲧⲣⲉ-ⲡⲁⲓ ϩⲱⲱϥ ⲡⲁⲣⲁⲃⲁ (A I 118)
5. ⲁⲣⲉⲧⲣⲉⲩϥⲓ-ⲣⲟⲟⲩⲱ ⲉⲛⲉϩⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲓⲱⲛ (P 130.2 96 152)
6. ⲙ̄ⲡϯⲉⲱⲧⲣⲉⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲣⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲡⲁⲣⲁⲡⲉϥⲟⲩⲱⲱ (Ch. 74)

7. ⲕⲁⲁⲧ ⲧⲁⲧⲣⲉ-ⲛⲉⲥⲛⲏⲩ ⲣ̄ⲟⲩⲁⲛⲁϣ ⲛⲁⲓ (III 16)
   {NB: ⲕⲁⲁⲧ imperative with 1st person sgl. pron. object, see ⲕⲱ "let"; ⲧⲁ- 1st sgl. conjunctive, following-up the imperative and expressing its object action}
8. ⲙ̄ⲡⲣ̄ⲧⲣⲉⲥⲱϩ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲙ̄ⲡⲣ̄ⲧⲣⲉⲃⲁⲗⲉ ⲙⲟⲟⲩⲉ (Wess. 9 142)
9. ⲁⲓⲧⲣⲉⲩⲙⲟⲩϥ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲕⲥⲱϣ ⲙⲛ̄ⲡⲉⲕϣⲓⲡⲉ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲛⲟⲩⲉⲃⲣⲟ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲕⲏⲓ (Ch. 39)
10. ⲁϥⲧⲣⲉⲛⲥⲟⲩⲱⲛⲣ̄ ⲙⲛ̄ⲛⲉϥϩⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ (Ch. 160)

(b) After the preposition ⲉ-: ⲉⲧⲣⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄, ⲉⲧⲙⲧⲣⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄

1. ⲙ̄ⲡⲟⲩⲕⲁⲁⲛ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲛⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲟⲩⲱϣ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲓⲙⲁ (III 34)
2. ⲟⲩⲁⲧⲃⲟⲙ ⲡⲉ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲡⲥⲁⲧⲁⲛⲁⲥ ⲣ̄ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛ̄ϩⲙ̄ϩⲁⲗ ⲉⲡⲛⲟⲃⲉ (Ch. 76)
   {NB: ⲣ̄- ... ⲛ̄-: "make ... into"}
3. ⲁⲩⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ⲥ̄ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲩϣⲱⲡⲉ ⲛ̄ⲁⲃⲣⲏⲛ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛ̄ⲭⲏⲣⲁ (IV 28)
   [OBS. The neutric feminine -ⲥ ("it") anticipates "that" (ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲩ-ϣⲱⲡⲉ); so too in texts 5, 10, 15, originally also 6]
4. ⲁⲧⲉⲩⲛⲟⲩ ⲃⲉ ϣⲱⲡⲉ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲛⲧⲱⲟⲩⲛ ϩⲁⲡϩⲓⲛⲏⲃ (Leyd. 295 = Rom. 13:11)
5. ⲙ̄ⲡⲟⲩⲧⲁⲁⲥⲛⲁⲛ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲛⲥⲟⲩⲛ̄ ⲧⲉϩⲓⲛ ⲙ̄ⲡϩⲁⲗⲏⲧ/ⲏ ⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓ (III 191)
6. ϣϣⲉ ⲉⲣⲟⲛ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲛⲕⲁⲧⲁⲫⲣⲟⲛⲉⲓ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲟⲟⲩ ⲡⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲓⲧⲛ̄ⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ (III 35)
   {NB: ϣϣⲉ "it behoves", "it is fitting" (originally present form with a neutric feminine actor: "it goes"}
7. ⲁϥⲕⲧⲟ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉϥⲟⲣⲅⲏ ⲉⲡⲁϩⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲧⲣⲉϥⲕⲟⲗⲁⲍⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲛ ϩⲛ̄ϩⲉⲛⲛⲟⲃ ⲙ̄ⲡⲓⲣⲁⲥⲙⲟⲥ (IV 206)
8. †ⲙⲟⲕⲙⲉⲕ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲓ ⲉⲓⲥ-ϩⲉⲛⲣⲟⲙⲡⲉ ⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲧⲣⲉⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲃⲛ̄-ϣⲁϫⲉ ⲉϫⲱ ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲗⲗⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ⲥⲙⲟⲩ (IV 172)
   {NB: †ⲙⲟⲕⲙⲉⲕ: present, 1st sgl. "I am (have been) reflecting"; ⲉⲓⲥ- "for" (with duration of time), see section 14}
9. ⲡⲕⲁⲓⲣⲟⲥ ⲡⲉ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲟⲩⲉⲓⲱⲧ ⲏ ⲟⲩⲙⲁⲁⲩ ϣⲱⲡⲉ ⲛ̄ⲑⲉ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲃⲁⲣ-ⲃⲁⲣⲟⲥ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲛⲉⲩϣⲏⲣⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲉⲩϣⲉⲉⲣⲉ (III 74)
10. ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲥ ⲇⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲟⲩⲁ ϫⲱⲣⲡ̄ ϩⲛ̄ⲛⲉϥⲃⲁⲗ (A II 258)
    {NB: ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲥ "it is good", Adjective Verb (section 22.1)}
11. ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲕ ϩⲱⲱⲕ ⲡⲉⲛⲥⲟⲛ ⲧⲛ̄ϩⲱⲛ ⲉⲧⲟⲟⲧⲕ̄ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲕⲁⲡⲟⲧⲁⲥⲥⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲕⲏⲓ (III 99f.)
    {NB: ⲧⲛ̄ϩⲱⲛ present form, "we enjoin"; ϩⲱⲛ governs the preposition ⲉⲧⲛ̄- / ⲉⲧⲟⲟⲧ-}
12. ⲁⲩⲙⲓϣⲉ ⲟⲩⲃⲉ-ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲥⲉⲃⲏⲥ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲧⲣⲉⲩⲣ̄-ϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ (IV 5)

13. ⲁⲛⲁⲩ ⲭⲉ-ϩⲛ̄ ϩⲁϩ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁ ϩⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲅⲣⲁⲫⲏ ⲁⲩϩⲱⲛ ⲉⲧⲟⲟⲧⲛ̄ ⲉⲧⲙ̄-ⲧⲣⲉⲛⲱⲣⲕ̄ ⲛ̄ⲗⲁⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ⲁⲛⲁⲱ (III 182)
14. ⲧⲱⲃϩ̄ ⲙ̄ⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲟⲟⲩ ⲓⲥ̄ ⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲧⲣⲉⲕϩⲉ ϩⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲛ ⲭⲉ-ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲕⲉⲓ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲧⲟⲟⲧϥ̄ ⲙ̄ⲡⲗⲁⲥ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲕⲣ̄-ⲑⲉ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲭⲁⲭⲉ ⲛ̄ⲛⲁ-ϩⲣⲁⲩ (III 106f.)
{NB: ⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁ- determinated relative perfect ("they who ..."), predicating ⲣ̄-ⲑⲉ ⲛ̄- "be(come) as"}
15. ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲥⲱⲱⲡⲉ ⲉⲧⲣⲁⲣ̄ⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲙⲧⲟ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲙ̄ⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ (IV 91)
16. ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲩⲑⲗⲓⲃⲉ ⲛ̄ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲧⲣⲉⲩⲧⲙ̄ⲙⲟϥ (IV 92)

(c) ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲧⲣⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄, ⲙⲛⲛ̄ⲥⲁⲧⲣⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄; other prepositions with ⲧⲣⲉ-; ⲧⲣⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ as a "that" form:

1. ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲧⲣⲉϥⲱⲁ ⲛ̄ⲑⲓ-ⲡⲣⲏ ⲱⲁⲩⲥⲱⲟⲩϩ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲛ̄ⲑⲓ-ⲛⲉⲑⲏⲣⲓⲟⲛ ... ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲧⲣⲉϥⲡⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲛ̄ⲑⲓ-ⲡⲣⲏ ⲛ̄ⲧⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲥⲩⲛⲏ ⲁⲛⲇⲁⲓⲙⲟⲛⲓⲟⲛ ⲥⲱ-ⲟⲩϩ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ (IV 176f.)
2. ⲁϥⲛⲁ ⲛⲁⲛ ϩⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲛⲟⲃ ⲛ̄ⲛⲁ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲁϥⲥⲙⲟⲩ ⲉⲣⲟⲛ ϩⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲛⲟⲃ ⲛ̄ⲥⲙⲟⲩ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲧⲣⲉϥⲉⲓⲛⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉϥⲃⲓϫ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉϫⲱⲛ ϩⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲃⲉⲣⲱⲃ ϩⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲙⲛ̄ⲧ-ⲱⲁⲛϩⲧⲏϥ (IV 206)
3. ⲡⲉⲓϩⲱⲃ ⲁⲓⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲣⲟϥ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲧⲣⲁϫⲓⲟⲩ ⲙ̄ⲡⲡⲉⲧϫⲟⲥⲉ (III 38)
{NB: ⲡⲡⲉⲧϫⲟⲥⲉ definite nominalized relative present (section 31.1.1): "the One who is exalted"}
4. ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲧⲣⲉⲧⲉϫⲁⲣⲓⲥ ⲇⲉ ⲣ̄ϩⲟⲩⲉ-ϫⲱⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲁⲥⲣ̄ⲛⲟⲃ ⲁⲥϫⲓⲥⲉ ⲁⲥⲣ̄-ⲥⲟⲃⲧ̄ ⲁⲛⲉⲥⲉⲕⲓⲃⲉ ⲣ̄ⲛⲟⲃ ⲛⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲥ ⲁⲩⲣ̄-ⲡⲩⲣⲣⲟⲥ (Ch. 148)
{NB: ϩⲟⲩⲉ- inside the conjugation form, preceding and modifying the infinitives: "rather"}
[OBS. Note the use of the auxiliary ⲣ̄- (construct of ⲉⲓⲣⲉ) with nouns in the sense of "become"]
5. ⲁⲓⲉⲱⲃⲙ̄ⲃⲟⲙ ⲛ̄ⲧ-ⲗⲟⲅⲟⲥ ϩⲁⲟⲩⲱⲁϫⲉ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲱⲧ ⲉⲁⲡϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲃⲛ̄ⲧϥ̄ ⲙ̄ⲙⲉ ϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲧⲣⲉϥϫⲛⲟⲩⲓ ⲁⲩⲱ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲧⲣⲉϥⲕⲣⲓⲛⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲓ (Wess. 9 139)
{NB: ⲃⲛ̄ⲧ- = ⲛ̄- "find to be ..."}
6. ⲁⲙⲙⲁⲑⲏⲧⲏⲥ ϩⲟⲙⲟⲗⲟⲅⲉⲓ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲭ̄ⲥ̄ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲧⲣⲉϥⲟⲩⲱϩ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧⲟⲩ ⲛϥ̄ϫⲟⲟⲩ-ⲥⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲁⲱⲉ-ⲟⲉⲓⲱ ⲁⲓⲟⲩⲇⲁⲥ ⲣ̄-ⲁⲧⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟϥ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲧⲣⲉϥⲟⲩⲱϩ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧϥ̄ ⲛ̄ⲑⲓⲡⲁⲓⲁⲃⲟⲗⲟⲥ (Ch. 66)
7. ⲙ̄ⲡϥ̄ϫⲉ-ⲗⲁⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ⲱⲁϫⲉ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲙⲛⲛ̄ⲥⲁⲧⲣⲉⲩⲡⲁⲣⲁⲓⲧⲓ (III 148)
{NB: ⲡⲁⲣⲁⲓⲧⲓ = ⲡⲁⲣⲁⲓⲧⲉⲓ (and often, ⲓ = ⲉⲓ in words of Greek origin: a phenomenon of Hellenistic Greek orthography and phonology}
8. ⲙⲛⲛ̄ⲥⲁⲧⲣⲁⲉⲓ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲓⲧⲟⲟⲧⲟⲩ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛ̄ⲕⲁⲗⲁⲁⲩ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲑⲟⲟⲩ ⲉ-ⲱⲱⲡⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ (III 88)

{NB: ⲡⲉⲑⲟⲟⲩ zero-article nominalized relative present (section 31.1.1): "that is evil"}

9. ⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲡⲁⲣⲁⲃⲁ ⲙ̄ⲛ̄ⲛ̄ⲥⲁⲧⲣⲉⲩⲣ̄-ⲁⲛⲁⲱ ⲛⲁⲕ ⲭⲉ-ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲛⲣ̄ⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲁⲩⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲟⲛ (III 17)
[OBS. ⲉⲓⲣⲉ (with no or zero object) resumes the derived verb ⲣ̄-ⲁⲛⲁⲱ]

10. ⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲧⲣⲉⲕⲕⲁ-ⲃⲟⲗ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲉϩⲛⲁⲕ ⲁⲛ ⲙ̄ⲛ̄ⲥⲁⲧⲣⲉⲕⲟⲙⲕⲟⲩ (Ch. 27)
{NB: ⲉϩⲛⲁⲕ ⲁⲛ "you not willing", "against your will" (section 24.1)}

11. ⲟⲩⲕⲁⲑⲏⲕⲏⲥⲓⲥ ⲱⲏⲙ ⲛ̄ⲱⲱⲣⲡ̄ ⲛ̄ⲧⲕⲏⲣⲓⲁⲕⲏ ⲙ̄ⲛ̄ⲥⲁⲧⲣⲉⲩⲱⲱ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲯⲁⲗⲧⲏⲣⲓⲟⲛ ⲙ̄ⲛ̄ⲡⲉⲩⲁⲅⲅⲉⲗⲓⲟⲛ ϩⲛ̄ⲟⲩϩⲟⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲱⲁ (III 111)
{NB: ⲕⲁⲑⲏⲕⲏⲥⲓⲥ = ⲕⲁⲑⲏⲅⲏⲥⲓⲥ, ⲕⲏⲣⲓⲁⲕⲏ = ⲕⲏⲣⲓⲁⲕⲏ (see note to text 7)}

12. ⲙ̄ⲙⲁ ⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲃⲱⲕ ⲉⲙⲁⲩ ⲙ̄ⲛ̄ⲛⲥⲁⲧⲣⲉⲩⲃⲱⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲛ̄ⲛⲥⲩⲛⲁⲅⲱⲅⲏ ⲙ̄ⲡϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ (III 126)

13. ⲡⲉϩⲟⲟⲩ ⲡⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲣⲉⲩⲡⲁⲣⲁⲅⲉ (Ch. 178)

14. ⲁⲛⲧⲓⲧⲣⲉⲩⲥⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲡϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧⲟⲩ ⲁⲩⲣ̄-ⲁⲧⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟϥ ⲱⲁⲛⲧⲟⲩⲉⲓ ⲉⲧⲟⲟⲧϥ̄ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲩⲧⲱⲱⲃⲉ (IV 4)

15. ⲁⲛⲧⲓⲧⲣⲉⲛⲣ̄-ⲙⲟⲉⲓϩⲉ ⲉϫⲛ̄-ⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲙⲓⲟ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲙ̄ⲛ̄ⲛⲉϥⲙⲉⲗⲟⲥ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲧⲛ̄ⲧ-ⲉⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲁϥ ⲁⲕⲧⲣⲉϩⲁϩ ⲣ̄ⲙⲟⲉⲓϩⲉ ⲉϫⲙ̄ⲡⲧⲁⲕⲟ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲩⲕⲟⲥⲙⲟⲥ (Wess. 9 118)
{NB: the conjunctive (ⲛ̄ⲧⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲟⲟⲩ) continues -ⲧⲣⲉⲛ-}

16. ⲧⲉⲕⲃⲟⲙ ⲁⲛ ⲧⲉ ⲃⲛⲉϩ ⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲕ ⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛⲉⲕⲁⲁⲓⲙⲱⲛ ⲉⲧⲣⲉ-ⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲣ̄ⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲭⲱⲣⲓⲥ-ⲧⲣⲉⲡⲉϥⲟⲩⲱϣ ⲣ̄ϣⲟⲣⲡ̄ ⲉⲡⲉϥⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲧⲉϥⲉⲡⲓⲑⲩⲙⲓⲁ ϩⲁⲑⲏ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉϥϣⲟϫⲛⲉ (Ch. 35)

17. ⲉⲓⲟⲩⲉϣ-ⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲧⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ̄ ⲛ̄ⲥⲁⲧⲣⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲧϩⲏⲩ ⲙ̄ⲙⲱⲧⲛ̄ (A I 267)
{NB: ⲉⲓⲟⲩⲉϣⲟⲩ "What is it that I want?", Second Present with an interrogative object as focus (section 36)}

18. ⲡⲙⲁ ⲁⲛ ⲛ̄ⲧⲣⲉⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲟⲩⲱⲛϩ̄ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉϥⲙⲛ̄ⲧϫⲱⲱⲣⲉ ⲡⲉ ⲧⲙⲏⲧⲉ ⲛ̄ϩⲉⲛϩ̄ⲗⲗⲟ ⲙⲛ̄ϩⲉⲛϩ̄ⲗⲗⲱ (A I 3)
[OBS. A negative copular Nominal Sentence (section 3.3), with ("the place to ...", lit. "the place that one should ...") as theme and ⲧⲙⲏⲧⲉ ... as rheme (predicate)]

19. ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲧⲣⲉⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲙⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ϩⲟⲩⲟ ⲉⲱⲛϩ̄ (A I 52)
{NB: ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩ-: Adjective Verb: "It is better (that ...)"}

10 THE CAUSATIVE IMPERATIVE or JUSSIVE (Table D2):

3rd persons: ⲙⲁⲣⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ / ⲙⲁⲣⲉⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄, neg. ⲙ̄ⲡⲣ̄ⲧⲣⲉ-ϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ / ⲙ̄ⲡⲣ̄ⲧⲣⲉⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "Let him/the man (not) hear!"

1st person plural: ⲙⲁⲣⲛ̄ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄, neg. ⲙ̄ⲡⲣ̄ⲧⲣⲉⲛⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "Let us (not) hear!"
(Rarely also in the 1st singular, with the semantic component of causation more pronounced; also with nominal/dem./indefinite actor)

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STERN parr. 383, 398; TILL par. 346 (neg.); LAMBDIN par. 30.1; POLOTSKY, "Modes" p. 81-84; * *Kausativer Infinitiv* parr. 8, 31-36

(a) Affirmative:

1. ⲙⲁⲣⲉϥⲙⲟⲟⲩⲧ ⲙ̄ⲡϩⲟϥ (P 130.2 24 555)
2. ⲙⲁⲣⲉⲫⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲉⲡⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲱⲗϩⲏ (P. 130.2 100 ro)
3. ⲓ̄ⲥ̄ ⲕⲧⲟⲟⲩ ⲃⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲙⲁⲣⲟⲩⲥⲟⲩⲱⲛⲛ̄ (Ch. 125)
4. ⲙⲁⲣⲟⲩⲧⲁⲙⲟⲛ ⲛ̄ⲃⲓ-ⲛⲓⲣⲉϥⲡⲉⲣⲉ-ⲣⲁⲥⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲛⲟⲩϫ (Wess. 9 143)
5. ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲡⲁⲓ ⲙⲁⲣⲉⲡⲟⲩⲁ ⲡⲟⲩⲁ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲛ ⲃⲟⲏⲑⲉⲓ ⲉⲣⲟϥ (RE 11 16)
6. ϩⲛ̄ⲟⲩϫⲡⲓⲟ ⲙⲁⲣⲛ̄ϫⲡⲓⲟ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲛⲉⲣⲏⲩ (P 130.4 110 552)
   [OBS. ϩⲛ̄ⲟⲩ- + infinitive followed by a conjugation form predicating the same verb is the Coptic version of the so-called "absolute" or "tautological" infinitive, used to reinforce the verbal notion ("he will hear indeed")]
7. ⲙⲁⲣⲛ̄ⲣ̄-ϩⲙ̄ϩⲁⲗ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲛⲉⲣⲏⲩ ⲛ̄ⲑⲉ ⲛ̄ⲓ̄ⲥ̄ ... ⲡⲁⲓ ⲛ̄ⲧⲁϥϫⲓ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲙⲟⲣⲫⲏ ⲛ̄ϩⲙ̄ϩⲁⲗ ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲏⲧⲛ̄ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛ̄ⲑⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲩⲗⲟⲥ ⲡϩⲙ̄ϩⲁⲗ ⲛ̄ⲓ̄ⲥ̄ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛ̄ⲑⲉ ⲛ̄ⲛⲁⲡⲟⲥⲧⲟⲗⲟⲥ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ (IV 34)
8. ⲁⲛⲟⲛ ϩⲱⲱⲛ ⲱ ⲛⲁⲥⲛⲏⲩ ⲙⲁⲣⲛ̄ⲣ̄ⲧⲙⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛ̄ⲧⲛ̄ϫⲱ ⲛ̄ⲧⲙⲉ ϫⲉⲕⲁⲥ ⲉⲛⲉⲥⲟⲟⲩⲧⲛ̄ ϩⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲛϩⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ (P 130.5 550 22)
9. ⲙⲁⲣⲉⲡⲁⲥⲉⲃⲛⲥ ⲕⲱ ⲛ̄ⲥⲱϥ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉϥϩⲓⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛ̄ⲁⲛⲟⲙⲟⲥ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉϥⲫⲟϫⲛⲉ ⲙⲁⲣⲉϥⲕⲟⲧϥ̄ ⲉⲡϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ (Ch. 37)
10. ⲙⲁⲣⲓⲙⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲛⲁⲓ ⲱⲛϩ̄ (A I 100)

(b) Negative:

1. ⲙ̄ⲡⲣ̄ⲧⲣⲉⲩⲣϩⲁϩ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲛ (P 130.2 60 72)
2. ⲙ̄ⲡⲣ̄ⲧⲣⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ϫⲉ-ⲁⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲣ̄-ϩⲁϩ ⲛ̄ⲫⲁϫⲉ ⲙⲛ̄ⲡϩⲗⲗⲟ ϩⲉ ϩⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲛ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲛ ⲉⲙⲡⲁⲧϥ̄ⲉⲓ ⲫⲁⲣⲟⲛ (A I 73)
3. ⲙ̄ⲡⲣ̄ⲧⲣⲉⲡⲉⲕϩⲛⲧ ⲙ̄ⲕⲁϩ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲕ ⲡⲁⲉⲓⲱⲧ (P 130.2 I 78)
4. ⲙ̄ⲡⲣ̄ⲧⲣⲉⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲟⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲩ (A I 213)
5. ⲙ̄ⲡⲣ̄ⲧⲣⲉⲛⲫⲓⲛⲉ ⲃⲉ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲥⲁ-ϩⲟⲩⲟ ⲉⲡⲁⲓ (Wess. 9 148)
6. ⲙ̄ⲡⲣ̄ⲧⲣⲉⲛⲕⲣⲓⲛⲉ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲛⲉⲣⲏⲩ (P 131.6 44 115)
7. ⲙ̄ⲡⲣ̄ⲧⲣⲉⲛⲥⲱⲫ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲭⲁⲣⲓⲥ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲙⲁⲣⲛ̄ⲧ-ⲉⲟⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟϥ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ (IV 24)
   {NB: ⲛ̄ⲧⲟϥ adversative particle}
8. ⲙ̄ⲡⲣ̄ⲧⲣⲉⲛⲁⲁⲛ ⲛ̄ⲫⲙ̄ⲙⲟ ⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲙⲛ̄ⲡⲉⲭ̄ⲥ̄ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩⲟⲩⲛⲟϥ ⲙⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲥⲟⲗⲥ̄ ⲛ̄ⲛⲟⲩϫ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲙ̄ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲥⲉⲃⲛⲥ (A I 166)

11 THE CONSEQUENTIAL CAUSATIVE CONJUNCTIVE (ταρεq-cωτⲙ̄, Table D3:

2nd & 3rd persons: ταρεκcωτⲙ̄ / ταρεqcωτⲙ̄ / ταρεπρωμε cωτⲙ̄ "(Do this,) and (I promise you that ...)". Also nominal/ demonstr./indefinite actor.

1st person plural: ταρⲛ̄cωτⲙ̄ "... and then we shall ..."

Also as the logical sequel to a rhetorical question.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

STERN par. 453; STEINDORFF parr. 352-354; TILL par. 311; VERGOTE par. 161(2); POLOTSKY, "Modes" p. 87-89; * *Kausativer Infinitiv* parr. 9, 31, 37-40, 45

1. ⲛⲁ ταρογⲛⲁ ⲛⲁⲕ ⲱⲉⲛϩⲧⲏⲕ ταρογⲱⲉⲛϩⲧⲏⲩ ϩⲁⲣⲟⲕ ⲕⲱ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ταρογⲕⲱ ⲛⲁⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ (P 131.6 43 ro)
   {NB: ⲱⲉⲛ- = ⲱⲛ̄- (see ⲱⲱⲛⲉ)}
2. ⲙⲁⲧⲁⲉⲓⲉ-ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ταρεκⲃⲙ̄ⲃⲟⲙ (III 112)
3. ⲥⲉⲓ ⲛⲏⲧⲛ̄ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲧⲛ̄ϩⲏⲁⲟⲛⲏ ⲛ̄ⲭⲱϩⲙ̄ ϩⲓⲥⲱⲱⲩⲫ ... ταρⲉⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲥⲉⲓ ⲟⲛ ⲙ̄ⲡⲣⲱⲕϩ̄ ⲙⲛ̄ⲡⲕⲱϩ̄ⲧ̄ ⲉⲧⲉⲙⲉqⲱⲱⲩⲙ̄ (A II 224f.)
4. ϩⲁⲣⲉϩ ⲉⲧⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲃⲁⲗϩⲏⲧ ⲛ̄ⲑⲉ ⲉⲧⲥⲏϩ ταρⲉⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲡⲥⲟⲟⲩⲧⲛ̄ (Cl. Pr. 22 364)
5. ⲱⲛ̄ϩⲧⲏⲕ ⲃⲉ ϩⲁⲡⲉⲕⲗⲁⲟⲥ ⲛ̄ⲥⲟⲟⲧⲟⲩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ... ταρογⲥ̄ⲣⲫⲉ ⲉⲉⲓⲙⲉ ϫⲉ-ⲙⲛ̄-ⲃⲉⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛ̄ⲃⲗ̄ⲗⲁⲕ (Ch. 48)
   {NB: ⲥⲟⲟⲧⲟⲩ = ⲥⲟⲧⲟⲩ (see ⲥⲱⲧⲉ); statement of non-existence, "there is not", section 12.2)
6. ⲙⲁⲣⲛ̄ⲡⲣⲟⲥⲉϫⲉ ⲉⲛⲉqⲱⲁϫⲉ ταρⲛ̄ⲉⲓⲙⲉ ⲉⲡⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲱⲓⲛⲉ ⲛ̄ⲥⲱq (Cat. 41)
   {NB: ⲡⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲱⲓⲛⲉ ⲛ̄ⲥⲱq determinated relative present "that which you seek", ⲛ̄ⲥⲱ- being the preposition governed by ⲱⲓⲛⲉ}
7. ⲉqⲧⲱⲛ ⲡⲟⲩⲱⲛⲱ̄ ταρⲉⲡⲱⲱⲥ ⲡⲱⲧ ⲛ̄ⲥⲱq (A II 510)
   {NB: ⲉqⲧⲱⲛ Second Present, putting in focus the interrogative adverbial predicate ⲧⲱⲛ "where?" (section 37): "Where is he?"}
8. ⲁⲙⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲉⲕⲕⲗⲏⲥⲓⲁ ταρⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲥⲙⲟⲩ ⲉⲣⲟⲕ ϩⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲕⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲣⲙ̄-ⲙⲁⲟ (P 131.6 13 vo)
9. ⲛⲉϫ-ⲟⲩⲁ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲉqϩⲟⲟⲩ ϩⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲙⲏⲏⲱⲉ ταρⲉⲡ†-ⲧⲱⲛ ⲃⲱⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛⲙ̄ⲙⲁq (A I 63f.)
   {NB: ⲉqϩⲟⲟⲩ adnominal circumstantial present: "that is evil"}

UNIT (III): PRESENTATIVE and EXISTENTIAL CLAUSES
(sections 12-14)

12.1 Affirmation of existence: ⲟⲩⲛ̄- "There exists"
12.1.1 Conversions

12.2 Negation of existence: (ⲙ̄)ⲙⲛ̄- "There does not exist"
12.2.1 Conversions

13.1 Affirmation of existential possession: the verboid ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲁ- "(He) has"
13.1.1 Conversions

13.2 Negation of existential possession: the verboid (ⲙ̄)ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲁ- "(He) does not have"
13.2.1 Conversions

14 Presentative (deictic existence) clauses: ⲉⲓⲥ (ϩⲏⲏⲧⲉ) "Here is ...". Prepositional ⲉⲓⲥ (with expression of time): "It has been ... since ...".

12 EXISTENTIAL STATEMENTS, EXISTENTIAL POSSESSION

(see Table E),
ⲟⲩⲛ̄- "there is/exists ...", affirmation of existence (12.1)
(ⲙ̄)ⲙⲛ̄- "There is not/does not exist ..." (12.2)

The existants (non-existants, as the case may be) are never definite; however, the determinated ("definite") relative (31.1) does occur after ⲟⲩⲛ̄- or (ⲙ̄)ⲙⲛ̄-, in a generic (non-specific) sense (ⲟⲩⲛ̄- ⲡⲉⲧ- "there is such a one as ...")

The fusion of ⲟⲩⲛ̄-/(ⲙ̄)ⲙⲛ̄- and the preposition ⲛ̄ⲧⲉ-, ⲛ̄ⲧⲁ- "with, by" forms the Coptic expression for predicative possession ("have/have not"), i.e. the verboid ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲁ-, (ⲙ̄)ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲁ- (13)

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

STERN parr. 317, 368; STEINDORFF parr. 296, 397-402; TILL parr. 287-296; VERGOTE par. 170(7-8); LAMBDIN par. 2.2, POLOTSKY, "Conjugation System", parr. 33-35; SHISHA-HALEVY, "Existential Statements"

12.1 AFFIRMATION OF EXISTENCE, ογν̄- "There exists", "There is" (Table E1)

NB: ογν̄- ... ν̄-/m̄mo- predicates intimate ("inalienable") possession

1. ογν̄κεκοcμοc ϩαροϥ m̄παι (Orig. 303)
2. мн ογν̄бε-p̄po n̄ca-p̄-pm̄ϩε ebol ϩn̄torгн etnhy ... мн ογνбεмn̄т-ερο n̄ca-p̄-p̄po m̄πωnϩ̄ ϣa-enεϩ (A I 165)
   {NB: etnhy relative present: "that is coming"; мn̄тερο is the abstract noun derived from the concrete p̄po}
3. ογn̄ογον epooy n̄тоотϥ̄ m̄πχοεic m̄пнι (P 130.5 15 ro)
   [OBS. The preposition ε- denotes the debtor, n̄тоот- the creditor]
4. ογn̄бом m̄мок ееιмε xε-ϩaθн m̄πατογcn̄т-тпε мn̄-пкаϩ νε-ογ πετϣοοπ (Orig. 814)
   {NB: νεογ πετϣοοπ preterite conversion of the Cleft Sentence (section 33.3): "What was it that existed?"}
5. ογn̄бом etpeψyxн p̄nobε axn̄-cωмa нε cωмa axn̄-ψyxн (Orig. 335)
   {NB: нε = н; a rhetorical question}
6. ογn̄ααιмωn eqпнт n̄caααιмωn ayω pωмε m̄поннрос eqпнт n̄caρωмε m̄поннрос (A II 16)
   {NB: eqпнт adnominal circumstantial present, qualifying the zero-article nouns: "running after", "pursuing"}
7. eϣxε-ογn̄ϩοινε n̄ϩнттнytn̄ eιxι m̄мooy n̄бонc̄ мароγта-мοι xε-eιεειмε (III 139)
   {NB: eιxι m̄мooy n̄бонc̄ adnominal circumstantial present, qualifying "whom I am wronging"}
8. ογn̄cϩiмε eϣapεπecϩai ϩγпοптεγε epoc xε-ογn̄οεικ тε (Or. 159)
9. n̄тωтn̄ ae ογn̄kaϩ ογn̄бωм ογn̄ecooy ογn̄eϩε ογn̄ϩγ-παρχοντα ογn̄αρχн ο γn̄eξογcια ayω ογn̄бом m̄мωтn̄ ερ̄-поγωϣ m̄пноγтε ϩm̄пετn̄оγεϩcaϩнε m̄мατε (Ch. 100)
   [OBS. Note the conjunction-less coordination of several clauses in an "enumerative style"]

12.1.1 ογν̄- CONVERTED (Tables E1, G):

(a) Circumstantial εογν̄- εγν̄-- "there existing ..." (also adnominal; 27-30)
(b) Relative ετεογν̄- "(...) whom there exists ..." (31-33)
(c) Second Tense εογν̄- (very rare; 34-38)

(d) Preterite ⲛⲉⲟⲩⲛ̄- "there existed", also in hypothetical (remote) condition (39-41)

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

STERN parr. 412, 414; STEINDORFF parr. 374, 377, 468; TILL parr. 462, 468; LAMBDIN par. 25.1(c); POLOTSKY, "Conjugation System", parr. 33-35, * *Nom. Transposition* parr. 34-37

(a) Circumstantial:

1. ⲙ̄ⲙⲛ̄ⲕⲉϩⲱⲃ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲕⲉⲯⲁⲭⲉ ⲉⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲟⲟⲙ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ... (Orig. 360)
   {NB: ⲙ̄ⲙⲛ̄-: see section 12.2}
2. ⲙ̄ⲡⲣ̄-ⲉⲃⲱ̄-ⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ̄ ⲉⲛⲉⲧⲯⲱⲛⲉ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ̄ ϩⲛ̄ⲗⲁⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ϩⲱⲃ ⲉⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲟⲟⲙ ⲙ̄ⲙⲱⲧⲛ̄ ⲉⲗⲁⲩ ⲛⲁⲩ (E 81)
   {NB: ⲛⲉⲧⲯⲱⲛⲉ determinated relative present "they that are ill"}

(b) Relative:

1. ⲛⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲉⲧⲉⲟⲩⲛ̄-ⲃⲁⲗ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ (Mun. 107)
2. ⲡⲉⲧⲉⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲟⲟⲙ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟϥ ⲉϩⲱⲃ ⲛⲓⲙ (E 88)

(c) Second Tense:

1. ⲁⲣⲁ ⲉⲟⲩⲛ̄ϩⲉⲛⲧⲛ̄ϩ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲡⲡⲁⲛⲧⲟⲕⲣⲁⲧⲱⲣ (Ch. 186)
   {NB: the Second Tense marks the rhetorical question as such, or stresses the existant ϩⲉⲛⲧⲛ̄ϩ, or both (see sections 36. 38)}

(d) Preterite:

1. ⲉⲛⲉⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲟⲟⲙ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲕ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲛⲉ-ⲧⲃⲟⲏⲑⲉⲓⲁ ⲁⲛ ⲧⲉ ⲙⲡⲉ$\overline{\text{ⲭⲥ}}$ (you would not have remained silent) (Ch. 36)
2. ⲛⲉⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲛⲟⲃ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲙ̄ⲙⲏⲏⲛϣⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ⲡⲉ (Ch. 133)
   {NB: ⲡⲉ occurs often with the preterite conversion: its function is not entirely clear, but it seems to mark the whole clause as background}

12.2 NEGATION OF EXISTENCE: ⲙ̄ⲙⲛ̄-, ⲙⲛ̄- "There does not exist", "There is not" (Table E1)

NB: (ⲙ̄)ⲙⲛ̄- ... ⲛ̄-/ⲙ̄ⲙⲟ- negates intimate ("inalienable") possession

1. ⲙⲛ̄ⲥⲟⲫⲟⲥ ⲛ̄ϩⲟⲩⲟ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ (IV 2)
   {NB: the preposition ⲉ- used to express comparison ("more than")}
2. ⲙⲛ̄ⲗⲁⲁⲩ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲛ̄ⲥⲱⲛⲧ̄ ⲭⲱⲣⲓⲥ-ⲧⲉⲡⲣⲟⲛⲟⲓⲁ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ (IV 199)

3. ⲙ̄ⲙ̄ⲛ̄ⲥⲁϩⲟⲩ ⲙ̄ⲡⲃⲟⲗ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲣⲅⲁⲫⲏ ⲭⲉ-ⲙ̄ⲡⲉ̄ⲓ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲭⲱⲟⲩ (IV 10) [OBS. ⲭⲉ- introduces a relative (rather adnominal) negative clause qualifying the existant of ⲙ̄ⲙ̄ⲛ̄- (or in implied non-existence)]
4. ⲙ̄ⲙ̄ⲛ̄ⲕⲉϩⲱⲃ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲕⲉⲱⲁⲭⲉ ⲉⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲟⲟⲙ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲏ ⲉⲛⲟⲉⲓ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲏ ⲉϯ-ⲕⲁⲣⲡⲟⲥ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧⲟⲩ (Orig. 360)
5. ⲙ̄ⲙ̄ⲛ̄ⲁⲅⲁⲡⲏ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧⲟⲩ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲣⲟϥ (III 133)
6. ⲉⲱⲭⲉ-ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲟⲟⲙ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲥϩⲓⲙⲉ ⲉⲃⲟⲛⲑⲉⲓ ⲉⲡⲉⲥϩⲁⲓ ⲉⲧⲃⲉ-ⲟⲩ ⲙⲛ̄ⲟⲟⲙ ⲙ̄ⲡϩⲁⲓ ⲉⲃⲟⲛⲑⲉⲓ ⲉⲧⲉϥⲥϩⲓⲙⲉ (Or. 157)
7. ⲙⲛ̄ϩⲁⲡ ⲙ̄ⲙⲉ ⲙⲛ̄ⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲛ ⲙⲛ̄ⲛⲁ ⲟⲩⲇⲉ ⲙⲛ̄ⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲛ̄ⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ϩⲓⲭⲙ̄ⲡⲕⲁϩ (Ch. 96)
8. ⲙ̄ⲙⲛ̄ⲱⲱⲛⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲕⲁⲥ ⲙ̄ⲙⲛ̄ⲡⲉⲓⲣⲁⲥⲙⲟⲥ ⲛ̄ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲛ̄ⲇⲟⲕⲓⲙⲁϩⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲕ (Ch. 13)
9. ⲟⲩⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲧⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲙ̄ⲙⲛ̄ⲕⲓⲃⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲥ (Ch. 148)
10. ⲙⲛ̄ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲁϧⲙ̄-ⲯⲩⲭⲏ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲙ̄ⲙⲛ̄ⲯⲩⲭⲏ ⲁϧⲛ̄-ⲣⲱⲙⲉ (Orig. 340)
11. ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲕ ⲡⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲕ ⲡⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲙⲛ̄ⲕⲉⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛ̄ⲃⲁ̄ⲗⲗⲁⲕ (A I 211) [OBS. ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲕ ⲡⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲕ ⲡⲉ Nominal Sentence predicating immutability or Divine Existence]

12.2.1 (ⲙ̄)ⲙⲛ̄- CONVERTED (Tables E1, G):

(a) Circumstantial ⲉⲙⲛ̄-, ⲉⲙⲙⲛ̄-, ⲙ̄ⲙⲛ̄- "there not existing ..." (also adnominal; 27-30)
(b) Relative ⲉⲧⲉ(ⲙ̄)ⲙⲛ̄ "(...) whom there does not exist ..." (31-33)
(c) Second Tense ⲉ(ⲙ)ⲙⲛ̄- Scripture coptic ⲉⲧⲉ(ⲙ̄)ⲙⲛ̄- (rare; 34-38)
(d) Preterite ⲛⲉ(ⲙ)ⲙⲛ̄- "there used not to exist", also in hypothetical (remote) condition (39-41)

(a) Circumstantial:

1. (They say there are twelve gospels,) ⲉⲙⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲟⲛ ⲛ̄ⲥⲁ-ⲫⲧⲟⲟⲩ ⲡⲕⲁ-ⲧⲁⲙⲁⲑⲁⲓⲟⲥ ⲡⲕⲁⲧⲁⲙⲁⲣⲕⲟⲥ ⲡⲕⲁⲧⲁⲗⲟⲩⲕⲁⲥ ⲡⲕⲁⲧⲁⲓⲱϩⲁⲛ-ⲛⲏⲥ (Orig. 425)
2. ⲯⲟϧⲛⲉ ⲉⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲃⲣⲟ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧⲫ̄ (A II 416)
3. ⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁϥⲧⲣⲉⲱⲛⲉ ⲯⲱⲡⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙ̄ⲛⲟⲩⲟⲛ (Ch. 149) {NB: ⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁϥⲧⲣⲉ- determinated relative perfect: "He who caused ..."}

(b) Relative:

1. ⲡⲕⲁⲓⲣⲟⲥ ⲉⲧⲉⲙⲛ̄ⲕⲱ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧⲫ̄ (A I 212)
2. ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲙⲛ̄ⲡⲁⲧ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ (III 143)

3. ⲛⲁⲥⲉⲃⲏⲥ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ ... ⲉⲧⲉⲙⲙⲛ̄ⲥⲁϩⲟⲩ ⲙ̄ⲡⲃⲟⲗ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲅⲣⲁⲫⲏ ⲭⲉ-ⲙ̄ⲡⲣ̄ⲉⲓ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲭⲱⲟⲩ (IV 10)
[OBS. Adnominal ⲭⲉ-, see OBS. on 12.2, text (3)]

(c) Second Tense:

1. ⲙⲛ̄ⲛ̄ⲥⲁⲧⲣⲉⲩⲥⲟⲩⲛ̄-ⲡⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲧⲏⲣ̄ⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲙⲛ̄ⲕⲉⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛ̄ⲥⲁ-ⲓ̄ⲥ̄ (K 9316)
{NB: this is probably the Second Tense as a "that" clause}
2. (NOT SHENOUTE) ⲙⲏ ⲉⲧⲉⲙⲛ̄ⲟⲟⲙ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲓ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲭⲉ-ⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ̄ (Jes. 50:2)
{NB: the Second Tense marking a rhetorical question}

(d) Preterite:

1. ⲛⲉⲙⲛ̄-ⲡⲉⲧⲕⲱⲧⲉ ⲛ̄ⲥⲱϥ ⲡⲉ (A I 459)
{NB: ⲡⲉⲧ- "one who ...", det. relative present}

13 THE EXISTENTIAL-POSSESSION VERBOID (Table E2):

Affirmative ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲁ-: "(He) has ..." ("There is + with him")
Negative (ⲙ̄)ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲁ- "(He) does not have ..." ("There is not + with him")

The possession verboid is combined with the POSSESSOR (nominal/pronominal) and POSSESSED (nominal/pronominal) in the following main constructions:

NOMINAL POSSESSED

(a) ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲁ- (PRON. POSSESSOR)/ ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲉ- (NOM. POSSESSOR) + POSSESSED (+ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ "there")
(b) ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲁ- (PRON. POSSESSOR)/ ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲉ- (NOM. POSSESSOR) (+ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ) + ⲛ̄- POSSESSED

PRONOMINAL POSSESSED

(c) ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲁ- + POSSESSOR + POSSESSED (possessor: suffix pronouns; possessed: objective pronouns, see Table A5a/a_1)

Construction (a) is normal for a zero-determinated possessed and possible with other determinators; all constructions are used for ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲁ- and (ⲙ̄)ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲁ-.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

STERN parr. 312-316; STEINDORFF parr. 397-403; TILL parr. 289-295; VERGOTE par. 170(8); LAMBDIN par. 22.1; POLOTSKY, "Conjugation-System" parr. 33-35; * *Nom. Transposition* parr. 41-46

13.1 AFFIRMATION OF EXISTENTIAL POSSESSION: ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲁ- "(He) has" (Table E2)

1. ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲏ-ϩⲁϩ ⲛ̄ⲭⲣⲏⲙⲁ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ (IV 25)
2. ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲩ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲛⲟⲃ ⲙ̄ⲃⲉⲕⲉ ϩⲁⲧⲙ̄- ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ (P 130.2 102 22)
3. ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲛ- ⲓⲥ̄ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ (Ch. 120)
4. ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲥ̄- ⲧⲉϫⲟⲩⲥⲓⲁ ⲉⲕⲱⲛⲥ̄ ⲏ ⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲙⲕⲱⲛⲥ̄ (IV 13)
5. ⲡϩⲟϥ ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲉ- ⲧⲉϥⲙⲁⲧⲟⲩ ⲛⲉⲥⲱⲓ (Ch. 28)
6. ⲙⲏ ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲉ- ⲡⲉⲕⲉⲓⲱⲧ ⲕⲣⲟⲛⲟⲥ ⲗⲁⲁⲩ ⲣⲱ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟϥ ⲛ̄ⲥⲁϩⲉⲛⲛⲟⲃⲉ (Ch. 42)
7. ⲧⲁⲯⲩⲭⲏ ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲉ- ϩⲁϩ ⲛ̄ⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲛ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ (III 111 = Lc. 12:19) {NB: second sgl. fem. possessor}

13.1.1 ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲁ- CONVERTED (Tables E2, G):

(a) Circumstantial ⲉⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲁ-, ⲉⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲁ- "(he) having..." (also adnominal; 27-30)
(b) Relative ⲉⲧⲉⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲁ- "who has...", "whom (he) has..." (31-33)
(c) Second Tense ⲉ(ⲟ)ⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲁ- "(It is...) that (he) has..." (34-38)
Negatived ⲉⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲁ- ... ⲁⲛ "(He) had, used to have...", also in hypothetical (remote) condition (39-41)

NB: resumption of the antecedent (in the case of relative conversion: "...which (he) has...") is by means of the objective pronouns (Table A5a$_1$)

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

STERN parr. 412, 414; STEINDORFF parr. 402, 468; LAMBDIN par. 25.1(c); POLOTSKY, "Conjugation System" parr. 33-35; * *Nom. Transposition* parr. 47-50

(a) Circumstantial:

1. ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲥ ⲉⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲛ ⲉⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛ̄ϩⲟⲩⲟ ⲉⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲩ ⲉⲣⲟⲛ (Miss. 278) {NB: ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲥ Adjective Verb (section 22.1) with a neutric feminine actor "it is good"}
2. ϩⲉⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲛ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ (P 130.4 157 ro)
3. ⲙ̄ⲡⲣ̄ⲯⲱⲡⲉ ⲉⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲕ̄- ϩⲁϩ ⲛ̄ⲥϩⲓⲙⲉ (A II 61) [OBS. ⲯⲱⲡⲉ + circumstantial is here used to supply a (negative) imperative for the possessive verboid]

(b) Relative:

1. ⲟⲩⲟⲛ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲉⲧⲉⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲩ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲓϩⲉⲗⲡⲓⲥ (Ch. 86)
2. ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲩ- ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ (P 130.2 62 76)

3. ⲡⲉⲧⲉⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲫϩⲱⲃ ⲛⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲛ ⲙⲁⲣⲉⲫⲉⲓ ⲉⲡⲓⲁⲓⲕⲁⲥⲑⲏⲣⲓⲟⲛ (III 89)
4. ⲧⲉⲩⲁⲅⲁⲡⲏ ⲉⲧⲉⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲩⲥ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ (IV 52)
5. ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲫⲥⲟⲩ (Or. 161)
   {NB: -ⲥⲟⲩ is here the objective pronoun (Table A$_3$ a$_1$); similarly -ⲥ in the next text}
6. ⲟⲩⲥ†-ⲱϩⲉ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲱⲧ ⲧⲉⲧⲉⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲓⲥ (Ch. 99)
   {NB: this is a Cleft Sentence (section 33), with the POSSESSED put in focus and resumed by the objective pronoun -ⲥ: "It is a ... that I have"}
7. ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲩ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉϫⲟⲩⲥⲓⲁ ⲉⲣ̄ⲡϩⲁⲡ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲟⲛ ⲉⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲩ ⲉ† ⲙ̄ⲡϩⲏⲕⲉ (Ch. 86)
   {NB: The relative conversion is here carried on by the circumstantial (section 29.1)}

(c) Second Tense:

1. ⲉⲯⲭⲉ-ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲕ-ⲡⲓⲥⲧⲓⲥ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ⲉⲓⲉ ⲉⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲕ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ⲙ̄ⲡⲭⲱⲕ ⲙ̄ⲡⲙⲩⲥⲧⲏⲣⲓⲟⲛ (Cat. 43)
   {NB: the direct object is emphasized (put into focus) by the Second Tense}
2. ⲉⲯⲭⲉ-ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲏ-ⲟⲩⲃⲟⲙ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲟⲛ ⲉⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲩⲥ̄ ϩⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲧⲕⲁ-ⲙⲁ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧⲟⲩ (III 85)
   {NB: ϩⲛ̄- is here put into focus by the Second Tense}

(d) Preterite:

1. ⲡⲁⲉⲓⲱⲧ †-ⲉⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲁⲓ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲛⲉⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲓⲩ ϩⲁϩⲧⲏⲕ ⲉⲙⲡⲁⲧⲉⲡⲕⲟⲥⲙⲟⲥ ⲯⲱⲡⲉ (Cat. 42 = Joh. 17:5)
   {NB: †ⲉⲟⲟⲩ imperative; ⲉⲛⲉⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲁ- relative preterite (double conversion)}
2. ⲉⲛⲉⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲩ-ϩⲉⲗⲡⲓⲥ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ϩⲛ̄ⲧⲥⲩⲛⲁⲅⲱⲅⲏ ⲙ̄ⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲛⲉⲩⲛⲁⲃⲱⲕ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲓⲧⲟⲟⲧⲛ̄ (Wess. 9 162)
   {NB: ⲉⲛⲉ- circumstantial preterite (double conversion), expressing the supposition constituent of a remote hypothetical condition ("irrealis"); ⲛⲉⲩⲛⲁ- preterite future, used for remote hypothetical result ("they would not have gone", see section 41)}

13.2 NEGATION OF EXISTENTIAL POSSESSION: THE VERBOID

(ⲙ̄)ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲁ- "(He) does not have ..." (Table E2)
For construction and Bibliography, see 13.1

1. ⲉⲯⲭⲉ-ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲕ-ⲡⲓⲥⲧⲓⲥ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ⲉⲓⲉ-ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲕ-ϩⲉⲗⲡⲓⲥ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ (Cat. 43)

2. мйтк̄бом м̄мау пдаімонюн н̄сатако (III 78)
   {NB: пдаімонюн address ("vocative")}
3. мйтан-лоібє мйтан-ѱахє єхѡ ϩм̄пєϩооу м̄пϩап (Ch. 120)
4. мйтау м̄мау н̄тϩотє м̄пєхс̄ (P 130.2 25 327)
5. єѱхєоуйтакϩенснує н̄оуоуоєіѱ ллла тєноу мйтак (Ch. 31)
6. мйтє-пєіѱѡнє ѱі м̄мау (IV 21)
7. мйтє-дікастнріон ѱахє м̄мау єхѡ єроі (Ch. 95)
8. анон м̄мєратє м̄мйтан-бєϩєлпіс м̄мау н̄сананєрну єімнті єпноутє маулаϥ мйпхоєіс ік̄ (III 136)
9. мйтаі-мостє єϩоун єрос (A I 71)
10. мйтан-оєік єоуѡм (Ch. 47)

13.2.1 (м̄)мйта- CONVERTED (Tables E2, G)

(a) Circumstantial ємйта-, єммйта-, м̄ммйта- "(He) not having ..." (also adnominal; 27-30)
(b) Relative єтє(м̄)мйта- "who does not have", "whom (he) does not have" (31-33)
(d) Preterite нємйта- "(He) did not have ...", also in hypothetical (remote) condition (34-38)

For Bibliography, see 13.2.1

(a) Circumstantial:

1. ϩєнϩвнує н̄вотєємйтоу-ннє (E 94)
2. ємйтєтсунагѡгн н̄нюуда пхоєіс ік̄ м̄мау м̄ммйтоу-лаау м̄мау (III 57)
3. ϩєнѱм̄моємйтоу-рѡме м̄мау ϩраі н̄ϩнтй (P 130.2 62 76)

(b) Relative:

1. пноутє єтємйтф̄-фѳонос (P 130.2 101 ro)
2. нєсіоур єтємйтоу-ѱнре м̄мау н̄тєтсарх̄ (IV 31)
3. пєтємйтаф-пѱнре мйтаф-пєіѡтємйтаф-пєіѡт де мйтаф-ноутє м̄мау (A II 384)
   {NB: пєтємйтаф- determinated relative: "he who ..."; so too in text 4}
4. пєтєоуйтф̄-ϩоєітє сйтє мареф†-оуєі м̄пєтємйтаф аүѡ пєтєоуйтф̄-оуоєік мареqеіре он ϩінаі (Ch. 55, cf. Lc. 3:11)

(c) Preterite:

1. ⲛⲉⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲁϥ ⲉⲧ (III 78)

14 PRESENTATIVE (DEICTIC-EXISTENTIAL) CLAUSES: ⲉⲓⲥ-, ⲉⲓⲥ-ϩⲏⲏⲧⲉ "Here is ..."

(a) # ⲉⲓⲥ- + noun syntagm (+ adverb/circumstantial/relative) #, # ⲉⲓⲥ-ϩⲏⲏⲧⲉ (rarely ⲉⲓⲥ-) + clause #

(b) # ⲉⲓⲥ- + expression of time: "prepositional" ⲉⲓⲥ, "for" (with the present tense in the 1st person in Coptic, corresponding to the Present Perfect Progressive in English, "have been ...-ing"

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

STERN par. 529; STEINDORFF parr. 214-215; TILL par. 387; VERGOTE par. 182; LAMBDIN par. 28.2; SHISHA-HALEVY, "Existential Statements"

(a)

1. ⲉⲓⲥ-ⲟⲩⲣⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲟ ⲙ̄ⲡⲟⲟⲩ ϩⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲡⲟⲗⲓⲥ ... (IV 25)
2. ⲉⲓⲥ-ⲟⲩⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲭⲁⲭⲉ ⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ ϩⲉⲛⲉⲓⲟⲧⲉ ⲙⲛ̄ϩⲉⲛⲥⲛⲏⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ϩⲉⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲩⲭⲱ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲥ ⲭⲉ-ⲁⲛⲟⲛ-ⲛⲁⲡⲉⲭ̄ⲥ̄ (III 74)
   {NB: ⲉⲩⲭⲱ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲥ adnominal circumstantial qualifying ϩⲉⲛ-: "Who say"}
3. ⲉⲡⲙⲁ ⲛ̄ⲧⲧⲁⲓⲃⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲩⲕⲁ-ⲙⲱⲩⲥⲛⲥ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧⲥ̄ ⲉⲓⲥ-ⲡⲟⲩⲟⲙϥ̄ ⲉ-ⲧⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ ⲙⲛ̄ⲡⲧⲁⲫⲟⲥ ⲉⲧⲧⲁⲓⲏⲩ ⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲩⲕⲁⲡⲉⲭ̄ⲥ̄ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧϥ̄ (III 94)
   {NB: ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ, ⲉⲧⲧⲁⲓⲏⲩ relative present forms (qualifying ⲡⲟⲩⲟⲙϥ̄ and ⲡⲧⲁⲫⲟⲥ) predicating the statives ⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ, "which is holy", ⲧⲁⲓⲏⲩ "which is precious"}
4. ⲉⲓⲥϩⲏⲏⲧⲉ ⲃⲉ ⲁⲧⲉⲡⲗⲁⲛⲏ ⲛ̄ⲛ̄ⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲟⲩⲱⲛϩ̄ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ (Orig. 413)
5. ⲡⲱⲱⲗ ⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲩϫⲟⲟⲥ ϫⲉⲁⲩⲁⲁϥ ⲛⲁⲛ ⲉⲓⲥϩⲏⲏⲛⲉ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲧⲛ̄ϩⲁⲣⲉϩ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ϩⲁⲧⲏⲛ (III 89)
   {NB: although ⲉⲓⲥ-ϩⲏⲏⲧⲉ seems to have been generalized for all genders/numbers, ϩⲏⲏⲛⲉ replaces ϩⲏⲏⲧⲉ here with a 3rd plural presented pronoun}
6. ⲉⲓⲥ-ⲡⲁⲓ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲱⲓ (III 166)
7. ⲉⲓⲥⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲁϥⲉⲓ (A I 54)
8. ⲉⲓⲥⲡϫⲱϩⲙ̄ ⲙⲛ̄ⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲉⲓⲥ ⲡⲕⲱϩⲧ̄ ⲛ̄ⲧⲣⲉϩⲉⲛⲛⲁ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛ̄ⲕⲟⲗⲁⲥⲓⲥ ⲛ̄ⲱⲁⲉⲛⲉϩ (Ch. 171)

(b)

1. ⲧⲙⲟⲕⲙⲉⲕ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲓ ⲉⲓⲥ-ϩⲉⲛⲣⲟⲙⲡⲉ (IV 172)

{NB: †ⲙⲟⲕⲙⲉⲕ present form (section 15.1) "I have been considering, pondering"}

2. ⲉⲓⲥ-ϩⲟⲩⲟ ⲉⲥⲉ ⲛ̄ⲣⲟⲙⲡⲉ †ⲱⲱ ϩⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲩⲁⲅⲅⲉⲗⲓⲟⲛ (P 130.5 79 1)
{NB: †ⲱⲱ present "I have been reading"

3. ⲉⲓⲥ-ⲱⲟⲙⲧⲉ ⲛ̄ⲣⲟⲙⲡⲉ †ⲛⲏⲩ ⲉⲓⲱⲓⲛⲉ (Ch. 173)
{NB: †ⲛⲏⲩ present, predicating a stative (section 16.1): "I have been going"; ⲉⲓⲱⲓⲛⲉ circumstantial present (section 15.1.1) "I searching"}

UNIT (IV): THE DURATIVE ("BIPARTITE") CONJUGATION
(sections 15-18)

15.1 The PRESENT: durative infinitive rheme: personal pronoun, Proper Name, demonstrative or **definite** nominal theme-actor
15.1.1 Conversions
15.2 The EXISTENTIAL PRESENT: durative infinitive rheme, an **indefinite** nominal (indef. or zero-determinated) or pronominal theme-actor
15.2.1 Conversions

16.1 The PRESENT: stative verbal rheme, personal pronoun, Proper Name, demonstrative or **definite** nominal theme-actor
16.1.1 Conversions
16.2 The EXISTENTIAL PRESENT: stative verbal predicate, an **indefinite** nominal (indef. or zero-determinated) or pronominal theme-actor
16.2.1 Conversions

17.1 The PRESENT-BASED FUTURE: personal pronoun, Proper Name, demonstrative or **definite** nominal theme-actor
17.1.1 Conversions
17.2 The EXISTENTIAL PRESENT-BASED FUTURE, an **indefinite** nominal (indef. or zero-determinated) or pronominal actor
17.2.1 Conversions

(*) **18.** Assorted durative examples: stative *vs.* infinitive. The STERNJERNSTEDT rule (direct object of the durative infinitive).

15-19 THE DURATIVE ("BIPARTITE") CONJUGATION (Table F)

This PRESENT-TENSE conjugation pattern combines a Proper Name, **definite** noun, demonstrative or personal pronoun (*prefix*-pronoun, Table A 5b) as theme (subject) and actor, with a situational verbal rheme (predicate): the DURATIVE INFINITIVE (15), e.g. "in the action or course of hearing" (cf. English "writing" as in "He is writing"); or with the STATIVE (16), a special form expressing (for transitive verbs) passive state (cf. "broken", "written" as in "It is written"). For intransitives

(e.g. verbs denoting movement, posture, condition or quality), the stative conveys the condition of being in action or state ("I am coming", "The boy is thirsty") and replaces the durative infinitive as the normal rheme in the durative conjugation. A certain stative (ⲛⲁ, "being in the course of going") is used as auxiliary with the lexical infinitive, forming a compound future (17). An ADVERB is a third word-class predicated in the durative conjugation (19): "I am here", "God is in this house". Like another major non-verbal clause pattern, namely the Nominal Sentence, the durative conjugation is negatived by (ⲙ̄ⲛ̄-)……ⲁⲛ, enveloping the negatived clause.

In the case of **indefinite** actor nouns and pronouns, the durative conjugation is combined with the existential (affirmative) ⲟⲩⲛ̄- or (negative), (ⲙ̄)ⲙⲛ̄- constituting existential durative predications.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

STERN, parr. 366, 371, STEINDORFF parr. 311-312, 316-317, 418; TILL parr. 251-252, VERGOTE par. 158; LAMBDIN par. 24.2; POLOTSKY, "Conjugation System" parr. 5-9, 19-24, 28-29

15.1 THE PRESENT: DURATIVE INFINITIVE RHEME, personal pronoun, proper name, demonstrative or definite nominal theme-actor (Table F1)

Negation: ⲛ̄- … ⲁⲛ or … ⲁⲛ

NB (the so-called STERN-JERNSTEDT RULE):
The definite, indefinite or pronominal direct object of the durative infinitive is normally introduced by the preposition ⲛ̄-/ⲙ̄ⲙⲟ- and not attached directly to prenominal (construct) or pronominal forms of the infinitive (ⲧⲙⲉ ⲙ̄-ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ "I love God" ⲧⲙⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟ-ⲥ "I love him"). The verb "want, desire" is a unique exception ("I want them", ⲧⲟⲩⲁϣ-ⲟⲩ). On the other hand, zero-article objects are as a rule attached to the prenominal form: ⲥⲟⲩⲉⲙ-ⲁⲥ "He eats meat".

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STERN parr. 490, 492, 494; STEINDORFF parr. 311-312, 316-317, 392; TILL parr. 2, 258-261; VERGOTE parr. 118(1), 186; LAMBDIN parr. 18.1, 24.2, 26.1; POLOTSKY, "Conjugation System" parr. 5-9, 19-24; YOUNG, "Present I"; * SHISHA-HALEVY, Chapter 3

1. ⲧⲛⲁⲩ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲭⲉ-ⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲉϣ-ⲙⲟⲟϣⲉ (Ch. 125)
   [OBS. -ⲟⲩⲉϣⲙⲟⲟϣⲉ the direct object (of ⲟⲩⲱϣ) is here the infinitive ⲙⲟⲟϣⲉ]

2. ⲥⲉⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲭⲉ-ⲁⲗⲁⲑⲟⲛ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲛⲟⲩϥ ⲛⲉ (III 72)
   [OBS. Note the plural treatment of the noun syntagm with ⲛⲓⲙ]
3. ⲥⲉⲣ̄ⲱⲁ̀ ⲥⲉⲟⲩⲱⲙ ⲥⲉⲥⲱ (IV 22)
   [OBS. Note the asyndetic (conjunction-less) coordination, common in cases of enumeration]
4. ⲕⲧⲱⲣⲡ̄ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩⲕ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲉ (Ch. 41)
5. ⲧⲉϣⲓ-ⲟⲉⲓⲕ ⲙⲉⲛ ϩⲛ̄ⲧⲙⲁϣⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲧⲉⲟⲩⲱⲙ (III 202)
   [OBS. Note the zero-determinated object, which enters the immediate direct-object construction in the present]
6. ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲣⲓⲭⲓ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲕⲥϩⲁⲓ ϣⲟⲣⲡ̄ ⲙⲉⲛ ⲧⲛ̄ϣⲡ̄-ϩⲙⲟⲧ ⲛ̄ⲧⲙ̄-ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲭⲉ-ⲥⲉⲙⲟⲕⲙⲉⲕ ⲉϩⲉⲛⲡⲉⲑⲟⲟⲩ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲣⲟⲓ (Wess. 9 103)
   {NB: ϩⲉⲛⲡⲉⲑⲟⲟⲩ nominalized relative (ⲡⲉⲧ-, section 31.1.1) with the indefinite article: "(thing)s that are evil"}
7. ⲟⲩⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲥ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡⲉϥⲭ̄ⲥ̄ ⲫⲙⲉ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉϥⲃⲓⲭ ⲫⲙⲟⲥⲧⲉ ⲁⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲃⲉ (IV 1)
8. ⲧⲱϣ ϩⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲩⲁⲅⲅⲉⲗⲓⲟⲛ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲓⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓϣ ⲧⲏⲣ̄ϥ̄ ⲉⲓⲥ-ϩⲟⲩⲟ ⲉⲥⲉ ⲛⲣⲟⲙⲡⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲧϣⲁⲭⲉ ⲛϩⲏⲧⲟⲩ ⲉⲓⲥϩⲟⲩⲟ ⲉϩⲙⲉ-ϣⲟⲙⲧⲉ (III 218)
   {NB: ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ relative present predicating the stative; "which is holy}
9. ⲧⲉⲧ ⲛ̄ϩⲧⲏ ⲉⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁⲡⲁⲓ ϫⲟⲟϥ (A I 120)
10. ⲓⲥ̄ ⲟⲛ ⲣⲱϣⲉ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ (Ch. 39)
11. ⲧⲉⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲛ̄ⲧ-ⲱⲓ ⲉⲡⲟⲩϣⲗⲏⲗ ⲙ̄ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲩⲙⲉⲗⲉⲧⲏ ... ⲧⲉⲣ̄ⲛⲟⲃⲉ ϩⲱⲱϥ ⲁϫⲛ̄ⲱⲓ ⲙ̄ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲧ-ⲧ-ⲥⲟ ϩⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲧϩⲟⲧⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲡ-ϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ (III 202)
12. ⲧⲱⲓⲡⲉ ⲉϣⲁϫⲉ ϫⲉ-ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲥ ⲁⲛ (Ch. 116)
13. ⲧⲉⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲁⲛ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ (Z 186 257)
14. ⲙⲛ̄ⲛⲥⲁ-ⲛⲁⲓ ⲧⲉⲡⲓⲕⲁⲗⲉⲓ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲣⲉ ⲉϫⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲯⲩⲭⲏ ϫⲉ-ⲛ̄ⲧϫⲓ-ⲃⲟⲗ ⲁⲛ (P 130.4 8 92)
15. ⲛ̄ⲧⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲕ ⲁⲛ ϫⲉⲛ̄ⲧⲕ̄-ⲛⲓⲙ (P 130.4 88 ro)
16. ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲧⲛ̄ⲣϩⲟⲧⲉ ⲁⲛ (IV 21)
17. ⲁⲛⲟⲛ ⲧⲛ̄ⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲁⲛ ⲛ̄ⲗⲗⲁⲩ (Ch. 68)
18. ⲙ̄ⲡϣⲏⲣⲉ ⲣ̄ⲗⲗⲁⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲉϫⲙ̄-ⲡⲉⲓⲱⲧ (A II 519)
19. ⲉϣϫⲉ-ⲛ̄ⲃⲁⲗ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲃⲱϣⲧ̄ ϩⲙ̄ⲙⲁ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲉϫⲛ̄-ⲛⲉⲧϩⲟⲟⲩ ⲙⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲧⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲁϣ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟϥ ⲛ̄ϩⲉ ⲛϥ̄ⲃⲱϣⲧ̄ ⲁⲛ ⲉϫⲛ̄ⲛⲓⲛⲟⲃ ⲛ̄ϣⲧⲟⲣⲧⲣ̄ (Ch. 96)
    {NB: ⲛⲉⲧϩⲟⲟⲩ, ⲛⲉⲧⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲟⲩ: determinated relative forms (present and Adjective Verb respectively): "these that are evil", "these that are good"}

20. ⲛ̄ϣϣⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲉϣⲗⲏⲗ ⲉⲡⲉⲭ̄ⲥ ⲭⲉⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲩ ϩⲱⲱⲩ ⲩϣⲗⲏⲗ (Wess. 9 143)
{NB: ⲛ̄- ... ⲁⲛ negatives ϣ̄ϣⲉ, originally ⲥϣⲉ: "it is (not) fitting, right"}
21. ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲱϣ ⲁⲛ ⲭⲉⲑⲁⲏ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲟⲛ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲁⲥϩⲱⲛ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ (III 192)
{NB: rhetorical question: "Don't you ...?}
22. ⲩⲭⲱ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲥ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲩⲁⲅⲅⲉⲗⲓⲟⲛ ⲛ̄ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲓⲱϩⲁⲛⲛⲏⲥ ⲭⲉ-ⲩⲓ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲧⲛⲃⲁⲗ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲛⲉⲭⲱⲣⲁ ⲭⲉ-ⲏⲁⲏ ⲁⲩⲟⲩⲃⲁϣ ⲉⲟϩⲥⲟⲩ (III 58)
23. ⲡⲗⲟⲅⲟⲥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲧⲙⲉ ⲁϣⲁϩⲟⲙ (III 193)
24. ⲡϣⲁⲭⲉ ⲙⲟⲕϩ̄ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲛⲟⲉⲓ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲩ (III 197)

15.1. THE DURATIVE INFINITIVE PREDICATION CONVERTED (see Tables F1, G):

(a) Circumstantial ⲉ-: ⲉⲩⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ / ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄
Negatived ⲉ(ⲛ)ⲩⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ / ⲉⲙⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ, ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ
"He/the man (not) hearing" (also adnominal; 27-30)

(b) Relative ⲉⲧ- ⲉⲧⲉ-: ⲉⲧⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ (ⲉⲧ(ϥ̄)ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ...) / ⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ...
Negatived ⲉⲧⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ (ⲉⲧⲉⲛϥ̄ⲥⲱⲧⲙ ⲁⲛ ...) / ⲉⲧⲉⲙ̄ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ ..., ⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ ...
"who is (not) hearing" "whom (he/you/the man) is/are (not) hearing" (31-33)

(c) Second Tense (Second Present) ⲉ-: ⲉⲩⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ / ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄
Negatived (ⲛ)ⲉⲩⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ... ⲁⲛ / (ⲛ)ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ... ⲁⲛ
"(It is) (not) ... that he/the man is hearing" (34-38)

(d) Preterite ⲛⲉ-: ⲛⲉⲩⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ (... ⲡⲉ) / ⲛⲉⲣⲉⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ (... ⲡⲉ)
Negatived ⲛⲉⲩⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ (... ⲡⲉ) / ⲛⲉⲣⲉⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ (... ⲡⲉ)
"He/the man was (not) hearing"; also in hypothetical (remote) condition (39-41)

NB: (1) Following the converters, the pronominal themes are not prefix-pronouns as in the basic (unconverted) present, but suffix pronouns (Table A5b)

(2) With the 2nd sgl. fem. pronoun (i.e. zero), the converters have the same form as with a nominal theme: ⲉⲣⲉ, ⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉ-, ⲉⲣⲉ-, ⲛⲉⲣⲉ- or (for the relative) a special form ⲉⲧⲉ-.

(3) Relative, 1st sgl ϵ†- = ϵτ-ι- (not *ϵτ- + †-!): see (1).

(4) Note the two forms of the negatived relative (according to the negativer: ⲛ̄- ... ⲁⲛ or ... ⲁⲛ): ϵⲧϵⲛⲭ̄ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ ϵⲧⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ / ϵⲧϵⲙ̄ⲡⲣⲱⲙϵ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ, ϵⲧϵⲣϵⲡⲣⲱⲙϵ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ. Similarly (circumstantial, prenominal): ϵⲙⲡⲣⲱⲙϵ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ, ϵⲣϵⲡⲣⲱⲙϵ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ

(5) Note the difference between the circumstantial negatived present: ϵ-ⲛ-ⲭ̄-ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ / ϵ-ⲙ-ⲡⲣⲱⲙϵ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ
and the negatived Second Present: ⲛ-ϵ-ⲭ̄-ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ / ⲛ-ϵⲣϵ-ⲡⲣⲱⲙϵ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

STERN parr. 373, 391, 416-417, 428-429; STEINDORFF parr. 329, 376, 459-460, 462, 466; TILL parr. 317, 329, 465-466, 470-471, 473; VERGOTE parr. 163(1), 164(1), 165(1), 166(1,3,4), 167(1,2,4); POLOTSKY, "Conjugation System" parr. 10-18, * *Nom. Transposition* parr. 11, 13-14; * FUNK, "Qualitativ"

(a) Circumstantial:

1. ⲙ̄ⲡⲣ̄ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲭ ϵⲣⲟⲓ ϵⲓⲭⲱ ⲛ̄ⲛⲁⲓ (Ch. 102)
   {NB: ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲭ particle, not personal pronoun or augens}
2. †ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ϩⲟⲓⲛϵ ϵⲩⲁⲱⲁϩⲟⲙ ⲁⲩⲱ †ⲛⲁⲩ ϵϩϵⲛⲕⲟⲟⲩϵ ϵⲩⲣⲓⲙϵ (Ch. 201)
3. ϵϵⲥⲱⲃϵ ⲛ̄ⲥⲱⲭ ⲛ̄ⲟⲓⲛ̄ⲁⲁⲓⲙⲟⲛⲓⲟⲛ ϵⲛⲭ̄ⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲁⲛ (RE 10 164)
4. ⲱⲁⲩⲱⲱⲱⲧ ϵⲃⲟⲗ ϵⲩⲕⲱ ⲙ̄ⲡϵⲛϩⲥⲛⲟⲭ ϵϩⲣⲁⲓ ϵⲭⲱⲛ (Ch. 90)
5. ⲁⲓⲛⲁⲩ ϵⲩⲣⲁⲥⲟⲩ ϵⲣϵⲛⲓⲙ ⲙⲛ̄-ⲛⲓⲙ ⲱⲱⲗ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ ϩⲣⲁⲓ ϩⲛ̄ϩⲱⲃ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲙ̄ⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲛ (IV 125)
   {NB: ϵⲩ- = ϵ-ⲟⲩ-, not circumstantial converter but prepositional phrase}
6. ⲁϥⲱⲱⲭϵ ⲛⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲓ ϵϥⲟⲩⲱⲱ ϵⲣⲃⲟⲗ (III 39)
7. ⲙ̄ⲡⲣ̄ⲃⲛ̄-ⲁⲣⲓⲕϵ ϵⲓⲭⲱ ⲛⲁⲕ ⲛ̄ⲧⲙϵ (Ch. 103)
8. ⲕⲁⲛ ϵⲩⲛ̄ⲕⲟⲧⲕ̄ ϵⲣϵⲡⲟⲩⲟϵⲓⲛ ⲭϵⲣⲟ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲓ ⲱⲁⲩⲕⲟⲧⲟⲩ ϵⲡⲁ-ϩⲟⲩ (IV 25)
9. ⲱⲁⲣϵⲙϵⲗϵⲧⲁ ϵⲣϵⲙⲟⲟⲩϣϵ ϵⲡⲓⲥⲁ ⲙⲛ̄ⲡⲁⲓ (III 203)
   {NB: 2nd sgl. fem. actor}
10. ϵⲥⲡϵⲓⲃϵ ⲙⲛ̄ⲡⲁⲓ ⲁⲩⲱ ϵⲥⲥⲩⲙⲫⲟⲛⲉⲓ ⲛⲙ̄ⲙⲁϥ ϩⲛ̄ϩⲱⲃ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲛ̄ⲁⲅⲁ-ⲑⲟⲛ ϵⲛⲥϵⲱⲡ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟϥ ⲁⲛ ϩⲱⲥ-ⲱⲙ̄ⲙⲟ ϵⲣⲟⲟⲩ (III 135)
11. ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲥ̄-ⲧϵϫⲟⲩⲥⲓⲁ ϵⲕⲱⲛⲥ̄ ⲏ ϵⲧⲙ̄ⲕⲱⲛⲥ̄ ϵⲩⲕϵⲗϵⲩϵ ⲛⲁⲥ ⲁⲛ (IV 13)
12. ⲡϵϫⲡⲓⲟ ⲛ̄ⲛ̄ⲱⲁϫϵ ⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲓⲁⲑⲏⲕⲏ ⲛ̄ⲃⲣ̄ⲣϵ ϵⲣϵⲡϫⲟϵⲓⲥ ϫⲱ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲥ ϫϵ ... (III 65)

13. ⲛ̄ⲑⲉ ⲉⲧⲉⲱⲁⲛⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ϩⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲛⲃⲁⲗ ⲉⲩϩⲙⲟⲟⲥ ϩⲁϩⲧⲏⲛ ⲉⲩⲙⲉ-ⲧⲁⲛⲟⲉⲓ ⲉⲣⲉⲛⲉⲩⲣⲙ̄ⲉⲓⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲱⲟⲩⲟ ⲉⲡⲉⲥⲏⲧ (III 149)
{NB: ⲣⲙ̄ⲉⲓⲟⲟⲩⲉ plural of ⲣⲙ̄ⲉⲓⲏ}

(b) Relative:

1. ⲡϩⲱⲃ ⲉⲧⲣ̄ϩⲱⲃ ⲉⲣⲟϥ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲏⲓ (IV 163)
2. ⲡⲙⲁ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲃⲱⲱⲧ̄ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲛⲧⲟ̄ϥ (III 115)
3. ⲛⲉϩⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲛ̄ⲥⲓⲱⲉ ⲉⲧⲉⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲕⲁⲕⲉ (III 200)
{NB: ⲉⲧⲉ- a variant form of ⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉ- with the 2nd sgl. fem. zero pronoun}
4. ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲛ̄ⲥⲉⲱⲙ̄ⲱⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲛ̄ϩⲉⲛⲕⲉⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ (Ch. 109)
5. ⲛ̄ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲧⲉⲛ̄ⲥⲉⲣ̄ⲱⲁⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲧⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲣⲟ ⲛ̄ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲩⲉ ⲥⲉⲣ̄ⲱⲁⲩ ⲙ̄ⲡ-ⲕⲱϩⲧ̄ ⲛ̄ⲧⲧⲉϩⲉⲛⲛⲁ (Ch. 113)
6. ⲛⲉⲧⲟⲩⲉⲱ-ⲣ̄ⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲙ̄ⲛⲛⲉⲧⲟⲩⲉⲱ-ⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲁⲛ (Ch. 67)
7. ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲧϯ ⲉⲙⲛⲥⲉ ... ⲧⲙⲛⲥⲉ ⲉⲧⲃ̄ⲱⲱⲧ̄ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲛⲧⲥ̄ (III 65)
8. ⲛⲉⲕⲕⲉⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲥⲉⲃⲛⲥ ⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲣ̄ⲭⲣⲓⲁ ⲁⲛ ⲛ̄ϫⲟⲟⲩ ⲟⲩⲁ ⲟⲩⲁ (Ch. 34)
9. ⲡⲟⲩⲱⲱ ⲙ̄ⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲛ ⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉⲛ̄ⲇⲁⲓⲙⲱⲛ ⲙⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟϥ (Ch. 74)
10. ⲥⲟⲩⲛ̄-ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉⲡⲉ$\overline{\text{ⲭⲥ}}$ ⲱⲁϫⲉ ⲛ̄ϩⲛⲧⲟⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲩⲱⲁϫⲉ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲉ$\overline{\text{ⲭⲥ}}$ ⲙ̄ⲛⲛⲉⲧⲱⲁϫⲉ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲇⲓⲁⲃⲟⲗⲟⲥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲇⲓⲁⲃⲟⲗⲟⲥ ⲱⲁϫⲉ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛ̄ϩⲛⲧⲟⲩ (Wess. 9 142)
{NB: the circumstantial "carries on" the relative conversion}
11. ⲛ̄ⲱⲁϫⲉ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲉⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ (A I 157)
{NB: ⲉⲧⲉ-: relative converter with a 2nd sgl. fem. actor pronoun}

(c) Second Present:

1. ⲉⲩⲱⲱⲱⲧ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲛ̄ⲇⲁⲓⲙⲟⲛⲓⲟⲛ (A I 380)
{NB: the preposition ⲛ̄- ("to") put in focus by the Second Present: "It is to ... that ..."}
2. ⲙⲏ ⲛⲉⲛⲱⲱ ⲁⲛ ⲛ̄ⲛⲓⲅⲣⲁⲫⲏ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲱⲧ (A I 183)
{NB: the preposition ⲛ̄- (/ⲙ̄ⲙⲟ-), the direct object mark, put in focus by the Second Present; a rhetorical question}
3. ⲉⲣⲉⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲣ̄ϩⲟⲧⲉ ⲁⲛ ϩⲏⲧⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲫⲛⲁⲁϫⲉ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ϩⲛⲧ$\overline{\text{ⲥ}}$ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲫ-ⲙⲁⲧⲟⲩ (Ch. 30)
{NB: ϩⲛⲧ- ⲛ̄- put in focus}
4. ⲛⲁⲓ ⲙⲛ̄ⲛⲓⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲉⲩϫⲱ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲏⲧⲛ̄ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲏⲧⲟⲩ ⲁⲛ (Ch. 91)
{NB: ⲉⲧⲃⲉ- put in focus}
5. ⲉⲩⲃⲁⲥⲁⲛⲓⲍⲉ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲡϫⲓⲛϫⲏ ⲁⲛ (A II 312)
{NB: ⲉⲡϫⲓⲛϫⲏ put in focus, and negated by ⲁⲛ}

(d) Preterite:

1. ⲛⲉⲓⲙⲟⲕⲙⲉⲕ ⲅⲁⲣ ϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧ ⲭⲉ-ⲟⲩⲁⲧⲃⲟⲙ ⲡⲉ (III 39)
2. ⲛⲉⲓⲭⲓ-ⲯⲟⲭⲛⲉ ⲛⲁⲓ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲧ ⲭⲉ-ⲛ̄ⲛⲁⲯⲱⲡⲉ ⲟⲛ-ⲛ̄ⲥⲕⲁⲛⲇⲁⲗⲟⲛ ⲛ̄ⲛⲁⲓ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲓⲙⲓⲛⲉ (III 147)
   {NB: ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲧ 1st sgl. suffix -ⲧ following the final double vowel (indicating a laryngal consonant) of the reinforcer (augens) ⲙⲁⲩ-ⲁⲁ-; ⲛ̄ⲛⲁ- 1st sgl. form of the negative optative}
3. ⲛⲉⲫⲣ̄ⲡⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲫⲃ̄ⲃⲓⲟ ⲙ̄ⲙⲓⲛ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲩ (III 95)
4. ⲓⲥⲁⲁⲕ ⲛⲉⲫⲧⲱⲃϩ̄ ⲙ̄ⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲡⲉ ⲉⲫⲟⲩⲱⲯ ⲉⲧⲣⲉϩⲉⲛⲯⲏⲣⲉ ⲯⲱⲡⲉ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩ̄ⲛ̇-ϩⲣⲉⲃⲉⲕⲕⲁ (IV 27)
5. ⲛⲉⲥⲥⲱⲃⲉ ⲏ ⲉⲥⲣⲁⲯⲉ (A I 53)
   {NB: the circumstantial "carrying on" the preterite conversion}
6. ⲉⲛⲉⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲣⲣⲱⲟⲩ ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲧⲛⲁⲣϩⲟⲧⲉ ϩⲏⲧⲟⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ (III 88)
   {NB: this is an instance of the hypothetical use of the preterite converter (section 41): a remote-hypothetical (irrealis) supposition and its result clause, ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲧⲛⲁ-, the past future ("you would not be afraid")}

15.2 THE EXISTENTIAL PRESENT: durative infinitive rheme, indefinite (indef. or zero-article) nominal or pronominal theme-actor

ⲟⲩⲛ̄-ⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ/ⲟⲩⲁ/ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "A man/someone is hearing"

Negative (ⲙ̄)ⲙⲛ̄-ⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ/ⲟⲩⲁ/ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "No man/no one is hearing"

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

STERN par. 368; STEINDORFF par. 312; TILL par. 266; VERGOTE par. 158(1); LAMBDIN par. 158(1); POLOTSKY, "Conjugation System" parr. 19-21, 35

1. ⲟⲩⲛ̄-ϩⲉⲛⲙⲏⲏⲯⲉ ⲧ-ⲉⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲁⲛ ϩⲓⲃⲟⲗ (III 199)
2. ⲟⲩⲛ̄ϩⲁϩ ⲧ-ⲥⲃⲱ ϩⲓⲧⲟⲟⲧⲟⲩ ⲙ̄ⲙⲓⲛ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ϩⲓⲧⲙ̄ⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲁⲛ (III 170)
   [OBS. ⲁⲛ negates the adverbial ϩⲓⲧⲙ̄-: "and not ..."]
3. ⲟⲩⲛ̄ϩⲟⲓⲛⲉ ⲯⲧⲟⲣⲧⲣ̄ ⲙ̄ⲙⲱⲧⲛ̄ (Orig. 307)
4. ⲙⲛ̄ⲗⲁⲁⲩ ⲅⲁⲣ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲥⲱⲛⲧ̄ ⲧⲏⲣⲟ̄ ⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲧⲁⲙⲓⲟⲩ ⲯⲓⲃⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲫ-ⲫⲩⲥⲓⲥ ⲉⲓⲙⲏⲧⲓ ⲉⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲩ (P 130.4 104 124)
5. ⲙⲛ̄ⲣ̄ⲣⲟ ⲟⲩⲇⲉ ⲁⲣⲭⲏ ⲙⲛ̄ⲗⲁⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ⲅⲉⲛⲟⲥ ⲛ̄ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲁⲣⲭⲉⲓ ϩⲛ̄ⲙ̄ⲡⲏⲩⲉ ⲛ̄ⲥⲁⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡⲉⲫⲭ̄ⲥ̄ ⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲛ̄ⲧⲡⲉ ⲙⲛ̄ⲡⲕⲁϩ (A I 164)

15.2.1 THE EXISTENTIAL PRESENT: durative infinitive rheme, converted (see Tables Fa, G)

(a) Circumstantial ϵογϩ̄ñ-, ϵγϩ̄ñ- / ϵ(ϻ)ϻ̄ñ-ογρωϻϵ/ογⲁ/ρωϻϵ cωτϻ̄ "A man/no man hearing" (also adnominal; 27-30); also ϵρϵογρωϻϵ cωτϻ̄

(b) Relative ϵτϵογϩ̄ñ- / ϵτϵϻϩ̄ñ-ογρωϻϵ/ογⲁ/ρωϻϵ cωτϻ̄ ... "whom a man/no man is hearing" (31-33); also ϵτϵρϵογρωϻϵ cωτϻ̄ ...

(d) Preterite ϵογϩ̄ñ-, ϵγϩ̄ñ- / ϵϻϩ̄ñ-ογρωϻϵ/ογⲁ/ρωϻϵ cωτϻ̄ "A man/no man was hearing", also in hypothetical (remote) condition (39-41); also ϵρϵογρωϻϵ cωτϻ̄

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

TILL par. 327; VERGOTE parr. 164(1), 165(1), 166(3,4), 167(2,3); POLOTSKY, "Conjugation System" parr. 33-35

(a) Circumstantial:

1. ογρωϻϵ ϵqϻογϩ ϵπογϵ ϩ ñτοq ϵογϩ̄ϩϵnkooγϵ ϭωψ̄ϯ ϵϩογn ϵϩραq (III 116)
   {NB: both circumstantial forms are here adnominal, qualifying ογρωϻϵ; ϵϩραq see ϵϩρñ-}
2. ⲁιϵι ϵϩρⲁι ϵγϻñτϭωϐ ϵϻñρωϻϵ cooγn ϵιϻητι ϵροκ ϻⲁγⲁⲁκ (Wess. 9 154)
3. ογ τϵ †ρηnη ñϩϵnρωϻϵ ñnⲁϩρϻ̄-ϖnογτϵ ϵρϵnϵγϻñτⲁκⲁ-ϑⲁρτοc ϩηϖ ⲁn ϵnϵγϵρηγ ϵϻϻñογⲁ χϖιο ñογⲁ (Ch. 168f.)
   {NB: †ρηnη = τ-ϵιρηnη; ϵρϵ-, ϵϻϻñ- adnominal circumstantial present, predicating a stative form (section 16.1.1): "whose acts of impurity are not hidden"}
4. τⲁι τϵ ϑϵ ϵψⲁcψωϖϵ ϩ̄ñϩⲁϩ ϻ̄ϻⲁ ϵρϵϩⲁϩ ϵxñτϻñτⲁcϵ-ϐnc (III 40)

(b) Relative:

1. ϖϩωϐ ϵτϵογñϩⲁϩ nογxϵ ϻ̄ϻοq ϵπⲁϩογ ϻ̄ϻοογ ϵτϐϵϩομ̄τ (Ch. 85)
2. ñϑϵ γⲁρ ϵτϵογñϩⲁϩ κτο ϻ̄ϻοογ ϵϐολ ϩ̄ϖπκⲁκϵ ϵπογοϵιn κⲁτⲁκⲁιρος nⲁψωογ ον ñϭιnϵτκτο ϻ̄ϻοογ ϵϐολ ϩ̄ϖ-πογοϵιn ϵπκⲁκϵ (Young 4)
   {NB: nⲁψωογ "There are many", Adjective Verb (section 22.2)}
3. πϵχπο ⲇϵ ϵϐολ ϩ̄ϖπιωτ ϵτϵϻñⲁγγϵλοc cooγn ϻ̄ϻοq (Orig. 810)

(d) Preterite:

1. ϩⲁⲙⲟⲓ ⲟⲛ ⲉⲛⲉⲙ̄ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲧⲕ̄ ⲏ ⲧⲁϩⲉ (IV 180)
   {NB: circumstantial preterite, expressing a remote wish (section 41.2): "would that ..."}

16.1 THE PRESENT: STATIVE RHEME, personal pronoun, proper name, demonstrative or definite nominal theme-actor (Table F2; see Table I for the morphology of the stative form)

Negation: ⲙ̄ⲛ̄- ... ⲁⲛ or ... ⲁⲛ

NB: (1) statives of transitive verbs express passive state, and are opposed in the durative present to the durative infinitive of the verb (section 15): ⲥⲱⲧⲡ̄: ⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ "choose" *vs.* "chosen"; ⲉⲓⲣⲉ: ⲟ "do, make" *vs.* "done"; ⲧⲁⲙⲓⲟ: ⲧⲁⲙⲓⲏⲩ "create" *vs.* "created". However, statives of intransitive verbs are mere replacements (alternants) of the infinitive in the durative present: with these verbs (meaning movement, posture, quality) the durative infinitive does not occur. Thus, for example, the stative ⲛⲏⲩ represents in the durative present the verb ⲉⲓ "come/go", ⲡⲏⲧ represents ⲡⲱⲧ "run", etc.

(2) The stative of ⲉⲓⲣⲉ "do, make", ⲟ, is used with ⲙ̄ⲛ̄- + noun (mostly zero-article) to express "be in the status/capacity/circumstance of ...", "have the (non-intrinsic) quality of ..."

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

STERN parr. 348-356; STEINDORFF parr. 316-317; TILL parr. 251, 257; VERGOTE par. 158(1); LAMBDIN parr. 21.2, 22.3, 24.2; POLOTSKY, "Conjugation System" parr. 5-9, 19-22, 24, 28-29

1. ⲡϩⲱⲃ ⲟⲩⲟⲛϩ̄ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ (III 74)
2. ⲥⲉⲥϩⲟⲩⲟⲣⲧ̄ (III 90)
3. ⲧⲛ̄ⲏⲡ ⲉ̄ϩⲏⲕⲉ (Ch. 98)
4. ⲧⲉϩⲕⲁⲉⲓⲧ ⲧⲉⲟⲃⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲟⲉⲓⲕ ⲙⲛ̄ⲡⲙⲟⲟⲩ (III 204)
5. ⲁⲛⲟⲕ †ⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡⲉⲫⲥⲟⲟⲩϩ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ (III 24)
6. †ⲛⲏⲩ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲛⲉⲫⲃⲓϫ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲛⲏⲩ ϩⲱⲧⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ̄ (III 24)
7. ⲧⲛ̄ⲣⲟⲕϩ̄ ⲧⲏⲣⲛ̄ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲛϩⲏⲧ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲧⲛ̄ⲡⲏⲧ ⲛ̄ⲥⲁⲙ̄ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲛⲟⲃ (Ch. 127)
8. ⲡⲉⲧⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲡϩⲱⲃ ϩⲟⲣⲱ̄ ⲛ̄ⲛⲁϩⲣⲁϥ (Ch. 116)
   [OBS. The definite relative ⲡⲉⲧ- is here topicalized, i.e. put outside the main construction as topic or prominent subject; "(as for) him who ..."]
9. ⲙ̄ⲡⲉϥⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ ⲥⲟⲩⲧⲱⲛ ⲁⲛ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ (III 44)

10. ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ ⲡⲁⲓ ⲟ ⲛ̄ⲁⲡⲓⲥⲧⲟⲛ ⲛ̄ⲛⲁϩⲣⲏⲧⲛ̄ (Orig. 390)
11. ⲧⲉⲕⲕⲗⲏⲥⲓⲁ ⲡⲟⲣ̄ⲭ̄ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲧⲥⲟⲫⲓⲁ ⲟⲩⲇⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲥⲟⲫⲓⲁ ⲡⲟⲣ̄ⲭ̄ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲧⲉⲕⲕⲗⲉⲥⲓⲁ (III 54)
12. ⲛ̄ⲧⲛ̄ⲟ ⲁⲛ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲛϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ (Wess. 9 162)
13. ⲥⲉⲟ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲩϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ ... ⲛ̄ⲑⲉ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲣ̄ⲡⲉⲩϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲉⲁⲩⲃⲱⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲓⲧⲟⲟⲧⲛ̄ ... ⲥⲉⲟ ⲟⲛ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲩϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲉⲙⲉⲧⲁⲛⲟⲉⲓ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲙⲁ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧⲕ̄ (III 136)
14. ⲛ̄ⲑⲡⲛⲏⲧ ⲁⲛ ϩⲛⲧⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲛ̄ⲛⲟⲙⲟⲥ (Ch. 95)
15. ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲧⲕ̄ϫⲱ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟϥ ⲧⲟⲟⲙⲉ ⲉⲣⲟⲛ ⲁⲛ (Ch. 95)
    {NB: ⲡⲉⲧ- the definite relative ("that which ...") is here the theme-actor of the durative present, negatived by ⲛ̄- ... ⲁⲛ}
16. ⲡⲉϥⲛⲁ ⲱⲟⲟⲡ̀ ⲱⲗⲉⲛⲉϩ (III 117)
17. ⲛⲉⲩⲏⲓ ⲙⲉϩ ⲛ̄ⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲛ ⲛⲓⲙ (IV 22)
18. ⲁⲛⲟⲕ ⲑⲥⲟⲱⲧ̄ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲑⲧⲃⲁⲓⲏⲩ ⲉⲙⲁⲧⲉ (A II 276)
19. ⲡⲟⲩⲱⲱ ⲙ̄ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲱⲟⲩⲉⲓⲧ (IV 167)
20. ⲛⲉⲓⲱⲁϫⲉ ⲛⲁⲱⲧ̄ (RE 10 159)
21. ⲉⲱϫⲉⲟⲩⲛ̄-ⲕⲉⲕⲟⲥⲙⲟⲥ ⲙ̄ⲡϩⲣⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲓ ⲉⲓⲉ-ⲫⲟ ⲛ̄ⲕⲁⲕⲉ (Orig. 305)

16.1.1 THE STATIVE PREDICATION CONVERTED (see Tables F2, G):

(a) Circumstantial: ⲉ-: ⲉϥⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ / ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄
Negatived ⲉ(ⲛ) ϥⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ ⲁⲛ / ⲉⲙⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ ⲁⲛ, ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ ⲁⲛ
"He/the man (not) being chosen" (also adnominal; 27-30)

(b) Relative ⲉⲧ-, ⲉⲧⲉ-: ⲉⲧⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ (ⲉⲧ(ϥ)ⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ ...) / ⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ ...
Negatived ⲉⲧⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ ⲁⲛ, ⲉⲧⲉⲛϥⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ ⲁⲛ / ⲉⲧⲉⲙ̄ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ ⲁⲛ..., ⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ ⲁⲛ ...
"who is (not) chosen" "(...) whom (he/you/the man) is/are (not) chosen" (31-33)

(c) Second Tense (Second Present) ⲉϥⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ / ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ "(It is ...) that he/the man is chosen" (34-38)
Negatived (ⲛ)ⲉϥⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ ... ⲁⲛ / (ⲛ)ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ ... ⲁⲛ
"(It is) not ... that he/the man is chosen"

(d) Preterite ⲛⲉϥⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ (... ⲡⲉ) / ⲛⲉⲣⲉⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ (... ⲡⲉ)
Negatived ⲛⲉϥⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ ⲁⲛ (... ⲡⲉ) / ⲛⲉⲣⲉⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ ⲁⲛ (... ⲡⲉ)
"He/the man was (not) chosen", also in hypothetical (remote) condition (39-41)

NB: (1) Following the converters, the pronominal themes are not prefix-pronouns as in the basic (unconverted) present, but suffix pronouns (Table A5a)

(2) With the 2nd sgl. fem. pronoun (i.e. zero), the converters have the same form as with a nominal theme: ϵρϵ-, ϵτϵρϵ-, ϵρϵ-, ⲛϵρϵ- or (for the relative) a special form ϵτϵ-.

(3) Relative, 1st sgl ϵ†- = ϵτ-ⲓ- (not *ϵτ- + †-!) (see (1))

(4) Note the two forms of the negatived relative (according to the negativer: ⲙ̄ⲛ̄- ... ⲁⲛ or ... ⲁⲛ): ϵτϵⲛⲉ̄ⲭⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ ⲁⲛ, ϵτⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ ⲁⲛ / ϵτϵⲙ̄ⲡⲣⲱⲙϵ ⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ ⲁⲛ, ϵτϵⲣϵⲡⲣⲱⲙϵ ⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ ⲁⲛ. Similarly for the circumstantial and prenominal.

(5) Note the difference between the circumstantial negatived present: and the negatived Second Present: ϵ-ⲛ-ⲉ̄ⲭ-ⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ ⲁⲛ / ϵ-ⲙ̄-ⲡⲣⲱⲙϵ ⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ ⲁⲛ and ⲛ-ϵ-ⲉ̄ⲭ-ⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ ⲁⲛ / ⲛ-ϵⲣϵ-ⲡⲣⲱⲙϵ ⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ ⲁⲛ respectively.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

STERN parr. 373, 391, 416-417, 428-429; STEINDORFF parr. 329-331, 376, 457, 462, 466; TILL parr. 317, 329, 470-471, 465-466, 473; VERGOTE parr. 163(1), 164(1), 165(1), 166(1,3), 167(1,2); LAMBDIN parr. 19.1, 24.1-2; POLOTSKY, "Conjugation System" parr. 10-18

(a) Circumstantial:

1. ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲉⲭⲕⲏ ϩⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲙⲁ ⲉⲛⲉ̄ⲟ́ⲩⲟⲛϩ̄ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ (Ch. 110)
2. †ⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩϩⲱⲃ ⲉⲛⲉ̄ϩⲏ̆ⲡ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲛⲥⲁⲃⲉⲉⲩ (Ch. 33)
3. ⲥⲉⲭⲱ ⲛ̄ϩⲉⲛⲱⲁⲭⲉ ⲉⲩⲥⲙⲟⲛⲧ̄ (Orig. 384)
4. ⲛ̄ⲱ̄ⲱⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲭⲓ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲙⲩⲥⲧⲏⲣⲓⲟⲛ ⲉⲣⲉⲡϩⲏⲧ ⲙⲉϩ ⲛ̄ⲟⲉⲓⲕ (Ch. 51)
5. ⲏ ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲃⲟⲙ ⲉⲛⲉϩ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲱⲧ ⲙ̄ⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲥ ⲉⲙⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲱⲟⲟⲡ ⲛⲙ̄ⲙⲁϥ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲭⲓ-ⲟⲩⲛⲟⲃ ⲙ̄ⲙⲏⲏⲱⲉ ⲛ̄ⲃⲟⲛⲥ̄ ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲱⲟⲟⲡ ⲛⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ϩⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲩϩⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲛ̄ⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲥⲩⲛⲏ (III 134)

(b) Relative:

1. ⲡⲙⲁ ⲉⲧⲉ̄ⲟⲩⲛϩ ⲛ̄ϩⲛⲧⲉ̄ (IV 121)
2. ⲧⲉⲥⲃⲱ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲟⲭ ⲡⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲧⲭⲏⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲱⲃ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲛ̄ⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲛ (Wess. 9 141)
3. ⲛⲓⲙⲟⲃ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲟⲱ ⲉⲧⲛⲏⲩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲛ̄ⲣⲱⲕ ⲉⲛⲏ̄ⲧⲥⲟ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲛⲁⲩ-ⲧⲟⲩ ϩⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲕⲃⲟⲙ ⲧⲏⲣⲥ̄ (Ch. 29)
   {NB: ⲟⲱ: see ⲁⲱⲁⲓ; ⲛⲁⲩⲧⲟⲩ: see ⲛⲓⲫⲉ}
4. ⲛ̄ⲣⲁⲛ ⲉⲧⲭⲟⲥⲉ (Ch. 127)
5. ⲡⲱⲁⲭⲉ ⲉⲧⲥⲏ (III 153)

6. пхі ⲛ̄бонс етерепτωрп̄ ϩотр̄ ⲛ̄ⲙ̄ⲙаϥ (IV 1)
7. нетеренеγбіх меϩ ебол ⲛ̄ϩητоγ аγω еренеγτннбе τолⲙ̄ ебол ⲙ̄ⲙооγ аγω етнаγ ϩрооγ ϩⲛ̄неγваλ (Wess. 9 108)
   {NB: the circumstantial, coordinated by аγω, "carries on" the relative conversion}
8. пето ⲛ̄ⲁτнаϩτе (Orig. 353)
9. ⲛ̄θе етоγо ⲙ̄ⲙос (Ch. 10)
   {NB: о ⲙ̄ⲙо- is the pronominal construction of о ⲛ̄-}
10. таі он τе θе етео ⲛ̄ⲁτнаϩτе (A I 446)
    {NB: етео: rel. 2nd sgl. fem. + stative}

(c) Second Present:

1. неγноγτе ан пе ⲓ̄ⲥ̄ аλλа εγо ⲛ̄ϩⲙ̄ϩаλ ⲙ̄пмаммωнас (Ch. 109f.)
   {NB: ⲛ̄- is put in focus: "It is ... that ..."}
2. ерειоγдас ψооп τωн τеноγ (A II 53)
   {NB: τωн is in focus}
3. аγхоос хе-еqϩкаειт (Ch. 81)
   {NB: ϩкаειт the stative of ϩко is emphasized (put in focus)}
4. εγψобе τеноγ ероq ϩⲛ̄оγ (A II 540)
   {NB: ϩⲛ̄-оγ is in focus}
5. εqо ⲛ̄роογψ наγ ⲛ̄оγнр (III 110)
   {NB: ⲛ̄оγнр is in focus}
6. еремокϩ̄ ноγ ⲛ̄ⲙ̄ⲙас (A I 69)
   {NB: ⲛ̄-оγ is in focus}

(d) Preterite:

1. неⲛмотⲛ̄ пе ϩⲙ̄пма ентаⲛеі ⲛ̄ϩητq̄ (III 121)
   {NB: пе often accompanies the preterite conversion, apparently marking its clause as background for the adjacent context}
2. неγψооп ϩⲛ̄ϩентамеіон εγмеϩ ⲛ̄оγоеін (III 48)
3. ⲛ̄рωме ⲛ̄содома мⲛ̄гоморра неγψаат ан ⲛ̄ⲗаау пе аλλа неⷯγоγоолє пе аγω неγспаταλλа ϩⲙ̄псі ⲙ̄поеік аγω етвенеγнове аγроκϩоγ ϩноγψⲥ̄не ϩітⲙ̄пноγте (P 130.2 4 84)
4. ацпωт ⲛ̄бі-λωт ϩⲛ̄ⲙ̄поліс енеqоγнϩ ⲛ̄ϩητоγ хе-ⲛ̄неq-тако мⲛ̄ⲛрωме ⲛ̄содома мⲛ̄гоморра (III 169)
   {NB: енеq-: relative preterite (qualifying ⲙ̄поліс)}
5. теψγхн етнесо ⲛ̄ⲁткарпос ⲛ̄оγоеіψ (IV 186)
   {NB: етнес- relative preterite (qualifying теψγхн)}
6. нерепеqро оγнн ⲛ̄оγон ним (Ch. 194)

16.2 THE EXISTENTIAL PRESENT: STATIVE RHEME, **indefinite** (indef. or zero article) nominal or pronominal theme-actor:

ογN̄- ογρωμε/ογα/ρωμε cοτ̄π "A man/someone is chosen"
MN̄- ογρωμε/ογα ρωμε cοτ̄π "No man/no one is chosen"

For Bibliography, see section 15.2

1. ογN̄κεεντηϭ ϣοοπ εqϩοογ εματε (Λ I 244f.)
2. мп ογN̄λαay N̄ϩωв н ογN̄λαay nϣaxε ϩнп ερωτN̄ (III 140)
3. M̄мN̄мN̄тϩM̄ϩaλ ϣοοπ (A I 263)
4. мN̄λαay мεn N̄ϩωв ϩορ ϣ̄ NNaϩрN̄-nετмε M̄моq (III 27)
5. мN̄ϩοογ ογaaв παραϩοογ aγω ϩοογ εqxοcε παραϩοογ (III 95)
   [OBS. Note the combination of an existential present (мN̄ϩοογ ογaaв) with an affirmation of existence with the existant qualified by an adnominal circumstantial (ϩοογ εqxοcε)]
6. ογN̄ϩοινε ο N̄aτnογτε (III 41)
7. ογN̄мN̄тcnοογc N̄εγaγγελιον ϣοοπ (Wess. 9 143)
8. мN̄ϩωв N̄τεimine τοομε ερον aνον nεxριcτιaνοc (Wess. 9 122)
9. ϩM̄πма aε етN̄бωϣ̄т̄ εβολ ϩнтq̄ мN̄ρωмε xοcε етβεραn ϩι-cxнмa (IV 4)

16.2.1 THE EXISTENTIAL PRESENT: STATIVE RHEME, CONVERTED (see Tables E, G):

(a) Circumstantial **εογN̄-**, **εγN̄-/ε(м)мN̄- ογρωμε/ρωμε cοτ̄π** "A man/no man being chosen" (also adnominal; 27-30); also **ερεογρωμε cοτ̄π**
(b) Relative **ετεογN̄- ετεмN̄- ογρωμε cοτ̄π**... "(...) whom a man/no man is chosen" (31-33); also **ετερεογρωμε cοτ̄π**...
(c) Preterite **νεмN̄- ογρωμε cοτ̄π** "A man/no man was chosen", also in hypothetical (remote) condition (39-41); also **νερεογ-ρωμε cοτ̄π**

For Bibliography, see section 15.2.1

(a) Circumstantial:
1. ϩενмa ... εογN̄ϩεννοϭ M̄мнnϣε cοογϩ N̄ϩητογ (IV 68)
2. ογN̄ϩενмine on N̄ϣнn ϣοοπ εмN̄cογρε рнт εβολ ϩιωογ ερεπεγκαρποc cοτ̄π εмατε aγω εqκιωογ (P 131.6 90 ro)

{NB: ⲕⲓⲱⲟⲩ stative corresponding to the infinitive ⲕⲛ̄ⲛⲉ}

3. ϩⲱⲥ ⲉⲱⲭⲉ-ⲉⲓⲟ ⲛ̄ⲣⲉⲫⲕⲁⲧⲁⲫⲣⲟⲛⲉⲓ ⲉⲙⲙⲛ̄ⲗⲁⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ϩⲱⲃ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲓϩⲉ ⲱⲟⲟⲡ ϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧ (III 150)
{NB: ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧ: the post-consonantal 1st sgl suffix -ⲧ is zeroed following the final ⲧ of ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧ-, the pronominal form of ϩⲛ̄-}
4. ⲁⲫⲭⲱⲧⲉ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ϩⲛ̄ⲣⲱⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲓⲧⲟⲡⲟⲥ ⲁⲭⲛ̄-ⲱⲓⲛⲉ ⲉⲣⲉⲕⲉⲟⲩⲁ ⲟⲩⲏϩ ⲛ̄ⲥⲱϥ (III 38)

(b) Relative:

1. ⲡⲙⲁ ⲉⲧⲉⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲙⲏⲛⲱⲉ ⲥⲟⲟⲩϩ ⲉⲣⲟϥ (Ch. 159)
2. ⲡⲣⲁⲛ ⲉⲧⲉⲙⲛ̄ⲕⲉⲣⲁⲛ ⲥⲛⲱ ⲉⲣⲟϥ (A I 391)
3. ⲡⲉⲧⲉⲙⲛ̄ⲱⲓ ⲱⲟⲟⲡ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉϥⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲥ (RE 10 161)
4. ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲉⲧⲉⲙⲛ̄ⲗⲁⲁⲩ ⲟ ⲛ̄ⲁⲧⲃⲟⲙ ⲛ̄ⲛⲁϩⲣⲁϥ (A I 382)

(c) Second Tense:

1. (NOT SHENOUTE) ⲉⲧⲉⲙⲛ̄ⲱⲉⲉⲣⲉ ⲱⲟⲟⲡ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲕⲥⲛⲏⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲗⲁⲟⲥ ⲧⲏⲣϥ̄ (Judges 14:3)
{NB: The Second Tense used in a rhetorical question: "It is that ...?"}

(d) Preterite:

1. ⲉⲛⲉⲙⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲕⲉⲣⲁⲩⲛⲟⲥ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲡⲛⲧ ⲛ̄ⲥⲱϥ ⲉϥⲟⲧϥ̄ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ... (Z 461)
{NB: This is the circumstantial preterite as a hypothetical remote condition, see section 41.1}

17.1 THE PRESENT-BASED FUTURE (Table F3): personal pronoun, proper name, demonstrative or definite nominal theme-actor:

ϥ-/ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄
negatived (ⲙ̄)ⲛ̄ϥ-/(ⲙ̄)ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ

The Coptic future is present-based, predicating the stative ⲛⲁ ("in the course of going") followed by the infinitive; compare English "I am going to ...", the French *futur proche* and similar periphrastic future forms.

NB: The second person plural form of the future is ⲧⲉⲧⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ (only one ⲛ, common to the prefix pronoun and the future characteristic -ⲛⲁ-)

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

STERN parr. 367, 379; STEINDORFF parr. 318-320; TILL par. 252; VERGOTE par. 158(2); LAMBDIN parr. 18.2, 19.1; POLOTSKY, "Conjugation System" parr. 5-9, 19-22, 25, 28-29; WILSON, Chapters 7-10;

1. ⲕⲛⲁϩⲱⲙ ⲏ ⲧⲉⲧⲛⲁϩⲱⲙ ⲉⲭⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲩⲙⲁⲕϩ̄ (A I 131)
2. ⲡⲉⲩϩⲏⲧ ⲛⲁⲕⲙⲟⲙ ⲛ̄ⲑⲉ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲧⲣⲓⲣ ... ⲁⲩⲱ ⲧⲉⲩⲯⲩⲭⲏ ⲛⲁⲕⲣⲟⲙⲣ̄ⲙ̄ ⲛ̄ⲑⲉ ⲛ̄ϩⲉⲛⲭⲃ̄ⲃⲉⲥ (IV 48f.)
3. ⲉⲱⲭⲉ-ⲁⲩⲡⲱⲧ ⲛ̄ⲥⲱⲉⲓ ⲥⲉⲛⲁⲡⲱⲧ ⲛ̄ⲥⲁⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ̄ ⲉⲱⲭⲉ-ⲁⲩϩⲁ-ⲣⲉϩ ⲉⲡⲁⲱⲁⲭⲉ ⲥⲉⲛⲁϩⲁⲣⲉϩ ⲟⲛ ⲉⲡⲱⲧⲛ̄ (IV 35)
4. ⲧⲛⲁⲥⲉⲡⲥⲱⲡⲟⲩ (Wess. 9 165)
5. ⲥⲉⲛⲁⲙⲉⲣⲓⲧⲕ̄ ϩⲓⲧⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲙⲛ̄ⲛ̄ⲣⲱⲙⲉ (IV 41)
6. ⲧⲛ̄ⲛⲁⲭⲓ-ϩⲁⲡ ⲛⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲕ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲙⲧⲟ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ (III 121)
7. ϩⲛⲟ ⲛⲙ̄ ⲛⲁϩⲗⲟⲃ (IV 86)
8. ⲡⲉⲕⲉⲓⲱⲧ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲧⲉⲕⲙⲁⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲩⲭⲡⲟⲕ ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲥⲁⲣⲝ̄ ⲛⲁⲫⲓⲧⲕ̄ ϩⲓⲛⲉⲩⲛⲁϩⲃ̄ (IV 82)
   [OBS. Note the prosodic difference between the nominal and the pronominal themes-actors (in the durative as well as base conjugation): the former may be separated from its rheme by various expansions (or by particles), the latter may not, being in close juncture with the rheme]
9. ⲛ̄ⲧⲛⲁⲕⲁⲁⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲁⲛ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲧⲛⲁⲙⲓⲱⲉ ⲟⲩⲃⲏⲕ ⲛ̄ϩⲟⲩⲟ (III 38)
10. ⲛ̄ⲧⲛⲁⲛ̄ⲕⲟⲧⲕ̄ ⲉⲃⲗⲟⲃ ⲁⲛ ⲱⲁⲛⲧⲙⲟⲩ (IV 19)
11. ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲃⲁⲗ ⲛⲁⲧⲥⲟ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ (III 198)
12. ⲛⲫ̄ⲛⲁⲃⲙ̄ⲃⲟⲙ ⲉⲣⲟⲛ ⲁⲛ (P 130.5 50 220)
13. ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲛⲁⲕⲁⲣⲱⲫ ⲁⲛ (III 97)
14. ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲛ̄ⲛⲁⲓ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲡⲁⲓⲡⲛⲟⲛ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲕ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲥ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ ⲛⲥ̄ⲛⲁⲓ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲕ ⲉⲡⲁⲓⲡⲛⲟⲛ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡⲁⲣⲓⲥⲧⲟⲛ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲭⲥ̄ (IV 38)
15. ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ ⲛⲉⲥⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲁⲥⲟⲩⲛ̄-ⲡⲉϩⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲙ̄ⲡⲱⲱⲥ ⲛ̄ⲥⲉⲡⲱⲧ ⲉⲣⲁⲧⲫ̄ (Ch. 83)
16. ϩⲉⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲩⲛ̄ⲕⲟⲧⲕ̄ ⲁⲛ ⲥⲉⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ϩⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲃⲉⲡⲏ ⲉⲛⲉⲧⲙⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ
17. ⲧⲉⲛⲁⲥⲟⲩⲱⲛⲟⲩ (III 191)
18. ⲉⲛⲉ-ⲛⲉⲓⲕⲉⲉⲥ ⲛⲁⲱⲛϩ̄ (A I 369)
   {NB ⲉⲛⲉ-: prefix marking interrogation}

17.1.1 THE PRESENT-BASED FUTURE CONVERTED (Tables F3, G):

(a) Circumstantial ⲉ-: ⲉⲫⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ / ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "He/the man being about to hear" (also adnominal; 27-30)
   Negatived ⲉ(ⲛ)ⲫⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ / ⲉⲙⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ, ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ
(b) Relative ⲉⲧ- ⲉⲧⲉ-: ⲉⲧⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "who is about to hear" ⲉⲧ(ⲫ)ⲛⲁ-

ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ... / ⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ... "whom he/you/the man is/are about to hear" (31-33)
Negatived ⲉⲧⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ (ⲉⲧⲉⲛⲇⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ) / ⲉⲧⲉⲙ̄ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ ..., ⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ ...

(c) Second Tense (Second Future) ⲉ-: ⲉⲫⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ / ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "(It is ...) that he/the man is about to hear" (34-38)
Negatived (ⲛ)ⲉⲫⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ... ⲁⲛ / (ⲛ)ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ... ⲁⲛ
The Second Future is also used following the conjunction ⲭⲉ as consecutive and final clause (clause of result and purpose: "so that ...", "in order to ..."); ⲭⲉⲕⲁ(ⲁ)ⲥ with ⲉⲫⲛⲁ-, also expressing purpose, probably governs the circumstantial, not Second Future. See texts 5-9 under (c) below.

(d) Preterite (Past Future) ⲛⲉ-: ⲛⲉⲫⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ / ⲛⲉⲣⲉⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "He/the man was about to hear/ would hear/ would have heard" (39-41): the Past Future is used especially to express remote or hypothetical result ("irrealis" apodosis, 41.3) and remote wish (41.2)
Negatived ⲛⲉⲫⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ (... ⲡⲉ) / ⲛⲉⲣⲉⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ (... ⲡⲉ)

NB: note the two forms of the circumstantial and relative future, according to the negativer (ⲛ̄- ... ⲁⲛ or ... ⲁⲛ): ⲉⲧⲉⲛⲇⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ, ⲉⲧⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ / ⲉⲧⲉⲙ̄ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ, ⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ; similarly (circumstantial, prenominal) ⲉⲙⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ, ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

STERN parr. 382, 418-419; STEINDORFF parr. 333, 440; TILL parr. 318, 360-361; VERGOTE parr. 163(2), 164(2), 165(2), 166(1,3), 167(1,2,4), 180(1); LAMBDIN par. 25.1(b), POLOTSKY, "Conjugation System" parr. 10-18

(a) Circumstantial:

1. ⲕⲥⲙⲁⲙⲁⲁⲧ ⲉⲕⲛⲁϫⲓⲧⲟⲩ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲡⲉⲕⲣⲁⲱⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲧⲉⲕⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲣⲟ ⲉⲕⲛⲁ† ⲙ̄ⲧⲟⲛ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲛⲁⲩ (RE 10 161)
2. ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲕⲁⲓⲣⲟⲥ ⲛⲏⲩ ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ... ⲛⲁⲟⲩⲉϩ-ⲥⲁϩⲛⲉ (A I 13)
[OBS. The circumstantial specifies here an expression of time (ⲟⲩⲕⲁⲓⲣⲟⲥ)]
3. ϩⲉⲛⲕⲉⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲛ ⲛ̄ⲧⲛ̄ⲛⲁⲱϫⲟⲟⲩ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ (Ch. 52)
{NB: ⲛ̄ⲧⲛ̄ⲛⲁ- = ⲉⲛⲧⲛ̄ⲛⲁ-, the circumstantial converter zeroed before a syllabic nasal (ⲛ̄)}

4. ⲡⲁⲣⲁⲡⲉⲧⲏⲥ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ ⲛ̄ⲥⲙ̄ⲥⲁⲗ ⲛ̄ⲁⲧⲱⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲫⲡⲱⲧ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲫ-ⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲉⲛ̄ⲛⲁⲱⲡⲱⲧ ⲁⲛ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲛ̄ⲛⲁⲱⲥⲱⲡ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲣⲟⲫ (Ch. 32)

(b) Relative:

1. ⲥⲱⲃ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲙ̄ⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲛ ⲉⲧ̄ⲛⲁⲃⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲩ ⲥ̄ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲫⲙⲁ ⲉⲫⲉⲧⲁⲙⲉ-ⲡⲥⲗ̄ⲗⲟ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ (IV 58)
   [OBS. ⲥⲱⲃ ⲛⲓⲙ topicalized (put forwards as a prominent subject): "(As for ..., ..."; so too ⲛⲉⲧⲛⲁⲉⲓⲣⲉ in the next text]
2. ⲙⲟⲛⲟⲛ ⲛⲉⲧⲛⲁⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲥⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲣⲁⲛ ⲥⲉⲛⲁⲱⲱⲡⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲕⲁ-ⲣⲓⲟⲥ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ (IV 4)
3. ⲥⲛⲁⲧⲱⲙ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩ-ⲧⲁⲧⲁⲡⲣⲟ ⲥ̄ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲥⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉⲧⲁⲡⲣⲟ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲛⲁ-ⲧⲱⲙ (III 138)
4. ⲡⲥⲁⲛ ⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲓ̄ⲥ̄ ⲛⲁⲕⲣⲓⲛⲉ ⲛ̄ⲛⲁⲓ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲓⲙⲓⲛⲉ ⲛ̄ⲥⲏⲧⲥ̄ (Mun. 99)
5. ⲡⲉⲧⲉⲛⲥ̄ⲛⲁⲥⲃ̄ⲃⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲛ̄ⲧⲥⲁⲣⲝ̄ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲫⲁⲕⲣⲟⲃⲩⲥⲧⲓⲁ (III 154)
6. ⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲙⲓⲟⲛ ⲟⲛ ⲉⲧⲥ̄ⲛⲁⲟⲩⲟⲛⲥⲥ̄ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛ̄ⲥⲏⲧⲟⲩ ⲥⲉⲛⲁⲣⲥⲟⲩⲉ-ⲣ̄ⲟⲩ-ⲟⲉⲓⲛ ⲛⲉⲧⲥ̄ⲛⲁⲥⲟⲡⲥ̄ ⲁⲉ ⲛ̄ⲥⲏⲧⲟⲩ ⲥⲉⲛⲁⲣⲥⲟⲩⲉ-ⲣ̄ⲕⲁⲕⲉ (IV 19)
   {NB: -ⲣ̄ⲥⲟⲩⲉ- a lexeme premodifier: "do rather ..."}
7. ⲥⲁⲡ̄ⲥ̄ ⲡⲉ ⲉⲧⲣⲉ-ⲛⲉⲧⲕⲛⲁⲧⲉⲡ-ⲧⲉⲩ†ⲡⲉ ⲧⲉⲡ-ⲧⲱⲕ (Ch. 27)
8. ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲟⲩⲱⲱ ⲉⲙⲟⲩⲟⲩⲧ̄ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲁⲣⲁⲕⲱⲛ ⲉⲱⲁⲫⲣⲁⲥⲧⲥ̄ ⲉⲧⲉⲫⲁⲡⲉ (Ch. 73)
   {NB: ⲉⲱⲁⲫ- Second Aorist, by which ⲉⲧⲉⲫⲁⲡⲉ is emphasized (put in focus): "It is ... that ..."}
9. ⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲉⲧⲛⲁ†ⲥⲁⲡ ⲉⲡⲥⲱⲛⲧ̄ ⲧⲏⲣⲥ̄ ⲥ̄ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲥⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲥ̄ⲛⲁⲕⲣⲓⲛⲉ ⲛ̄ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲑⲏⲡ ⲙ̄ⲡⲟⲩⲁ ⲡⲟⲩⲁ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲛ (III 165)
   {NB: ⲛ̄ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲑⲏⲡ: ⲛ̄- (direct object marking preposition) + ⲛ̄- (plural def. article, assimilated to ⲙ̄- + definite relative present predicating the stative ⲥⲏⲡ}

(c) Second Future:

1. ⲉⲣⲱⲁⲛⲡⲉⲥⲙⲟⲩ ⲁⲉ ⲃⲁⲗⲃⲉ ⲉⲩⲛⲁⲙⲟⲗⲥⲥ̄ ⲥⲛ̄ⲟⲩ (P 130.5 61 35)
   {NB: ⲥⲛ̄ⲟⲩ in focus}
2. ⲉⲓⲣ̄ⲁⲭⲉ-ⲡⲱⲁⲭⲉ ⲥⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲱⲱⲧ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ (III 70)
   {NB: ⲥⲛ̄ⲟⲩ- in focus}
3. ⲉⲩⲛⲁⲣⲡⲉⲩⲥⲁⲡ ⲙⲛ̄ⲛⲓⲙ ⲏ ⲉⲩⲛⲁ†ⲥⲁⲡ ⲉⲛⲓⲙ ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲏⲧⲟⲩ (III 98)
   {NB: ⲙⲛ̄-, ⲉ- in focus}
4. ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲥⲟⲫ ⲛⲁⲱⲥⲉⲗⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲱⲁⲧⲱⲛ (Ch. 28)
   {NB: ⲱⲁ- in focus}
5. ⲙ̄ⲡⲣ̄ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲛ̄ⲥⲁⲓ̄ⲥ̄ ⲭⲉⲉⲣⲉⲓ̄ⲥ̄ ⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲛ̄ⲥⲱⲫ (Ch. 199)
   {NB: ⲭⲉ-ⲉⲣⲉ-...ⲛⲁ- consecutive: "so that ..."}

6. ⲁⲣⲁ̄ⲱⲁⲭⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲉ ⲛⲁⲓ ⲭⲉ-ⲛⲁ ⲧⲁⲣⲟⲩⲛⲁ ⲛⲏⲧⲛ̄ † ⲧⲁⲣⲟⲩ† ⲛⲏⲧⲛ̄ ⲭⲉⲕⲁⲥ ⲛⲉⲧ† ⲉⲩⲛⲁⲭⲓ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲥⲙⲟⲩ (Ch. 199 = Lc. 6:38)
   {NB: ⲭⲉⲕⲁⲥ final "in order that ..."}
7. ⲛ̄ⲕⲉⲙⲁⲣⲧⲩⲣⲟⲥ ⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲡⲱϩ† ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲩⲥⲛⲟϥ ⲭⲉⲉⲕⲛⲁ†ⲙ̄-ⲧⲟⲛ ⲛⲁⲩ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲧⲟⲡ ⲛ̄ⲁⲃⲣⲁϩⲁⲙ ⲙⲛ̄ⲓⲥⲁⲁⲕ ⲙⲛ̄ⲓⲁⲕⲱⲃ (IV 22f.)
   {NB: ⲭⲉ-ⲉⲕⲛⲁ- final}
8. ⲁⲛⲟⲛⲛⲓⲙ ⲏ ϩⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲛⲉ ⲛⲉⲛⲱⲩⲓ ⲭⲉⲉϥⲛⲁⲧⲣⲉⲛⲓⲙⲏⲏⲱⲉ ⲥⲟⲩⲱ-ⲛⲛ̄ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲙⲉⲣⲓⲧⲛ̄ ⲛ̄ϩⲟⲩⲟ (III 107)
9. ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲕ ⲇⲉ ϩⲱⲱⲕ ⲡⲉⲛⲥⲟⲛ ⲧⲛ̄ϩⲱⲛ ⲉⲧⲟⲟⲧⲕ̄ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲕⲁⲡⲟⲧⲁⲥⲥⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲕϩⲓ ϩⲁⲑⲏ ⲛ̄ϩⲱⲃ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲙⲛ̄ⲑⲩⲗⲏ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲓⲕⲟⲥⲙⲟⲥ ⲭⲉⲕⲁⲥ ⲉⲕⲛⲁⲃⲛ̄ⲃⲉ ⲛ̄ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲉⲡⲗⲟⲅⲟⲥ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ϩⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲥⲣ̄ⲫⲉ (III 99)

(d) Past Future

1. ⲉⲛⲉⲛϭ̄ⲥⲙⲟⲩ ⲉⲣⲟⲥ ⲁⲛ (i.e. the well) ⲛⲉⲥⲛⲁⲣⲱⲱⲉ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲩⲥⲉ-ⲙⲟⲟⲩ (III 70)
2. (Had they known the things in our heart,) ⲛⲉⲩⲛⲁⲁⲁⲩ ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲧⲛ̄ⲧⲁ-ⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ (III 108)
3. ⲉⲛⲉϥⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲭⲉ-ⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁϥⲧⲁⲁⲩ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲣⲱϥ ⲥⲉⲛⲁⲙⲟⲟⲩⲧϥ̄ ⲛⲉϥⲛⲁⲟⲙⲕⲟⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ (RE 10 164)
4. ⲉⲛⲉⲣⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛⲁⲱⲁⲭⲉ ⲛ̄ⲙⲙⲉ ϩⲓⲭⲙ̄ⲡⲕⲁϩ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ (III 203)
   {NB: ⲉⲛⲉⲣⲉ- Second Tense (Second Preterite Future), putting ϩⲓⲭⲙ̄ⲡⲕⲁϩ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ in focus}
5. ϩⲁⲙⲟⲓ ⲟⲛ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ ⲛⲉⲩⲛⲁ†ⲗⲟⲅⲟⲥ ϩⲁⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲟ́ⲓⲛⲉⲓⲁⲧⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ (Mun. 110)

17.2 THE EXISTENTIAL PRESENT-BASED FUTURE: indefinite (indef. or zero article) nominal or pronominal theme-actor

ⲟⲩⲛ̄-ⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ/ⲟⲩⲁ/ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "A man/someone is going to hear"
ⲙ̄ⲛ̄-ⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ/ⲟⲩⲁ/ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "No man/no one is going to hear"

For Bibliography see section 15.2

1. ⲟⲩⲛ̄ϩⲁϩ ⲛⲁⲱⲓⲛⲉ ⲛ̄ⲥⲁ-ⲃⲱⲕ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ (Leyd. 332)
2. ⲏ ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲁⲥⲕⲁⲓ-ⲟⲩⲕⲁϩ ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲉϥϩⲟ ⲡⲟⲟⲛⲉ ⲏ ⲕⲧⲏⲩ ⲉⲡⲁϩⲟⲩ (A II 24)
   {NB: a rhetorical question}
3. ⲙ̄ⲙⲛ̄ⲗⲁⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲁⲙⲟⲩ (Wess. 9 133)

4. †ειμε γαρ χε-μ̄ν̄μ̄ντμε ναψωπε χωρις-ψι μ̄με (IV 172)
5. ογ̄ναγαθον νιμ ναψωπε ναq (IV 188)
6. μ̄ν̄ρωμε ναειμε (Wess. 9 141)
7. εψχε-πρ̄πμεεγε γαρ μ̄πνογτε νααμαζτε αν μ̄πρωμε ετμ̄ρ̄νοβε μ̄μ̄νανάψ ον νααμαζτε μ̄μοq (III 16f.)
8. μ̄ν̄ζενμααγ ν̄ψαγ νααμελει επαρζιστα ν̄νεγψεερε ζν̄τβ-βο νιμ (Ch. 169)
9. μ̄ν̄ραν ογαε σχημα ναψβοηθει ερον (IV 3)
10. ογ̄ν̄ογζαπ ναψωπε ζιχμ̄-πεθγσιαστηριον (A I 78)
11. μ̄ν̄ογρωμε ναχε-τμὲ ζν̄τεqσβω (Wess. 9 97)

17.2.1 THE EXISTENTIAL PRESENT-BASED FUTURE, CONVERTED

(a) Circumstantial εογ̄ν̄-/εμ̄ν̄-ογρωμε νασωτμ̄ "A man/no man being about to hear" (also adnominal; 27-30); also ερεογρωμε νασωτμ
(b) Relative ετεογ̄ν̄-/ετεμ̄ν̄-ογρωμε νασωτμ̄ ... "(...) whom a man/no man is about to hear" (31-33); also ετερεογρωμε νασωτμ ...
(c) Second Tense ερεογρωμε νασωτμ̄ "(It is...) that a man/someone is about to hear" (34-38)
(d) Preterite νεογ̄ν̄-/νεμ̄ν̄-ογρωμε νασωτμ̄ "A man/no man was about to hear" (39-41)

For Bibliography, see section 15.2.1

(a) Circumstantial:

1. ογρο τε εογ̄ν̄ζαζ ναβωκ εζογν επωνζ̄ εβολ ζιτοοτc̄ (III 60)
2. ζενειοτε εογ̄ν̄ζενρωμε μ̄πιστος νame ναζγπομεινε ζν̄τ-σγναγωγη μ̄πχοεις ετβεπνογτε αγω ετβεπογωψ ετε-ογ̄νταγq εζογν ενεγειοτε (III 172)
3. ογσνγ εογ̄ν̄ζενμηηψε ενάψωογ ναειρε ν̄ζεννοβ̄ ν̄νοβε ζραι ν̄ζητε (III 206)
   {NB: ενάψωογ circumstantial of the Adjective Verb νάψω-q "(He) is numerous" (section 22.2, 22.5), adnominal (qualifying ζενμηηψε)}

(b) Relative:

1. πμα ετεμ̄ν̄να ναψωπε μ̄μαγ ν̄ψανμογ ζν̄νενμ̄ν̄τασεβης (RE 10 164)

{NB: ⲛ̄ⲱⲁⲛ- = ⲉⲛⲱⲁⲛ- (Conditional)}

2. ⲛ̄ⲑⲉ ⲉⲧⲉⲙⲛ̄ⲗⲁⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧⲛ̄ ⲛⲁⲱⲃⲱ ⲉⲡⲁϩⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲃⲱⲕ ⲉⲡⲥⲱⲟⲩϩ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲁⲩ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲱⲗⲏⲗ ... ⲧⲁⲓ ⲟⲛ ⲧⲉ ⲑⲉ ⲉⲧⲉⲙ̄ⲙⲛ̄ⲗⲁⲁⲩ ϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧⲛ̄ ⲛⲁⲱⲣ̄ϩⲁⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲛⲁⲧⲁⲗⲟ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲡⲣⲟⲥⲫⲟⲣⲁ (IV 66)
{NB: ⲣ̄-ϩⲁⲉ "be last"}

3. ⲛ̄ⲑⲉ ⲉⲧⲉⲙⲛ̄ⲣⲉⲫⲭⲓ ⲛ̄ⲃⲟⲛⲥ̄ ⲏ ⲡⲟⲣⲛⲟⲥ ⲏ ⲣⲉⲫⲱⲙ̄ⲱⲉ-ⲉⲓⲇⲱⲗⲟⲛ ⲏ ⲛⲟⲉⲓⲕ ⲏ ⲙⲁⲗⲁⲕⲟⲥ ... ⲛⲁⲕⲗⲏⲣⲟⲛⲟⲙⲉⲓ ⲛ̄ⲧⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲣⲟ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲧⲁⲓ ⲟⲛ ⲧⲉ ⲑⲉ ⲉⲧⲉⲙⲛ̄ⲙⲁⲓⲧⲟ ⲛ̄ϩⲟⲩⲟ ⲏ ⲣⲉⲫⲧⲱⲣⲡ̄ ⲛⲁⲕⲗⲏⲣⲟⲛⲟⲙⲉⲓ ⲛ̄ⲧⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲣⲟ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ (III 192f.)

(c) Second Future:

1. ⲉⲣⲉⲟⲩⲁ ⲛⲁⲱⲭⲟⲟⲥ ⲟⲛ ⲭⲉ-ⲟⲩ (III 72)
{NB: ⲭⲉ-, following a verb of saying, is obligatory; the interrogative ⲟⲩ is in effect the direct object of ⲭⲱ}

(d) Preterite (Past Future):

1. ⲛⲉⲙⲛ̄ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲁⲱⲁⲙⲁϩⲧⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲃⲱⲕ (IV 84)
[OBS. Note the double negation]

(*) 18 ASSORTED DURATIVE EXAMPLES: stative *vs.* infinitive, the STERN-JERNSTEDT Rule (definite or personal-pronoun direct object of the durative infinitive introduced by ⲛ̄-/ⲙ̄ⲙⲟ-, zero-article object immediately attached to the prenominal form of the infinitive)

1. ⲛ̄ⲧⲣ̄ϩⲟⲧⲉ ⲁⲛ ϩⲟⲗⲱⲥ ⲟⲩⲁⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲱⲧⲣ̄ⲧⲱⲣ ⲁⲛ (III 38)
2. ⲁϥ ⲙⲉⲛ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲥⲧⲏⲩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲥⲉⲙⲟⲥⲧⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ (III 45)
[OBS. Note the use of the passive-equivalent 3rd person plural in the absence of a stative (there is no stative correspondent to the infinitive ⲙⲟⲥⲧⲉ); see OBS. to text 18]
3. ⲛ̄ⲁⲱ ⲛ̄ϩⲉ ⲡⲉⲧⲉⲛϥ̄ⲱⲟⲟⲡ ⲁⲛ ⲱⲁϥⲱⲱⲡⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡⲉⲧⲱⲟⲟⲡ ϩⲱⲱϥ ⲱⲁϥⲗⲟ ⲉϥⲱⲱⲡⲉ (III 224)
[OBS. ⲗⲟ ⲉϥ- "cease to ..."; in the circumstantial present complementing following a "descriptive verb" ("continue", "stop", "have already done"), the intransitive infinitive may replace the stative: hence ⲉϥⲱⲱⲡⲉ]
4. ⲧⲉⲧⲟ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲛ ⲁⲥⲣ̄ⲕⲁⲕⲉ ⲧⲉⲧϩⲟⲗⲇ̄ ⲁⲥⲥⲓⲱⲉ ⲧⲉⲧⲟⲛϩ̄ ⲁⲥⲙⲟⲩ (Ch. 152)
[OBS. Note here and in text 6 the alternation ⲣ̄- vs. ⲟ ⲛ̄- (non-durative vs. durative conjugation, respectively), which distinguishes the copular or intransitive ⲣ̄- ("be") from the deriving-transitive ⲣ̄- "make" (in dur. and non-dur. patterns)]

5. ϵϣχϵϯⲛⲁⲥⲟⲩⲛ̄-ⲧⲉϩⲓⲏ ⲙ̄ⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓ ⲉⲧⲣ̄ϩⲱⲧ ⲏ ⲡⲁϩⲱⲙ ⲉⲧϩⲏⲗ ⲛ̄ⲑⲉ ⲉⲧⲥⲏϩ ⲏ ⲧⲉⲛⲥⲟⲩⲱⲛⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟ ⲉⲓⲉ-ⲧⲉⲛⲁⲥⲟⲩⲛ̄-ⲛⲉⲧϩⲓⲡ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ (III 191)
6. ⲛⲥⲧⲟ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧ ⲛ̄ⲱⲛⲉ ⲁⲩⲣ̄ϩⲏⲧ ⲛ̄ⲥⲁⲣⲝ̄ ⲛ̄ⲣⲉϥⲁⲓⲥⲑⲁⲛⲉ (RE 10 163)
7. ⲥⲉⲟ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲩⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲙⲁ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧϥ̄ (III 136)
8. ⲧⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲣⲟ ⲛ̄ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲩⲉ ⲉⲥⲥⲃ̄ⲧⲱⲧ ⲛⲁⲥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲥ ⲉⲥⲥⲟⲃⲧⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲥ ⲉⲣⲟⲥ (Ch. 125)
{NB: Second Present forms, putting the prepositional phrases in focus}
9. ⲟⲩⲕⲟⲩⲛ ϥϣⲟⲟⲡ (i.e. Jesus) ⲉⲙⲡⲁⲧϥ̄ϣⲱⲡⲉ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲣⲓⲁ (Cat. 41)
10. ⲥⲉⲣⲏⲥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲥⲉⲣⲟⲉⲓⲥ (IV 24)
11. ⲛⲁⲓ ⲅⲁⲣ ϩⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲛⲉⲓⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲉⲓⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ ϩⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲛⲁⲓ (IV 100)
12. ϥⲙⲟⲟϣⲉ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧⲟⲩ (said of the moral disease, in the members of the body) (IV 20)
[OBS. For ⲙⲟⲟϣⲉ and numerous other intransitive verbs, the morphological differentiation of infinitive and stative does not exist]
13. ⲛⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲁϩⲉⲣⲁⲧⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲙⲏⲧⲉ ⲙⲛ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ (Ch. 91)
{NB: ⲧⲙⲏⲧⲉ ⲛ̄-... ⲙⲛ̄-... / ⲧⲉϥⲙⲏⲧⲉ ⲙⲛ̄-... "between X and Y"}
14. ϥⲧⲁϩⲉ ⲏ ⲁϥ†ϩⲉ (IF 77, Dict. 456f.)
[OBS. Note the opposition of intransitive stative in the durative conjugation *vs.* intransitive infinitive in the non-durative; see also texts 4, 6, 9, 22]
15. ⲧⲁⲕⲁⲑⲁⲣⲥⲓⲁ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲥ ⲏ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲛⲁⲁⲁⲥ (IV 48f.)
[OBS. Note the opposition of the immediate object construction (ⲁⲁⲥ) in the non-durative infinitive with the mediate construction (ⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲥ) in the durative, the verb and object (the 3rd sgl. feminine for "it") being equal; similarly in texts 20, 26, 27]
16. ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲕ ⲇⲉ ⲕⲣⲟⲛⲟⲥ †ⲥⲱϣ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲕ ⲁⲩⲱ †ϫⲱ ⲛ̄ⲛⲁⲓ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲣⲟⲕ (III 77)
17. ϥⲙⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟϥ ⲉⲙⲁⲧⲉ (P 130.2 54 313)
18. ⲥⲉⲟⲩⲁϣϥ̄ ϩⲓⲧⲛ̄ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲕⲉ ⲥⲉⲙⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟϥ ϩⲓⲧⲛ̄ⲛ̄ⲕⲉⲣⲣⲱⲟⲩ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲓ-ⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ (Ch. 106)
{NB: The combination of a 3rd person plural pronominal actor, direct object and ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲓⲧⲛ̄-/ϩⲓⲧⲟⲟⲧ- "by ..." expresses in Coptic the equivalent of the passive voice. Thus, for "he was chosen by God" we have in Coptic what would be literally translated "They chose him by God". See also text 2}
[OBS. ⲟⲩⲱϣ is the only verb that is immediately connected with

its direct object in the durative, constituting an exception to the STERN-JERNSTEDT Rule; see also text 29]

19. ϩοινε μεν ευτκαρπος ⲛ̄ca2ραι ϩενκοογε ⲇε ευτ ⲙ̄πευ-καρπος ⲛ̄catπε (A I 256)
{NB: ευ- circumstantial present}
[OBS. Note here the difference in construction between the definite (πευ-) and zero-article direct objects, the former entering the mediate (ⲛ̄-), the latter the immediate constructions]
20. ειτε ⲛεντaycoγωⲛϥ ειτε ⲛετeⲛ̄ceccooγⲛ ⲙ̄moϥ aⲛ (III 132)
21. ⲛετⲙογϩ ⲛ̄τπε aγω ετⲙογϩ ⲙ̄πκaϩ aγω ετ̄ϩογε-ⲙ̄πϥ-ⲏι (A I 234)
22. cερπκεο oⲛ ⲛ̄xaxε (A I 96) aκ̄πκε̄xaxε (P 130.2 137 337)
{NB: -̄πκε- is a lexeme premodifier, modifying the stative and infinitive: "do also ..." cf. "do rather" (see text 21) and -̄ρ̄ⲱ̄ⲛ(ⲛ̄)- "do first ..."}
23. ϥⲱ̄ⲛ̄-ϩmot ⲛ̄τⲙ̄ⲛⲛoγτε (IV 78)
24. τeoγωmnoⲃε ϩωωϥ ⲱaⲛτeceι (III 202)
{NB: oγωm- a variant of oγem-, the construct state of oγωm orthographically identical with the absolute (object-less state)}
25. ⲛ̄θε ⲛ̄taκxooc (Ch. 39)
26. aιxooc anok (III 117) τετⲛ̄xω ⲇε ⲙ̄moc ⲛ̄τωτⲛ̄ (III 135)
27. κειρε ⲙ̄moc ⲏ aκaac ⲙ̄mελoc ⲙ̄πoρⲛⲏ (E 66)
28. τετⲛ̄ⲱλⲏλ τετⲛ̄ϩκaειτ τετⲛ̄mελeτa ⲛ̄τmⲛ̄τερo ⲛ̄ⲙ̄πηγε (E 71)
[OBS. Asyndetic (conjunctionless) coordination is characteristic of enumerative-listing style]
29. ρωme rap nim oγeⲱπωⲛϩ̄ aγω ⲛ̄ceoγωⲱ aⲛ emoγ (E 93)

UNIT (V): THE ADVERB PREDICATED
(sections 19-21)

19.1 The adverb predicated in the durative pattern: personal pronoun, demonstrative, Proper Name or **definite** nominal theme
19.1.1 Conversions

19.2 The adverb predicated in the existential present: an **indefinite** nominal (indef. or zero-determinated) or pronominal theme
19.2.1 Conversions

(*) 20.1 The adverb predicated in the delocutive Nominal Sentence pattern
(*) 20.2 The adverb predicated by the auxiliary in the tense base conjugation
21.1 ⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓ ⲛ̄- "Woe unto...!"
21.1.1 Conversions
21.2 ⲛⲁⲩ "to him" predicated (modal-future possession predicated by ⲛ̄-)

19.1 THE PRESENT: THE ADVERB PREDICATED IN THE DURATIVE PATTERN: personal pronoun, proper name or definite nominal theme (subject) (Table F4):

Like the durative infinitive and the stative rhemes (sections 15-18), the adverbial rheme (predicate) — prepositional phrase or "lexical" adverb denoting spatial rest situations or relationships and their metaphorical semantic extension (see section 5: "on a hill", "in your mouth", "with me", "against you" "outside", "here", "there", "where?" — is predicated in the present tense. The adverbial rheme follows the theme (subject): prefix pronoun (Table A 5b), demonstrative, proper name or definite noun. Like the durative conjugation, the adverb predication is negatived by (ⲛ̄-)... ⲁⲛ.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

STERN parr. 366, 371; STEINDORFF parr. 310; TILL parr. 249-250; VERGOTE par. 192(a); LAMBDIN parr. 18.1, 24.2; POLOTSKY, "Conjugation System" parr. 5-6, 19-22, 28; SHISHA-HAVELY par. 1.2.1.1

1. ϥϩ̄ⲟⲩⲧⲟⲡⲟⲥ ⲉϥⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ (Wess. 9 171)
2. ⲁⲛⲟⲛ ⲧⲛ̄ⲛ̄ϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲛⲧⲟⲡⲟⲥ (III 24)
3. ϥϩ̄ⲟⲩⲛⲟϭ ⲛ̄ⲉⲣⲁⲥⲓⲁ (Wess. 9 145)
4. ⲛ̄ϥϩⲁϩⲧⲏⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲛ̄ϭⲓⲛⲉⲧⲫⲟⲟⲛⲉⲓ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ (III 136)
5. ϥⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ ⲁⲩⲱ ϥϩⲁⲉⲟⲟⲩ ⲱⲁⲛⲓⲉⲛⲉϩ (Wess. 9 161)
6. ⲡⲱⲱⲥ ϩⲛ̄ⲧⲙⲛⲧⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉϥⲟϩⲉ ⲉⲣⲉⲛⲉϥⲉⲥⲟⲟⲩ ⲱⲟⲟⲡ ⲁⲛ ⲙⲁⲩ-ⲁⲁⲩ (Ch. 159)
7. ⲑⲟⲧⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲥⲛ̄ⲙⲁⲕ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲱ ⲛⲓⲙ (III 101)
8. ⲡⲱⲓⲡⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲓⲙⲁ ⲡⲉⲟⲟⲩ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲓⲙⲁ (III 79)
9. ⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄ϩⲛ̄ⲧⲙⲛⲧⲉ ⲛ̄ϩⲉⲛⲛⲟϭ ⲙ̄ⲡⲣⲁⲅⲙⲁ ⲉⲩⲟⲱ (Ch. 97)
   {NB: ⲉⲩⲟⲱ adnominal circumstantial present; ⲟⲱ stative of ⲁⲱⲁⲓ}
10. ⲧⲛ̄ⲛⲏ ⲉⲣ̄ϩⲛⲕⲉ ⲡⲁⲓ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲉⲣⲟⲛ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲟⲧϥ̄ ⲙ̄ⲡϫⲟⲓⲥ ⲡⲉⲭ̄ⲥ̄ ⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁ-ϥⲣ̄ϩⲛⲕⲉ ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲏⲧⲛ̄ (Ch. 98)
11. ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲟⲩ ϩⲱⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲥⲉⲙ̄ⲡⲃⲟⲗ ⲁⲛ ⲛ̄ⲛ̄ⲕⲁⲛⲱⲛ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲅⲣⲁⲫⲏ (E 88)
12. ⲥⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ (IV 18)
13. ⲥⲉⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ⲅⲁⲣ (A I 121)

19.1.1 THE ADVERB PREDICATED IN THE DURATIVE PATTERN: CONVERSIONS (Tables Fd, G)

(a) Circumstantial ⲉ-: ⲉϥⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ / ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ "He/the man being there" (also adnominal; 27-30)
Negatived ⲉ(ⲛ)ϥⲙⲙⲁⲩ ⲁⲛ / ⲉⲙ̄ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ⲁⲛ, ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ⲁⲛ

(b) Relative ⲉⲧ-: ⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ "who is there"
ⲉⲧϥ̄ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ/ⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ "where he/you/the man is/are" (31-33)
Negatived ⲉⲧⲉⲛϥ̄ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ⲁⲛ, ⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ⲁⲛ / ⲉⲧⲉⲙ̄ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ⲁⲛ, ⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ⲁⲛ

(c) Second Tense ⲉ-: ⲉϥⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ and ⲉϥⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ... "There he is" and "(It is ...) that he is there" (34-38)

(d) Preterite ⲛⲉ-: ⲛⲉϥⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ / ⲛⲉⲣⲉⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ (ⲡⲉ)"He/the man was there", also in hypothetical (remote) condition (39-41)

NB: note the two forms of the circumstantial and relative, according to the negativer (ⲙ̄ⲛ- ... ⲁⲛ or ... ⲁⲛ): ⲉⲛϥ̄ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ⲁⲛ/ⲉⲙⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ⲁⲛ, ⲉⲧⲉⲛϥ̄ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ⲁⲛ/ⲉⲧⲉⲙ̄ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ⲁⲛ *or* ⲉϥⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ⲁⲛ/ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ⲁⲛ, ⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ⲁⲛ/ⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ⲁⲛ.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STEINDORFF parr. 374, 376, 459-460, 462-464; TILL parr. 317, 329, 443, 462; VERGOTE parr. 163(1), 164(1), 165(1), 166(1,3,4), 167(1,2); LAMBDIN par. 24.2; POLOTSKY, "Conjugation System" parr. 10-18

(a) Circumstantial:

1. ⲕⲁⲛ ⲉⲩⲱⲁⲛⲟⲓ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲕⲁⲡⲉ ⲕⲛⲁⲧⲱⲟⲩⲛ ⲟⲛ ⲉⲥⲍⲓⲭⲱⲕ (III 100)
2. ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲫⲍⲓⲭⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲫⲙⲁ ⲛ̄ⲛ̄ⲕⲟⲧⲕ̄ ⲛ̄ϥⲛⲁⲱⲱⲱⲧ ⲁⲛ ⲙ̄ⲡⲟⲉⲓⲕ ⲙ̄ⲛ̄ⲡⲙⲟⲟⲩ (Rossi 2/3 8)
3. ⲛ̄ⲑⲉ ⲇⲉ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲃⲁⲗⲉ ⲉⲧⲉⲫⲟⲩⲉⲣⲏⲧⲉ ⲥⲛ̄ⲧⲉ ⲉⲣⲉⲛⲉⲫⲟⲩⲉⲣⲏⲧⲉ ⲙⲉⲛ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟϥ ⲉⲛ̄ϥⲉⲱⲙⲇⲟⲱⲉ ⲁⲛ (Ch. 87)
4. (If they defile themselves) ⲉⲓⲧⲉ ⲉⲩⲍⲓ-ⲡⲱⲙ̄ⲙⲟ ⲉⲓⲧⲉ ⲉⲩⲍⲛ̄ⲍⲥⲩⲛ-ⲁⲣⲱⲣⲏ (IV 120)

(b) Relative:

1. ⲡⲙⲁ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲍⲏⲧϥ (III 151)
2. ⲛ̄ⲱⲁⲭⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲥⲟⲫⲓⲁ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲍⲏⲧⲕ (III 14)
3. ⲛⲉⲍⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ (Ch. 105)
4. ⲁⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲛⲉⲓⲟⲩⲱⲛⲱ̄ ⲉⲧⲍⲛ̄ⲧⲙⲏⲧⲉ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲥⲟⲟⲩ... ⲁⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲛⲉⲓⲁⲃⲟⲟⲕⲉ ⲉⲧⲍⲛ̄ⲧⲙⲏⲧⲉ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲓⲃⲣⲟⲟⲙⲡⲉ (Mun. 105)
5. ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉⲧⲉⲡⲗⲁⲏⲧⲏ ⲍⲓⲱⲱϥ (Wess. 9 138)
6. ⲛⲉⲧⲍⲙ̄ⲡⲕⲟⲥⲙⲟⲥ ⲧⲏⲣϥ̄ (Ch. 28)
7. ⲛⲉⲧⲍⲁⲣⲱⲕ ⲛ̄ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ (Ch. 27)
   {NB: ⲙⲛ̄- coordinates here the 3rd plural with the 2nd sgl. in ⲍⲁⲣⲱⲕ: "...and theirs"}
8. ⲛⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ (III 160)
   [OBS. Contrast the use of the article ⲛ̄- as a general formal antecedent of the relative ("they that ...") with the specific lexical antecedent in text 3 above]
9. ⲡⲉⲧⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ (IV 43)
   {NB: ⲡⲉⲧⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ: the preposition ⲉ-/ⲉⲣⲟ- is used for the notion of owing or being indebted: the thing owed is theme (subject) or, as here, antecedent; the debtor noun/pronominal is governed by ⲉ-}
10. ⲡⲙⲁ ⲟⲛ ⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉⲡⲉⲡⲛⲁ ⲛ̄ⲁⲕⲁⲑⲁⲣⲧⲟⲛ ⲛ̄ⲍⲏⲧϥ̄ (Wess. 9 97)
11. ⲡⲉⲓⲃⲓⲟⲥ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲉⲛ̄ⲍⲏⲧϥ̄ (III 205)
    {NB: the theme here, following the relative converter, is the 2nd sgl. fem. zero suffix}
    [OBS. Note the placement of the adverb ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ, which (being enclitic) occupies the second position in the prosodic unit (antecedent + relative form), while qualifying the relative clause alternatively, it could be taken to qualify ⲡⲉⲓⲃⲓⲟⲥ]

(c) Second Present:

1. ⲉⲕⲧⲱⲛ ⲡⲱⲗⲭⲉ (Ch. 166)
   {NB: ⲧⲱⲛ in focus; also in the following texts}
   [OBS. Note the immediate apposition of the postposed nominal theme after ⲉⲕⲧⲱⲛ, unintroduced by ⲛ̄ⲑⲓ-]
2. ⲉⲣⲉⲛⲉⲛⲕⲉⲉⲥ ⲧⲱⲛ (A I 212)
3. ⲉⲣⲉⲓⲟⲩⲇⲁⲥ ⲱⲟⲟⲡ ⲧⲱⲛ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲉⲕⲥⲛ̄ⲁⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲉ (A II 53)
4. ⲡⲙⲁ ⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉⲧⲱⲉⲗⲉⲉⲧ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ⲉⲕⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ⲑⲓⲡⲛⲩⲙⲫⲓⲟⲥ (Ch. 138)
5. ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲃⲁⲗ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲛⲁⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡⲙⲁⲁⲭⲉ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ (Ch. 102)
   {NB: ⲉⲧⲃⲉ- in focus}
6. ⲉⲣⲉⲕⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲕⲏⲧ ⲕⲱⲥ- ⲙⲁⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲙⲏⲛⲱⲉ ⲛ̄ⲱⲉⲉⲣⲉ (P 130.5 119 ro)
   {NB: ⲕⲱⲥ- in focus}

(d) Preterite:

1. ⲛⲉⲛⲕⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲓⲱⲁⲓⲣⲉ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲱⲧ ⲛⲙ̄ⲙⲏⲧⲛ̄ (III 220)
2. ⲡⲥⲟⲡ ⲉⲛⲉⲩⲕⲁⲕⲧⲏⲛ (Ch. 83)
   {NB: ⲉⲛⲉⲩ- relative (or circumstantial) preterite, qualifying ⲡⲥⲟⲡ}

19.2 THE ADVERB PREDICATED IN THE EXISTENTIAL PRESENT: indefinite (indef. or zero article) nominal or pronominal theme

ⲟⲩⲛ̄- ⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ/ⲟⲩⲁ/ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ "A man/someone is there"
ⲙⲛ̄- ⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ/ⲟⲩⲁ/ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ "No man/no one is there"

For Bibliography, see section 15.2

1. ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲕⲉⲕⲟⲥⲙⲟⲥ ⲕⲁⲣⲟⲩ ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲓ (Orig. 303)
   [OBS. ⲕⲁⲣⲟⲩ ⲙ̄- instead of the prenominal form ⲕⲁ-; ⲕⲁⲣⲟ- is treated as if containing an inherently possessed noun, which is combined with a nominal possessor by - ⲩ ⲛ̄-]
2. ⲙⲛ̄ⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲉⲣⲟⲓ ... ⲟⲩⲇⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲛ̄ⲕⲣⲓⲙⲁ ⲕⲓⲭⲛ̄ⲧⲥⲩⲛⲁⲅⲱⲅⲏ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ (III 133)
3. ⲙⲛ̄ⲃⲟⲙ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟ ⲉⲡⲁⲓ (Or. 165)
   {NB: ⲙ̄ⲙⲟ- expresses in this extremely common turn of phrase the possession of the inherently-possessed ("inalienable") ⲃⲟⲙ; similarly in the next text}
4. ⲟⲩⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲧⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲙ̄ⲙⲛ̄ⲕⲓⲃⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲥ (Ch. 148 = Song of Songs 8:8)
5. ⲙⲏ ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲁⲕⲟ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲓⲙⲁ (III 72)
6. ⲙⲛ̄ⲕⲧⲟⲣ ⲕⲱⲱⲩ ⲉⲣⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲧⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲛⲁⲕⲣⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ (A I 61)
   {NB: ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲧⲟⲩ = ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲏⲧⲟⲩ}

19.2.1 THE ADVERB PREDICATED IN THE EXISTENTIAL PRESENT: CONVERSIONS (Tables Ea, G)

(a) Circumstantial ϵ-: ϵογN̄-/ϵмN̄- оγрωмϵ M̄мαγ "A man/no man being there" (also adnominal; 27-30); also ϵрϵоγрωмϵ M̄мαγ

(b) Relative ϵтϵ-: ϵтϵоγN̄-/ϵтϵмN̄- оγрωмϵ M̄мαγ "(...) where a man/no man is" (31-33); also ϵтϵрϵоγрωмϵ M̄мαγ

(d) Preterite нϵ-: нϵоγN̄-/нϵмN̄- оγрωмϵ M̄мαγ "A man/no man was there", also in hypothetical (remote) conditions (39-41)

For Bibliography, see section 15.2.1

(a) Circumstantial:

1. ȯγχαιϵ ϵммN̄мооγ N̄ϩнтq̄ (III 174)
2. ϩϵNрωмϵ ϩрαι N̄ϩнтN̄ ϵιтϵ ϩооγт ϵιтϵ сϩιмϵ ϵрϵϩϵNψнрϵ ψнм н ϩϵNψϵϵрϵ ψнм ϩαϩтнγ (IV 95)

(b) Relative:

1. N̄кϵϩωоN ϵтϵоγN̄ψγхн N̄ωNϩ̄ N̄ϩнтоγ (RE 10 164)
2. нϵтϵмN̄пат M̄мооγ (III 143)
3. пϵтϵрϵоγснqϵ N̄тоотq̄ (Ryl. 67 p. 395)
4. нϵтN̄Noγтϵ ϵтϵоγN̄вαλ M̄мооγ (Mun. 107)
5. пϵтϵоγN̄оγоN ϵроq (A I 96)

(d) Preterite:

1. нϵмN̄ппᾱ αϵ N̄ϩнтоγ (A I 37)

(*)20 Non-situational adverbs, not predicated in the durative pattern are found as rhemes in the delocutive Nominal Sentence or (for other tenses than the present and in a non-durative mode of action) introduced by means of the auxiliary p̄- into the tense-base conjugation.

(*)20.1 THE ADVERB PREDICATED IN THE DELOCUTIVE NOMINAL SENTENCE PATTERN (see 3.2, 3.2.1)

ADVERB (rheme) + пϵ, тϵ, нϵ + NOUN (theme)

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
TILL par. 248; *SHISHA-HALEVY par. 1.2.1.2

1. ⲉⲡϫⲓⲛϫⲏ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲧⲉ ⲧⲉⲩϩⲩⲡⲟⲙⲟⲛⲏ (IV 46)
2. ⲯⲁⲡⲉⲓⲙⲁ ⲧⲉ ⲧⲉⲧⲛⲙⲛ̄ⲧ-ϩⲏⲧ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲱⲧ ⲛⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲛ (P 130.1 135 333f.)
3. ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲓϩⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲛⲉ ⲛⲉⲫⲕⲉⲡⲉⲧⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ (III 103)
   [OBS. ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲓϩⲉ is the adverb most common as rheme of the Nominal Sentence]
4. ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲓϩⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲧⲉ ⲛ̄ϩⲟⲓⲛⲉ ϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧⲉⲛ ⲉⲁⲩⲧⲥⲁⲃⲟⲟⲩ ⲉϩⲉⲛⲧⲉϫⲛⲏ ⲙⲛ̄ⲛ̄ⲥⲁⲧⲣⲉⲩⲉⲓ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ (IV 163f.)
5. ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲡⲉⲫⲉⲓⲛⲉ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲉⲓⲛⲉ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉϩⲃⲏⲩⲉ (Wess. 9 110)

(*)20.2 THE ADVERB PREDICATED BY THE AUXILIARY ⲣ̄- IN THE TENSE-BASE CONJUGATION (sections 6-11)

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
SHISHA-HALEVY par. 1.2.1.3

1. ⲁⲙⲡⲁⲣⲁⲫⲩⲥⲓⲥ ⲣ̄-ϩⲓϫⲱϥ (Wess. 9 171)
2. ⲁⲕⲉϩⲁⲡ ⲣ̄-ⲉⲣⲟⲥ (IV 12)

21 # NOUN + ⲛ̄-/ⲛⲁ- ("to") #: modal possession or attribution ("... be to ...!")

21.1 ⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓ ⲛ̄- "Woe unto ...!"

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
VERGOTE par. 183; SHISHA-HALEVY p. 37f.

1. ⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓ ⲛⲁⲛ ϫⲉⲁⲛⲁⲙⲉⲗⲉⲓ (A II 374)
2. ⲟⲩⲟⲓ ⲛⲁⲓ ⲟⲩⲟⲓ ⲛⲉ ϫⲉⲙ̄ⲡⲛ̄ⲉⲓⲱ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲛϩⲏⲧ ϩⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲛⲕⲁⲕⲓⲁ ⲙⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲛϫⲱϩⲙ̄ ϩⲣⲁⲓ ϩⲛ̄ⲑⲟⲧⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲙⲛ̄ⲛⲯⲁϫⲉ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲅⲣⲁⲫⲏ (III 199)
   {NB: ⲛⲉ: 2nd sgl. fem.}
3. ⲟⲩⲟⲓ ⲛ̄ⲅⲉⲛⲟⲥ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲛ̄ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲛ̄ϥϩⲁⲣⲉϩ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲛⲉⲡⲣⲟⲥⲧⲁⲅⲙⲁ ⲙ̄ⲡϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ (Wess. 9 160)
   [OBS. The adnominal circumstantial qualifying NOUN + ⲛⲓⲙ shows ⲛⲓⲙ to be quantifying-distributive rather than defining and to mean "any ..." rather than "all ..."]
4. ⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲧⲛⲁⲙⲉⲥⲧⲉ-ⲛⲉⲧϩⲓⲧⲟⲩⲱⲟⲩ ⲉⲡϫⲓⲛϫⲏ ϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲛϩⲏⲧⲛ̄ (III 154)
   {NB: ⲛⲉⲧϩⲓⲧⲟⲩⲱⲟⲩ see ⲧⲟⲩⲱ-}

5. ογοει ⲛⲛⲉⲧⲟ ⲛⲥⲁⲃⲉ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲩ ϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧⲛ̄ (III 159)
6. ογοει ⲛⲁⲓ ογοει ⲛ̄ⲙ̄ⲙⲉⲗⲟⲥ ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲥⲱⲙⲁ ⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉⲡⲉⲓⲯⲱⲛⲉ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧⲟⲩ (A II 39)

21.1.1 ογοει ⲛ̄- CONVERTED

(a) Circumstantial ⲉⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓ ⲛ̄-
(b) Relative ⲉⲧⲉⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓ ⲛ̄-
(d) Preterite ⲛⲉⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓ ⲛ̄-

(a) Circumstantial:

1. ⲥⲉⲛⲁⲯⲱⲡⲉ ⲉⲟⲩⲟⲓ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ (IV 4)
   [OBS. ⲯⲱⲡⲉ as auxiliary supplies ογοει ⲛ̄- with tense characterizations other than the present]
2. ⲛ̄ⲁⲱ ⲛ̄ϩⲉ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲉⲟⲩⲟⲓ ⲁⲛ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲧⲥⲱⲕ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲩⲫⲩⲏ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲛⲓϩⲓⲉⲓⲧ ⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ⲕⲁⲕⲉ ϩⲓⲃⲟⲥⲙ̄ (A II 155)
   {NB: this is the circumstantial replacing the Second Tense as the "that ..." constituent in a Cleft Sentence, following the focus ⲛ̄ⲁⲱ ⲛ̄ϩⲉ "How (is it) that ...?"}
   [OBS. On the circumstantial as the topic constituent in a Cleft Sentence, see Shisha-Halevy pp. 84-87]

(b) Relative:

1. ⲡⲕⲁⲓⲣⲟⲥ ⲉⲧⲉⲟⲩⲟⲓ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧⲕ̄ (IV 94)
2. ογοι ⲛⲁⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲛ̄ⲑⲉ ⲉⲧⲉⲟⲩⲟⲓ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲓⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ (A II 11)

(d) Preterite:

1. ⲛⲉⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓ ⲛⲁⲓ ⲭⲉⲗⲩⲭⲡⲟⲓ ⲣⲱ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲙ̄ⲡⲓⲙⲟⲩ ϩⲛ̄ⲑⲏ (Wess. 9 142)
2. ⲛⲉⲟⲩⲟⲓ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲡⲉ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲕⲁⲓⲣⲟⲥ ⲉⲧⲉⲛⲁⲓⲁⲧⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧⲕ̄ (IV 94)
   {NB: ⲉⲧⲉⲛⲁⲓⲁⲧⲟⲩ relative of ⲛⲁⲓⲁⲧ- "blessed is ..." (section 23.1)}

21.2 ⲡⲉⲟⲟⲩ ⲛ̄- "Glory be to ..."

This modal-future predication of possession is a text-final fixed formula.

1. ⲡⲉⲭ̄ⲥ ⲓ̄ⲥ̄ ⲡⲉⲛϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲡⲁⲓ ⲡⲉⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲁϥ ⲯⲁⲉⲛⲉϩ ⲛ̄ⲉⲛⲉϩ (III 224)
   [OBS. ⲡⲁⲓ ⲡⲉⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲁϥ "He, to whom ..." --- there is no relative conversion of this pattern]
2. ⲕⲥⲙⲁⲙⲁⲁⲧ ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲡⲉⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲁⲕ ⲙ̄ⲛ̄ⲡⲉⲕⲯⲏⲣⲉ ⲉⲧⲥⲙⲁⲙⲁⲁⲧ (Wess. 9 146)
3. ⲡⲉⲟⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲧⲣⲓⲁⲥ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ ⲡⲉⲓⲱⲧ ⲙ̄ⲛ̄ⲡⲯⲏⲣⲉ ⲙ̄ⲛ̄ⲡⲉⲡⲛⲁ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ ⲛ̄ⲣⲉϥⲧⲁⲛϩⲟ ⲉⲡⲧⲏⲣϥ̄ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛ̄ϩⲟⲙⲟⲟⲩⲥⲓⲟⲛ (IV 197)

UNIT (VI): SYNTHETIC CONJUGATION FORMS WITH SUFFIXED SUBJECT: PRESENT TENSE, NARRATIVE PAST
(sections 22-26)

22 THE ADJECTIVE VERBS

22.1 The PRESENT: the Adjective Verb ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩ=ⲟ "(He) is good, fair"
22.2 The PRESENT: the Adjective Verb ⲛⲁϣⲱ=ⲟ "(They) are numerous" "(He) is plentiful"
22.3 The PRESENT: the Adjective Verb ⲛⲁⲁⲁ=ⲟ "(He) is great"
22.4 The PRESENT: the Adjective Verb ⲛⲉⲥⲱ=ⲟ "(He) is beautiful/ugly"
22.5 The Adjective Verbs converted

23 The PRESENT: ⲛⲁⲓⲁⲧ=ⲟ̄ "Blessed is (he)"
23.1 ⲛⲁⲓⲁⲧ=ⲟ̄ converted

24 The PRESENT: (ⲉ)ϩⲛⲁ=ⲟ "(He) is willing"
24.1 (ⲉ)ϩⲛⲁ=ⲟ converted
24.2 ⲣ̄ϩⲛⲁ= "be willing" in various conjugation forms outside the present

25 ⲙⲉⲩⲁ= "(You) do not know", "perhaps" (in the generic 2nd person sgl. masc.): AORIST

26 ⲡⲉϫⲁ=ⲟ "(He) said:" PAST NARRATIVE, introducing direct speech

22 THE PRESENT: ADJECTIVE VERBS or "conjugated adjectives" (Table H):

This is a formal group made up of five or six synthetic conjugation forms, all beginning with ⲛⲉ- or ⲛⲁ-, all having their theme-"actor" (noun or pronoun) attached at the end, all predicating a present quality of the theme (they are thus, in a functional sense, complementary to the durative present predicating the stative, 16.1-2). They are main-clause

forms, fully convertible and negated by ...ⲁⲛ. Some have a special prenominal alternant form distinct from the one preceding the suffix pronoun theme; the nominal theme, introduced by ⲛ̄ⲟⲓ-, may follow the 3rd person pronominal one.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STERN parr. 308-310; STEINDORFF par. 297; TILL par. 284; VERGOTE par. 169; LAMBDIN par. 29.2; POLOTSKY, "Conjugation System" par. 36

22.1 The ADJECTIVE VERB ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩ- q "(He) is good, fair": ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩ̀- /ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩ- (ⲛⲁⲛⲉ-)

1. ⲉⲱϫⲉⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲓ ⲕⲟⲓⲛⲱⲛⲉⲓ ⲛ̄ⲙⲙⲁⲓ ⲉⲱϫⲉⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲓ ⲁⲛ ⲙ̄ⲡⲣ̄ⲕⲟⲓⲛⲱⲛⲉⲓ (III 30)
2. ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲡⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲣⲟⲧ ⲱ ⲙ̄ⲙⲉⲣⲁⲧⲉ (III 27)
3. ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲛⲉⲕⲉⲕⲓⲃⲉ ⲛ̄ϩⲟⲩⲉ ⲉⲡⲏⲣ̄ⲡ̄ (III 53)
4. ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲥ ⲛⲁⲛ ⲉⲙⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ϩⲟⲩⲟ ⲉⲱⲛ̄ϩ ϩⲛ̄ϩⲉⲛⲑⲗⲓⲯⲓⲥ (Wess. 9 174)
   [OBS. ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩ-, with the neutric feminine "it", is common for "it were better that..." and the like; it is then complemented by the infinitive or by ⲉⲧⲣⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ (section 9.1 b)]
5. ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲥ ⲇⲉ ⲉⲃⲏⲡⲯⲓⲛⲉ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲥⲛⲏⲩ ⲉⲧϩⲏⲩ ϩⲛ̄ϩⲉⲛⲯⲱⲛⲉ (P 130.2 102 22)
6. ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲡⲛⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ⲃⲱⲕ ⲉⲧⲉⲕⲕⲗⲏⲥⲓⲁ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲧⲛⲏⲥⲧⲓⲁ ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲡⲥⲏⲩ ⲛ̄ⲉⲅⲕⲣⲁⲧⲉⲩⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲕ ⲉⲧⲉⲕⲥϩⲓⲙⲉ ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩϩⲱⲃ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲓϩⲉ ⲛ̄ⲁⲛⲁⲅⲕⲁⲓⲟⲛ ... ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲡⲟⲩⲱⲙ ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲡⲅⲁⲙⲟⲥ ⲇⲉ ⲟⲛ (IV 174f.)
7. ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲛⲉⲓϩⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲉϯⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ (Wess. 9 87)

22.2 The ADJECTIVE VERB ⲛⲁϣⲱ- q "(They) are numerous", "(He) is plentiful": ⲛⲁϣⲱ- /ⲛⲁϣⲉ-

1. ⲛⲁϣⲉⲛⲉⲕⲗⲟⲟⲗⲉ (III 31)
2. ⲛⲁϣⲉⲛ̄ⲧⲃ̄ⲛⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲉⲧϣⲟⲟⲡ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲙ̄ⲙⲓⲛⲉ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲛⲁϣⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲃ ⲛⲁϣⲉⲡϩⲁⲧ ⲛⲁϣⲉⲛⲉⲩϩⲩⲡⲁⲣⲭⲟⲛⲧⲁ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ (IV 22)
3. ⲛⲁϣⲱⲟⲩ ⲟⲛ ⲛ̄ⲃⲓⲛⲁⲣⲣⲟⲥ (III 115)
   [OBS. ⲛⲁϣⲱ- ⲛ̄ⲃⲓ- is post-classic, a by-construction for the Scripture Coptic ⲛⲁϣⲉ-]
4. ⲛⲁϣⲱⲣ ⲛ̄ⲃⲓⲡⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲃⲉⲕⲉ ⲉⲧϣⲟⲟⲡ ⲛⲏⲧⲛ̄ ϩⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲧⲛ̄ϩⲓⲥⲉ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ (III 179)

5. ⲛⲁⲱⲱⲟⲩ ⲅⲁⲣ ϫⲓⲛⲛ̄ⲱⲟⲣⲡ ⲱⲁϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲑⲓϩⲉⲛⲉⲓⲟⲧⲉ ⲉⲁⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲥⲟⲱϥⲟⲩ (IV 28)
6. ⲛⲁⲱⲱⲟⲩ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲛ̄ⲑⲓⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲣ̄ⲱⲙ̄ⲙⲟ ⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ (E 83)

22.3 The ADJECTIVE VERB ⲛⲁⲁ-ϥ "(He) is great": ⲛⲁⲁ-/ ⲛⲁⲁ-

1. ⲏ ⲛⲉⲧⲱⲟⲟⲡ ⲛⲁⲛ ⲙⲏ ⲛⲁⲁⲁⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲛⲁⲧⲉϫⲏⲣⲁ ⲉⲧϩⲛ̄ⲥⲁⲣⲉⲡⲧⲁ (III 72)
2. ⲡⲁⲓⲱⲧ ⲛⲁⲁⲁϥ ⲉⲣⲟⲓ (Orig. 807)

22.4 The ADJECTIVE VERB ⲛⲉⲥⲱ-ϥ / ⲛⲉⲃⲱ-ϥ "(He) is beautiful/ugly"

1. ⲛⲉⲥⲱϥ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲏⲣ ⲉϥⲟⲛϩ̄ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲥⲱⲙⲁ ⲛ̄ⲛⲁϩⲣⲛ̄-ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲣⲟϥ ⲛⲉⲃⲱϥ ⲁⲉ ϩⲱⲱϥ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲏⲣ ⲛ̄ⲛⲁϩⲣⲛ̄ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲣⲟϥ ⲉϥⲙⲟⲟⲩⲧ (A I 374)
2. ⲥⲉⲕⲟⲥⲙⲉⲓ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲉⲥⲱⲟⲩ (IV 189)
3. ⲛⲉⲥⲉⲡⲉⲩⲕⲟⲥⲙⲟⲥ (Zoega p. 600)
4. ⲛⲉⲥⲱ ⲧⲁⲱⲃⲉⲉⲣⲉ ⲉⲓⲥϩⲏⲛⲧⲉ ⲛⲉⲥⲱ (III 52)
5. ⲉⲓⲥϩⲏⲛⲧⲉ ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲕ ⲡⲁⲥⲟⲛ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲉⲥⲱⲕ ⲉⲃⲱⲱϥ̄ ⲉⲣⲟⲕ (III 53)

22.5 THE ADJECTIVE VERBS CONVERTED (see Tables H, G)

(a) Circumstantial ⲉⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩ- "(He) being good": usually adnominal (27-30)
(b) Relative ⲉⲧⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩ- "who is good", "whose ... is good" (31-33)
(c) Second Tense ⲉⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩ- "(It is ...) that (he) is good" (34-38)
(d) Preterite ⲛⲉⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩ- "(He) was (/used to be) good", also in hypothetical (remote) condition (39-41)

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STERN parr. 311, 405, 408; STEINDORFF parr. 374, 461; TILL par. 284; VERGOTE par. 171; LAMBDIN par. 29.2; POLOTSKY, "Conjugation System" par. 37

(a) Circumstantial:

1. ⲟⲩϩⲱⲃ ⲉⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩϥ (Ch. 37)
2. ⲟⲩⲛⲟⲃ ⲛ̄ⲕⲣⲓⲙⲁ ⲉⲛⲁⲱⲱϥ (Wess. 9 165)

3. ϩⲉⲛϩⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲉⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲟⲩ ⲁⲛ (P 131.7 40 ro)
4. ⲙⲛ̄ⲃⲉϩⲓⲥⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲉⲛⲁⲁⲁϥ ⲉⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲱⲱⲡⲉ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲧϩⲓϩⲃⲟⲩⲣ (III 222)
5. ϩⲉⲛⲣ̄ⲙⲉⲓⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲉⲛⲁⲱⲱⲟⲩ (III 164)
6. ϩⲉⲛⲏⲓ ⲉⲛⲉⲥⲱⲟⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲟⲩ (P 130.2 7 89)
7. ⲟⲩⲉⲓⲱⲧ ⲟⲩ ⲙⲟⲛⲟⲛ ⲭⲉⲉϥϥⲓ ϩⲁⲡⲉⲧⲟ ⲛ̄ⲛⲟⲉⲓⲕ ⲉⲧⲉϥⲱⲉⲉⲣⲉ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲉϥⲣϩⲟⲩⲉ-ⲙⲉ ⲙⲙⲟϥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉϥⲟ ⲛⲁϥ ⲛⲱⲃⲣ-ⲟⲩⲱⲙ ϩⲓⲥⲱ ⲉϥⲛⲁ ⲉϥⲛⲏⲩ ϩ̄ⲡⲉϥⲏⲓ ⲛ̄ⲑⲉ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲱⲓⲣⲉ ⲏ ⲟⲩⲥⲟⲛ ⲉⲛⲁⲱⲉⲛⲉⲧ-ⲥⲱⲃⲉ ⲛ̄ⲥⲱⲟⲩ (Ch. 170)

(b) Relative:

1. ⲡⲱⲱⲥ ⲉⲧⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩϥ (Wess. 9 167)
2. ⲡⲓⲱⲱⲛⲉ ⲉⲧⲉⲛⲁⲱⲉⲧⲉϥϩ̄ⲙⲙⲉ (IV 19)
3. ⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲁⲅⲁⲡⲏ ⲉⲧⲛⲁⲱⲱⲥ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲣⲟⲓ (III 13)
4. ⲁⲱ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲕⲉⲃⲱⲛⲧ̄ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡⲕⲉⲕⲉⲣⲁⲩⲛⲟⲥ ⲉⲧⲛⲁⲁⲁϥ ⲉⲓⲛⲁⲓ (Ch. 122f.)
5. ⲛⲁⲓ ⲉⲧⲛⲉⲥⲱⲟⲩ ⲙⲉⲛ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲩⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲓϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲇⲉ ⲟⲩⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲭⲟⲟⲩ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲟ ⲉⲧⲁⲩⲟⲟⲩ (IV 3)
6. ⲡⲱⲛⲉ ⲛ̄ⲃⲁⲉⲓⲉ ⲏ ⲉⲧⲛⲉⲃⲱϥ (Wcss. 9 110)
7. ⲡⲉⲭ̄ⲥ̄ ⲉⲧⲉⲛⲁⲱⲉⲡⲉⲫⲛⲁ (RE 11 16)
8. ⲧϩⲟⲉⲓⲧⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲛ̄ⲧϩⲏⲕⲉ ⲉⲧⲉⲛⲁⲱⲉⲥⲟⲩⲛⲧⲥ̄ ⲁⲛ (IV 162)
9. ⲧⲃⲱ ⲛ̄ⲭⲟⲉⲓⲧ ⲉⲧⲛⲉⲥⲱⲥ ⲉⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲣⲟⲥ (Ch. 152)
10. ⲙⲛ̄ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲁⲁϥ ⲉⲣⲟϥ (Ch. 135f.)
    {NB: ⲉⲣⲟϥ comparative: "than Himself"}

(c) Second Present:

1. ⲉⲱⲭⲉⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩϩⲉⲛⲱⲏⲣⲉ ⲱⲓⲓⲙ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲩⲕⲱ ⲛ̄ⲥⲱⲟⲩ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲱⲁⲭⲉ ⲉⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲧⲛ̄ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲧⲱⲧⲛ̄ ⲉⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲧⲥⲧⲟ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛ̄ⲛⲟⲩⲓ (IV 96)
    {NB: ⲛ̄ⲟⲩ in focus}
2. ⲡⲁⲛⲧⲱⲥ ⲉⲛⲁⲁϥ ϩ̄ⲙⲡⲧⲁⲓⲟ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲟⲟⲩ (Orig. 807)
    {NB: ⲉⲛⲁⲁϥ = ⲉⲛⲁⲁⲁϥ; ϩ̄ⲙ- in focus}
3. ϩⲓⲧⲛ̄ⲟⲩ ⲉⲛⲁⲁⲁⲩ ⲉⲛⲉⲩⲉⲣⲏⲩ (Ch. 135)
    {NB: ϩⲓⲧⲛ̄ⲟⲩ in focus}
    [OBS. This may be a case of the circumstantial and not Second Tense conversion; the circumstantial is used as the "that ..." constituent of a Cleft Sentence after its focus: see SHISHA-HALEVY pp. 87-94]

(d) Preterite:

1. ⲛⲉⲛⲁⲱⲉⲛ̄ⲱⲛⲉ ⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲙⲧⲟ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ (III 27)
2. ϩⲁⲑⲏ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲙ̄ⲡⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲉⲛⲁⲱⲉⲛⲉⲧⲁⲍⲓⲟⲩ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲧⲭⲟⲥⲉ (Ch. 124)

3. ογⲛ̄ϩⲁϩ ⲛ̄ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲉⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲟⲩ ⲉⲙⲁⲧⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲧⲟⲩⲁⲣⲭⲉⲓ ⲉⲁⲩⲑⲟ ⲁⲉ ⲉⲡⲉϩⲟⲩⲟ ⲙ̄ⲛ̄ⲛⲥⲁⲧⲣⲉⲩⲣ̄ⲉϫⲟⲩⲥⲓⲁ (Ch. 134)
4. ⲉⲛⲉⲛⲁⲱⲱⲟⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲛ̄ⲑⲓⲛⲉⲧⲛⲁⲣⲃⲟⲗ ... ⲛⲉⲟⲩⲱⲓⲡⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲙ̄ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲛⲟⲃⲛⲉⲃ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲛ̄ⲥⲉⲛⲁⲣⲃⲟⲗ ⲉⲣⲟⲥ ⲁⲛ (Ch. 173)
{NB: this is the circumstantial preterite, ⲉⲛⲉ- used as the supposition of a remote hypothetical condition ("irrealis")}

23. THE PRESENT: ⲛⲁⲓⲁⲧ- ⲟ̄ⲩ "Blessed is (he)"

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STERN par. 198; TILL par. 284 Obs.; VERGOTE par. 183

1. ⲛⲁⲓⲁⲧⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲧⲛⲁϩⲩⲡⲟⲙⲉⲓⲛⲉ ϫⲓⲛⲛ̄ⲱⲟⲣⲡ̄ ⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓ ⲁⲉ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲧⲛⲁⲁⲣⲛⲁ ⲛ̄ⲑⲉ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲁⲣⲛⲁ ϫⲓⲛⲛ̄ⲱⲟⲣⲡ̄ (Orig. 651)
2. ⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲧⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ ⲉϩⲉⲛϫⲓⲛⲟⲟⲛⲥ̄ ... ⲛⲁⲓⲁⲧⲟⲩ ⲟⲛ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲧⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ ⲉϩⲉⲛⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲟⲩ ϩⲓϫⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲩⲙⲁ ⲛ̄ⲛ̄ⲕⲟⲧⲕ̄ (Ch. 100)
{NB: ϩⲉⲛⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲟⲩ indefinite nominalized relative of the Adjective Verb ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩ-}
3. ⲛⲁⲓⲁⲧⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲛⲥⲉⲱⲙ̄ⲱⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲛ̄ϩⲉⲛⲕⲉⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ (Ch. 109)
4. ⲛⲁⲉⲓⲁⲧⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲛ̄ⲁⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲥ ⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲙⲟⲩ ⲏ ⲉⲧⲛⲁⲙⲟⲩ ϩⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲩⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲙⲉ (III 151)
5. ⲛⲁⲓⲁⲧⲟ̄ ⲛⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲁⲓⲁⲧⲥ̄ ⲛⲟⲩⲥϩⲓⲙⲉ ⲛ̄ⲁⲧⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ... ⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓ ⲁⲉ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓ ⲛⲟⲩⲥϩⲓⲙⲉ ⲉⲁⲩⲥⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲓⲥ̄ ⲉⲣⲱⲁⲛⲧⲉⲩϩⲁⲏ ⲉⲣⲉⲑⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲣⲭⲏ ⲙ̄ⲡⲓⲏⲓ (Young 4)
{NB: ⲉⲣ-ⲑⲉ "be/become as"}

23.1 ⲛⲁⲓⲁⲧ- CONVERTED (Table G)

(a) Circumstantial ⲉⲛⲁⲓⲁⲧ-ⲟ̄ⲩ "He being blessed" (28.1)
(b) Relative ⲉⲧⲉⲛⲁⲓⲁⲧ-ⲟ̄ⲩ "that (he) is blessed" (31.2)
(c) Second Tense ⲉⲛⲁⲓⲁⲧ-ⲟ̄ⲩ ... "(It is ...) that (he) is blessed" (34.1)

(a) Circumstantial:

1. ⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓ ⲛⲁⲛ ϫⲉⲁⲛⲁⲙⲉⲗⲉⲓ ⲉⲛⲁⲓⲁⲧⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲧⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ (A II 374)
[OBS. ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲟⲩ reinforcer: "they, on the other hand"]

(b) Relative:

1. ⲧⲁⲓ ⲧⲉ ⲑⲉ ⲉⲧⲉⲛⲁⲉⲓⲁⲧⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲧⲛⲁⲃⲟ̄ⲟⲩⲡⲁⲣⲣⲏⲥⲓⲁ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲛⲁⲅⲕⲏ (III 68)

(c) Second Tense:

1. ⲉⲛⲁⲓⲁⲧϥ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲁⲛ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲧⲕⲁⲑⲏⲕⲉⲓ ⲭⲉⲁϥⲭⲱ ⲛ̄ϩⲉⲛⲱⲁⲭⲉ ⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲉⲛⲁⲓⲁⲧⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲧⲟⲩⲕⲁⲑⲏⲕⲉⲓ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲭⲉⲁⲩⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲉⲛⲉⲩⲱⲁⲭⲉ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲉⲛⲁⲓⲁⲧϥ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲧⲕⲁⲑⲏⲕⲉⲓ ⲉϥⲱⲁⲛϩⲁⲣⲉϩ ⲉⲛⲉⲧϥⲭⲱ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲁⲓⲁⲧⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲧⲟⲩⲕⲁⲑⲏⲕⲉⲓ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲩⲱⲁⲛⲧⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲣⲁⲁ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲧⲟⲩⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ (Cl. Pr. 33 1)
   {NB: the Second Tense puts the ⲭⲉ- clauses in focus: "It is because ... that ...", "It is not because ... that ..."}

24 THE PRESENT: (ⲉ)ϩⲛⲁ- ϥ "(He) wishes", "(He) is willing"

Negatived: (ⲛ̄-)ϩⲛⲁ- ⲁⲛ

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STERN par. 198; STEINDORFF par. 295(4); TILL par. 283; VERGOTE par. 170(6); POLOTSKY Rev. Till p. 231f.

1. ⲁⲗⲏⲑⲱⲥ ⲉϩⲛⲁⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲗⲗⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲙⲁⲕⲁⲣⲓⲍⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲡⲧⲏⲣϥ̄ (III 161)
2. ⲉϩⲛⲁⲛ ⲉϯ ⲛⲏⲧⲛ̄ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲩⲁⲅⲅⲉⲗⲓⲟⲛ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲧⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲛⲉⲛⲕⲉⲯⲩⲭⲏ (Ch. 109)
3. ϩⲁϩ ⲛ̄ⲥⲟⲡ ⲉϩⲛⲁⲛ ⲉⲕⲃⲉⲡⲉⲛⲗⲁⲥ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲡⲉⲓⲃⲉ ⲉⲁϥⲣ̄ⲑⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲧⲱⲟⲃϩ̄ ⲁⲩⲱ ϥⲕⲁⲧⲁⲗⲁⲗⲉⲓ ⲏ ⲧⲛ̄ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲗⲁⲗⲉⲓ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧϥ̄ (IV 23)
4. ⲉⲱⲭⲉ-ⲉϩⲛⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲉϩⲱⲧⲡ̄ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲥⲱⲛⲉ ϩⲱⲥ-ⲱⲃⲣ̄-ⲣϩⲱⲃ ... ⲉⲓⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟ ⲏ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲥ ⲥⲁϩⲱⲧⲛ̄ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲏ ⲁⲛⲁⲭⲱⲣⲉⲓ ⲛⲏⲧⲛ̄ (A I 73)
   {NB: ⲉϩⲛⲉ 2nd sgl. fem. person}

24.1 (ⲉ)ϩⲛⲁ- CONVERTED

(a) Circumstantial ⲉϩⲛⲁ- ϥ "(he) being willing/unwilling" (also adnominal; 27-30)
(b) Relative ⲉⲧⲉϩⲛⲁ- "who is willing", "what (He) wishes" (31-33)

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STERN par. 407; TILL parr. 198, 468, 483; VERGOTE par. 171, p. 225

(a) Circumstantial:

1. ⲁⲛⲧⲛ̄ⲛⲟⲟⲩϥ ⲱⲁⲣⲱⲧⲛ̄ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲓⲕⲉⲥⲟⲡ ⲉⲛϩⲛⲁϥ ⲁⲛ (P 130.1 131 328)
2. ⲧⲛⲁⲭⲱ ⲁⲉ ⲛⲁⲕ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲓⲱⲁⲭⲉ ⲉⲛϩⲛⲁⲓ ⲁⲛ ⲉ̄ϫⲟⲟⲥ (A II 191)

3. ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲱⲱⲡⲉ ⲛⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ⲛⲉⲧⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ ⲉⲍⲉⲛⲡⲉⲑⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲍⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲣⲟⲓ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲩⲙⲉⲥⲧⲱⲓ ⲉⲡⲭⲓⲛⲭⲏ ⲉⲍⲛⲁⲩ ⲏ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲕ ⲉⲛⲧⲉⲩⲃⲟⲙ ⲁⲛ ⲧⲉ ... (III 131)
4. ⲉⲩⲱⲁⲛⲟⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲍⲣⲁⲓ ⲛ̄ⲍⲏⲧⲛ̄ ⲍⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲧⲁⲓⲁⲕⲟⲛⲉⲓ ⲏ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲕ ⲕⲉⲟⲩⲁ ⲉⲕⲟ ⲛ̄ⲁⲧⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲏ ⲉⲕⲧⲧⲱⲛ ⲟⲩⲃⲉⲡⲉⲓⲱⲧ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲧⲟⲩⲏⲍ ⲍⲙⲡⲉⲓⲙⲁ ⲛⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲱ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲉⲛⲍⲛⲁⲕ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲥⲱⲧⲙ ⲏ ⲉⲃⲱⲕ ⲙⲡⲍⲱⲃ ⲏ ⲛⲉⲥⲃⲏⲩⲉ ... (IV 50)
5. ⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲧⲣⲉⲡⲉⲕⲁⲗⲁⲑⲟⲛ ⲱⲱⲡⲃ ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲟⲩⲍⲧⲟⲣ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲉⲍⲛⲁⲕ (A I 2)

(b) Relative:

1. ⲡⲧⲱⲱ ⲉⲧⲉⲍⲛⲁⲕ (E 69)
2. ⲡⲉⲧⲉⲍⲛⲉⲡⲉⲕⲍⲏⲧ (BM 8810 p. 391)
3. ⲛ̄ⲑⲉ ⲉⲧⲉⲍⲛⲏⲧⲛ̄ (III 82)
4. ⲧⲉⲓⲙⲓⲛⲉ ⲛ̄ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲧⲉⲛ̄ⲍⲛⲁⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ (A I 61)
5. ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲍⲛⲁⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲥⲁⲍⲱⲟⲩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲥⲃⲱ ⲉⲃⲟⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲱ ⲛⲓⲙ (Orig. 365)

24.2 ⲣ̄ⲍⲛⲁ- "be willing" in various conjugation forms outside the present

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

TILL par. 283 Obs.; VERGOTE par. 170(6); LAMBDIN par. 20.2(4); POLOTSKY, Rev. Till p. 231f., "Conjugation System" p. 402

1. ⲁⲩⲣ̄ⲍⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲩⲱⲱⲡⲉ ⲉⲩⲟ ⲛ̄ⲁⲃⲣⲏⲛ (IV 29)
2. ⲛⲉⲧⲛⲁⲣⲍⲛⲁⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲛ̄ⲉⲓ ⲉⲍⲣⲁⲓ (III 200)
3. ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲁⲣⲍⲛⲏⲧⲛ̄ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲛⲁⲩ (A II 278)
4. ⲣ̄ⲍⲛⲁⲕ ⲏ ⲟⲩⲱⲱ (A I 83)
   {NB: ⲣ̄ⲍⲛⲁⲕ and ⲟⲩⲱⲱ are imperatives}
5. ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲍⲉⲛⲕⲉⲉⲓⲇⲟⲥ ⲉⲙⲉⲩⲣ̄ⲍⲛⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ⲃⲓⲡⲧⲉⲭⲛⲓⲧⲏⲥ ⲉⲕⲁⲗⲁⲩ ⲉⲍⲣⲁⲓ (P 130.2 104)
6. ⲙ̄ⲡⲣ̄ⲍⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲡⲓⲥⲧⲉⲩⲉ ⲉⲡⲉⲭ̄ⲥ̄ (Ch. 142)
7. ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲣⲍⲛⲉ ⲉⲉⲓ ⲉⲍⲣⲁⲓ ⲏ ⲃⲟⲗ ⲍⲛ̄ⲛⲟⲩⲕⲁⲕⲓⲁ (III 200)
   {NB: 2nd person sgl. fem. actor and possessor; ⲃⲟⲗ for ⲉⲃⲟⲗ}

25. ⲙⲉⲱⲁ-ⲫ "(He) does not know"; in the generic 2nd person sgl. masc., ⲙⲉⲱⲁⲕ "perhaps"

Rarely also in the relative conversion: ⲉⲧⲉⲙⲉⲱⲁ-

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STERN parr. 268, 527; STEINDORFF par. 295(2); TILL par. 285; VERGOTE par. 170(2)

1. ⲙⲉⲱⲁⲓ ⲭⲉ-ⲉⲓⲛⲁⲭⲉ-ⲟⲩ (Wess. 9 66)
   {NB: ⲉⲓⲛⲁⲭⲉ- Second Future, putting ⲟⲩ in focus: "What is it I shall say"}
2. ⲙⲉⲱⲁⲕ ⲛⲉⲓⲍⲱⲟⲛ ⲱⲓⲙ ⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ⲉⲧⲍⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲗⲕⲱ ⲉⲱⲁⲩⲱⲱⲱ ⲙⲛ̄ⲛⲧⲏⲩ ⲍⲙ̄ⲡⲧⲣⲉⲩⲡⲱⲱ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲗⲕⲱ (III 48)
   {NB: ⲉⲱⲁⲩ-: Second Aorist}
3. ⲙⲉⲱⲉ ⲭⲉⲛⲓⲙ ⲛⲉ ⲏ ⲟⲩ ⲛⲉ (A I 76)
   {NB: 2nd person sgl. fem. actor}
4. (Even if he does not give alms to the poor because of his callousness or misanthropy,) ⲙⲉⲱⲁⲕ ⲫⲛⲁ† ⲛⲁⲫ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩⲍⲏⲩ (III 65)
5. ⲙⲉⲱⲁⲕ ⲁⲓⲭⲓⲍⲟⲓⲛⲉ ⲛ̄ⲃⲟⲛ̄ⲥ ⲛ̄ⲍⲓⲧⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ̄ ⲙ̄ⲡⲓⲉⲓⲙⲉ (Wess. 9 164)
   {NB: ⲙ̄ⲡⲓ- = ⲉⲙⲡⲓ-, circumstantial neg. perfect}
6. ⲙⲉⲱⲁⲕ ⲣⲱ ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲍⲉⲛⲱⲁⲭⲉ ⲛ̄ⲍⲏⲧⲟⲩ ⲱ̄ⲱⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ (IV 72)
   {NB: ⲱ̄ⲱⲉ = ⲉⲱⲱⲉ circumstantial)
7. ⲙⲉⲱⲁⲩ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲛⲁⲕⲱ ⲛ̄ⲥⲱⲩ ⲙ̄ⲡⲓⲕⲟⲥⲙⲟⲥ (BL 8800 (A) fol. 6 ro)
8. ⲛ̄ⲑⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲉⲧⲉⲙⲉⲱⲉ ⲉⲡⲧⲱⲱ ⲙ̄ⲡⲍⲏⲧ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲓⲕⲉⲟⲩⲉⲓ ... (Lcyd. 411)
   {NB: ⲙⲉⲱⲉ 2nd sgl. fem.}
9. ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲙⲉⲱⲁⲛ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲭⲉⲟⲩ ⲛⲉ (IF apud Dict. 201)

26. ⲡⲉⲭⲁ-ⲫ NARRATIVE PAST: "(He) said ...", introducing speech or quotation, especially dialogue-in-narration

ⲡⲉⲭⲁ- may open, conclude or be inserted parenthetically in the reported speech. When initial, it is followed by ⲭⲉ-.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STERN parr. 308-311; STEINDORFF par. 294; TILL par. 282; VERGOTE par. 170(1); LAMBDIN par. 20.3

1. ⲡⲉⲭⲁⲫ ⲭⲉⲁⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲙⲉⲣⲉⲡⲕⲁⲕⲉ ⲛ̄ⲍⲟⲩⲟ ⲉⲡⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲛ ⲙ̄ⲡⲁ̄ⲭⲟⲟⲥ ⲭⲉⲁⲩⲙⲉⲣⲉⲡⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲛ ⲛ̄ⲍⲟⲩⲟ ⲉⲡⲕⲁⲕⲉ (Ch. 17)
2. ⲡⲉⲧⲙⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲓ ⲡⲉⲭⲁⲫ ⲫⲛⲁⲍⲁⲣⲉⲍ ⲉⲡⲁⲱⲁⲭⲉ (A I 38)
3. ⲉⲓⲍⲙⲟⲟⲥ ⲍⲓⲭⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲧⲟⲟⲩ ⲡⲉⲭⲉⲡⲉⲧⲭⲱ ⲛ̄ⲛⲁⲓ ⲁⲓⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲩⲍⲱⲟⲛ (III 44)

4. ϩⲉⲛⲱⲁϥⲧⲉ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲡⲉϫⲁϥ ⲛⲉ (III 118)
5. ⲡⲉϫⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛⲁϥ ϫⲉⲡⲁⲑⲏⲧ ⲥⲉⲛⲁϥⲓ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲕⲯⲩⲭⲏ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲟⲧⲕ̄ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲓⲟⲩⲱⲏ (III 111)
6. ⲙ̄ⲙⲛ̄ⲣⲁⲱⲉ ⲱⲟⲟⲡ ⲛ̄ⲛⲁⲥⲉⲃⲏⲥ ⲡⲉϫⲉⲡϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ (Ch. 169)
7. ⲡⲉϫⲁϥ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲛ̄ⲑⲓⲡⲁⲡⲟⲥⲧⲟⲗⲟⲥ ϫⲉⲛⲁⲓ ⲉⲧⲉⲡⲉⲩⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲡⲉ ϩⲛⲧⲟⲩ (Ch. 110)
8. ⲁϥⲟⲩⲱⲱⲃ̄ ϫⲉⲟⲩ ⲡⲉ ⲁⲣⲁ ⲡⲣⲓⲣ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲉϫⲁⲓ ϫⲉⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲛ ⲁϥⲧⲁⲩⲉ-ϩⲉⲛⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲟⲛ ϫⲉⲙⲏⲧⲓ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲟⲩ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲉϫⲁⲓ ϫⲉⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲛ ⲡⲉϫⲁϥ ϫⲉⲉⲓⲉ ⲟⲩ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲉϫⲁⲓ ϫⲉⲡⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲡⲉ ⲧⲃⲟⲧⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ (Ch. 105)
9. ⲡⲉϫⲏⲧⲛ̄ ϫⲉ-ⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲛⲱⲁϫⲉ ⲛ̄ⲥⲱⲕ ϩⲛ̄ⲟⲩ (Wess. 9 90)
{NB: ⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲛⲱⲁϫⲉ Second Perfect, putting ϩⲛ̄ⲟⲩ in focus}
10. ⲡⲉϫⲉⲟⲩⲁ ⲏ ϩⲟⲓⲛⲉ ϫⲉⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ ⲁⲡⲁⲓ ⲏ ⲛⲁⲓ ⲡⲱⲧ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲓⲙⲓⲛⲉ ⲛ̄ⲣⲱⲙⲉ (A I 60)
11. ⲡⲉϫⲏ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲱϩⲙ̄ ϫⲉⲙ̄ⲡⲣ̄ⲱⲁϫⲉ ⲛⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲛ ϩⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲱⲟⲧ (A I 74)
{NB: 2nd sgl. fem. actor}

SECOND PART (Units I-IV)
TOPICS OF ADVANCED SYNTAX

UNIT I: CONVERSION (sections 27-41)

UNIT II: THE CONJUNCTIVE (sections 42-43)

UNIT III: CONDITIONAL COMPLEXES (sections 44-48)

UNIT IV: THE INFINITIVE OUTSIDE CONJUGATION (sections 49-51)

UNIT (I): CONVERSION

(A) THE CIRCUMSTANTIAL CONVERSION: ADNOMINAL (ADNEXAL), ADVERBAL, PREMODIFYING

27.1 Indefinite/zero noun, indef. pronoun expanded by the circumstantial (ADNOMINAL circumstantial)
27.2 Non expressing time expanded by the circumstantial (ADNOMINAL circumstantial)
27.3 A noun/personal pronoun *predicatively* expanded by the circumstantial (ADNOMINAL ADNEXAL circumstantial)

28.1 A clause followed (expanded) by the circumstantial (MODIFIER ["adverbial"] circumstantial)
28.2 A verb of incomplete predication ("descriptive verb") expanded by the circumstantial (ADVERBAL ADNEXAL circumstantial, as *predicative complement*)
28.3 The circumstantial preceding the main clause (PREMODIFYING circumstantial)

29.1 The circumstantial carrying on a relative or preterite conversion

30 Some special thematic roles of the circumstantial

(A) THE CIRCUMSTANTIAL CONVERSION:

ϵ- + clause (conjugation form or Nominal Sentence): see Table G

The adnominal circumstantial expands (qualifies, describes) an indefinite noun or pronoun or a nominal expression of time or occasion (27.1-2).

The adnexal circumstantial expands and adjoins a predicate (rheme) to a definite or indefinite noun or any pronoun, which is thus expanded predicatively (27.3).

The modifier or adverbial circumstantial expands a clause, modifying it by referring it circumstantially or both predicatively and circumstantially to an act or state (28.1-2).

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

STERN parr. 406-408, 410, 412, 415-416; STEINDORFF parr. 375-379, 457-458; TILL parr. 328-333, 368, 370, 404, 417, 425, 453, 475, 486; VERGOTE parr. 165, 172, 210, 211(1), 212(6), pp. 225f., 227f., 228f., 230f.; LAMBDIN parr. 23.1, 24.2, 30.9; SHISHA-HALEVY 191f.

27.1 INDEFINITE/ZERO-DET. NOUNS or INDEFINITE PRONOUNS EXPANDED BY THE CIRCUMSTANTIAL (**adnominal** circumstantial): "a man who ...", "one who ..."

The relative converter does not occur as an expansion (qualification, description) of indefinite nouns or pronouns: the circumstantial is the form found in this role.

1. ⲟⲩⲙⲁ ⲉⲫⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ ⲉⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲫ ⲉⲱⲏⲣⲉ ϩⲓⲱⲉⲉⲣⲉ (IV 29)
2. ϩⲉⲛⲡⲁⲣⲑⲉⲛⲟⲥ ⲛ̄ⲥⲟⲃ ⲛⲉ ⲉⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲩⲛⲉϩ ϩⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲩϩⲛⲁⲁⲩ ⲙⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲩⲗⲁⲙⲡⲁⲥ (IV 47)
3. ⲉⲧⲡⲱ ⲉⲫϩⲟⲣⲱ̄ (IV 154)
   [NB: the zero-det. feminine noun is resumed by a masculine pronoun in the circumstantial form; in fact, the zero article is resumed, not the lexeme: zero is resumed by the masculine as a gender-indifferent ("neuter") form. See SHISHA-HALEVY, Chapter 5]
4. ⲥⲃⲱ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ ⲉⲫⲭⲏⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ (III 93)
5. ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲟⲩϩⲱⲃ ⲉⲓⲛⲁⲭⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲟⲩϩⲟⲧⲉ ⲡⲉ (Wess. 9 168)
   {OBS. ⲟⲩϩⲟⲧⲉ "fearsome" ("one of fear"): see POLOTSKY, "Nominalsatz und Cleft Sentence" p. 418f., SHISHA-HALEVY p. 142ff.]
6. ⲧⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩϩⲱⲃ ⲉⲛⲁ̄ϩⲏⲡ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲛⲥⲁⲃⲉⲟⲩ (Ch. 33)
7. ⲁⲓⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲩϩⲱⲟⲛ ⲉⲫϩⲁⲡⲁⲏⲣ ⲉⲫⲙⲓⲯⲉ ⲙⲛ̄ⲕⲉϩⲱⲟⲛ ⲉⲫϩⲓⲭⲙ̄ⲡⲕⲁϩ (III 44)
8. ⲭⲣⲉⲓⲁ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲛ̄ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲫⲯⲱⲛⲉ (III 71)
9. ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲕⲉϩⲱⲃ ⲇⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲉⲁⲣⲉⲗⲁϥ ⲉⲛⲧⲉⲱⲡ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟϥ ⲁⲛ ⲭⲉⲟⲩⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲡⲉ (III 201)
   {NB: ⲉ-ⲁⲣⲉ- a variant 2nd sgl. fem. form of the circ. perfect}
10. ⲁⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ ⲉϩⲉⲛⲯⲟⲭⲛⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲧⲛⲁⲯⲧⲁϩⲟⲟⲩ ⲁⲛ (Leid. 296f.)
    {NB: ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲧⲛⲁ- = ⲉⲛⲧⲉⲧⲛⲁ-}
11. ϩⲟⲓⲛⲉ ⲉⲁⲩⲣ̄ϩⲉⲛⲛⲟⲃ ⲛ̄ⲁϩⲉ ⲯⲁⲛⲧⲟⲩⲣ̄ϩⲗ̄ⲗⲟ ⲉⲙⲁⲧⲉ ϩⲉⲛⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲉⲁⲩⲙⲟⲩ ⲉⲩⲥⲟⲃⲕ̄ (III 44)
12. ⲟⲩⲁ ⲉⲫⲕⲱⲧ ⲙⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲙⲏⲏⲯⲉ ⲉⲩⲯⲟⲣⲯⲣ̄ ⲛ̄ⲥⲱϥ (IV 94)

27.2 NOUNS EXPRESSING TIME or OCCASION EXPANDED BY THE CIRCUMSTANTIAL (adnominal circumstantial): "the time when ..."

1. ⲛⲓⲟⲩⲛⲟⲩ ⲉⲛⲥⲱⲟⲩϩ ⲉⲡⲣⲁⲛ ⲛ̄ⲛⲓ̄ⲥ̄ (Ch. 156)
2. ⲧⲉⲓⲯⲟⲙⲧⲉ ⲛⲟⲩⲛⲟⲩ ⲉϥⲟϥⲧ̄ ⲉⲡⲱⲉ (III 37)
3. ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲛⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲛ̄ϩⲱⲃ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲛ̄ⲁⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲥⲩⲛⲏ (IV 102)
4. ⲡⲥⲟⲡ ⲏ ⲡⲉϩⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲛⲥⲟⲟⲩϩ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ (A I 123)
   [OBS. Contrast the stative here ("when we are gathered") with the infinitive in text 1 ("as we gather")]
5. ⲡⲥⲟⲡ ⲉⲛⲉⲩϩⲁϩⲧⲏⲛ (Ch. 83)
   {NB: ⲉⲛⲉⲩ- circumstantial (or relative?) imperfect: section 39.1.1}
6. ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲧⲉⲧⲛⲁϯⲗⲟⲅⲟⲥ ⲛ̄ⲓⲏⲥⲟⲩⲥ (Orig. 372)
7. ⲡⲙⲉϩⲱⲟⲙⲛ̄ⲧ ⲛ̄ϩⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲗϥⲃⲱⲕ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲛⲉϥⲙⲁ ⲛ̄ⲱⲱⲡⲉ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ (Orig. 347)

27.3 A NOUN or PERSONAL PRONOUN PREDICATIVELY EXPANDED BY THE CIRCUMSTANTIAL (**adnexal** circumstantial): "(I found) him/the man/a man sitting". The noun/pronoun is normally an object of a verb or adjoined to another noun by means of ⲛ̄-.

1. ⲁϥⲕⲁⲁϥ ⲉϥⲟⲛϩ̄ (Ch. 32)
2. ⲕⲁⲛ ϩⲁⲣⲉϩ ⲉⲙⲙⲉⲗⲟⲥ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉϫ̄ⲥ̄ ⲉⲩⲟⲩⲟϫ (III 115)
   {NB: ϩⲁⲣⲉϩ imperative}
3. ⲧⲛ̄ⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲣⲟⲛ ⲉⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲛⲃⲉⲙⲁ ⲙ̄ⲡⲱⲧ (RE 10 164)
4. ϯⲟⲩⲁⲱⲟⲩ ⲉⲩⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ (IV 97)
5. ⲛ̄ⲧⲛⲁⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲡⲱⲟⲩⲣⲉ ⲱⲟⲙ ⲉⲱⲁⲩϫⲡⲟϥ ⲉϥⲕⲱⲧⲉ ⲛ̄ⲥⲁⲧⲕⲓⲃⲉ ⲧⲁϫⲩ (Wess. 9 140)
   {NB: a rhetorical question}
6. ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄ϫⲱ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲃⲁⲓⲁⲁⲩ (III 25)
7. ⲁϥⲃⲛ̄ⲧϥ̄ ⲉϥⲥⲛϩ ϫⲉ ... (III 21)
8. ⲥⲉⲛⲁⲃⲓⲛⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲱⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ⲉⲁⲩⲡⲟⲣⲕϥ̄ (III 141)
9. ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲁⲩ ⲙ̄ⲡⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲛ ⲙⲛ̄ⲡⲛⲁⲩ ⲙ̄ⲡⲣⲏ ⲉϥⲛⲁⲡⲓⲣⲉ (III 87)
10. ⲛ̄ⲑⲉ ⲛ̄ⲉⲩϩⲁ ⲉⲩⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲛ̄ⲁⲇⲁⲙ ⲧⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲥⲉⲓⲛⲉ ⲛ̄ⲁⲇⲁⲙ ϩⲛ̄ϩⲱⲃ ⲛⲓⲙ (Leyd. 347f.)
11. ⲛ̄ⲑⲉ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲧⲟⲩⲉⲙ-ⲁϥ ⲛ̄ⲣⲓⲣ ϩⲓϫⲱⲙⲓⲛ ⲉⲣⲉⲛⲉⲩϩⲛⲁⲁⲩ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲧⲟⲗⲙ̄ (III 177)

28.1 A CLAUSE EXPANDED BY THE CIRCUMSTANTIAL (modifier or "adverbial" circumstantial): "He came here wishing to speak to me", also resolved in English into ".../as/when/while/although he wished ...".

NB: the practical difference between the adverbial, adnexal and adnominal roles of the circumstantial is at times tenuous and their distinction difficult.

1. ⲁϥϣⲱⲭⲉ ⲛ̄ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲓ ⲉϥⲟⲩⲱϣ ⲉⲣⲃⲟⲗ (III 39)
2. ϯⲛⲁⲧⲁⲙⲟϥ ϩⲱⲱⲧ ⲉⲛ̀ϯϣⲓⲡⲉ ⲁⲛ (Ch. 103)
3. ⲙⲉϣⲁⲕ ⲁⲓⲭⲓϩⲟⲉⲓⲛⲉ ⲛ̄ⲟⲟⲛ̄ⲥ̄ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ̄ ⲉⲙⲡⲓⲉⲓⲙⲉ (III 139)
4. ⲟⲩⲭⲁⲓ ⲛⲁⲛ ⲡⲉⲛⲙⲉⲣⲓⲧ ⲛ̄ⲉⲓⲱⲧ ⲉⲧⲥⲙⲁⲙⲁⲁⲧ ⲉⲕⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲛⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ (III 13)
5. ϩⲉⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲩⲭⲱ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲥ ⲭⲉⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲛϣⲏⲣⲉ ⲉⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲩϩⲁϩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲁⲩⲭⲡⲉϩⲁϩ (Or. 153)
6. ⲁⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲥⲩⲛϩⲓⲥⲧⲁ ⲙ̄ⲙⲱⲧⲛ̄ ϩⲱⲥⲁⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲥ ⲉⲛⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄ϩⲉⲛϣⲁϥⲧⲉ (III 135)
   [OBS. The circumstantial Nominal Sentence has typically an adversative meaning: "whereas", "although"]
7. ⲁⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲡⲉⲩⲙ̄ⲕⲁϩ ⲥⲁϥ† ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ϩⲉⲛϣⲏⲣⲉ (IV 27)
   [OBS. A narrative-continuative use of the circumstantial perfect]
8. ⲙ̄ⲡⲣ̄ⲉϣⲃⲙ̄ⲃⲟⲙ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲩϩⲛ̄ⲧⲙⲏⲧⲉ ⲛ̄ⲃⲁⲃⲩⲗⲱⲛ (Ch. 76)
9. ⲁⲩⲡⲱⲧ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲟⲧ ⲉⲓⲭⲓ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲟⲟⲛ̄ⲥ̄ ϩⲱⲥⲧⲩⲣⲁⲛⲛⲟⲥ (III 145)
10. ⲟⲩⲥ·†ⲱϩⲉ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲱⲧ ⲛ̄ⲕⲁϩ ⲧⲉⲧⲉⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲓⲥ ⲉⲓⲣ̄ϩⲱⲃ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧⲥ̄ ⲥⲟⲡ ⲉϣⲁⲓⲭⲟ ⲉⲣⲟⲥ ⲙ̄ⲡⲓⲃⲣⲟⲃ ⲥⲟⲡ ⲉϣⲁⲓⲭⲟ ⲉⲣⲟⲥ ⲙ̄ⲡⲓⲕⲉⲟⲩⲁ (Ch. 99)
    {NB: Cleft Sentence ("It is a single ... that I have"), section 33}
11. ⲕⲥⲙⲁⲙⲁⲁⲧ ⲉⲕⲧⲱⲱⲃⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲕⲛⲁⲧⲱⲱⲃⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲕⲗⲁⲟⲥ ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲧⲉⲩⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲩⲥⲉⲃⲏⲥ ⲙ̄ⲙⲓⲛⲉ ⲛⲓⲙ (RE 10 101)
12. ⲙ̄ⲡⲣ̄ⲥⲱⲧ̄ⲙ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲕ ⲉⲣⲟⲓ ⲉⲓⲭⲱ ⲛ̄ⲛⲁⲓ (Ch. 102)
    [OBS. This may alternatively be interpreted as an instance of the adnexal circumstantial, predicatively expanding the first person singular object pronoun]
13. ⲛ̄ⲑⲉ ⲉⲛⲧⲁⲣⲓⲉϩⲓ ⲥⲱⲃϩ̄ ⲉⲛϥ̄ⲥⲱⲃϩ ⲁⲛ ⲧⲁⲓ ⲧⲉ ⲑⲉ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲧⲁⲙⲉⲗⲉⲓ ⲙ̄ⲛ̄ⲛ̄ⲥⲁⲡⲃⲁⲡⲧⲓⲥⲙⲁ ⲉϣⲁⲩϣⲱⲡⲉ ⲛ̄ⲁⲕⲁⲑⲁⲣⲧⲟⲥ (A II 395)
14. ϩⲉⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲩⲣ̄ϩⲟⲧⲉ ϩⲛⲧϥ̄ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓϣ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲉⲁⲩⲥⲟⲧⲡⲟⲩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲟⲩⲧⲉϩⲁϩ ⲉϩⲉⲛϣⲏⲣⲉ ϣⲛⲓⲙ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲉ ⲉⲩⲣ̄ϩⲟⲩⲟ ⲉⲙⲁⲧⲉ ϩⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲅⲁⲡⲏ ⲙ̄ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲥⲡⲟⲩⲇⲏ (Miss. 282)

28.2 A VERB OF INCOMPLETE PREDICATION ("DESCRIPTIVE VERB") EXPANDED BY THE CIRCUMSTANTIAL (**adnexal** adverbal circumstantial, "predicative complement"): "He stopped speaking". The *circumstantial present* is the normal form with most descriptive verbs.

NB: (1) Note especially the use of the verb ϣωπε "come into being" "happen, take place" which, followed by the circumstantial as a predicative complement, is used suppletively, to combine various tenses with the durative pattern, Nominal Sentence or existential statements.

(2) The verb ογω means "have already done" when occurring in a main clause conjugation form, "finish doing" when in a dependent-clause form.

1. ⲉⲩⲉϣⲱⲡⲉ ⲉⲩⲥϩⲟⲩⲟⲣⲧ̄ ϩⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲩϩⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ... (others) ⲉⲩ-ⲉϣⲱⲡⲉ ⲉⲩⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲛ̄ⲛ̄ⲥⲁϩⲟⲩ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲥⲏϩ (III 155f.)
2. ⲧⲛ̄ⲛⲁϣⲱⲡⲉ ⲉⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲛⲟⲃ ⲛ̄ⲕⲣⲓⲙⲁ ϩⲓϫⲱⲛ (III 158)
3. ⲙ̄ⲡⲣ̄ϣⲱⲡⲉ ⲉⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲕ̄ϩⲁϩ ⲛ̄ⲥϩⲓⲙⲉ (A II 61)
4. ϣⲱⲡⲉ ⲉⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲧⲛ̄ⲧⲱⲛ ⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ (A II 27)
5. ⲁⲡϣⲁϫⲉ ϣⲱⲡⲉ ⲉϥϩⲟⲣϣ̄ ⲛⲁϥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲛϥ̄ⲟⲩⲁϣϥ̄ ⲁⲛ (Ch. 93)
6. ⲙ̄ⲡⲣ̄ϣⲱⲡⲉ ⲉⲕⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲕ ⲛ̄ⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲥ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲕ (A II 503)
7. ⲛ̄ⲧⲛⲁϩⲱ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲓⲁϣⲁϩⲟⲙ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉϫⲱⲕ (Rossi 2/3 43)
8. ⲁⲛⲥⲁⲃⲉ ⲟⲩⲱ ⲉⲩⲛⲟⲉⲓ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲛϫⲟⲟⲩ (P 130.4 99 vo)
9. ⲙ̄ⲡⲣ̄ϫⲛⲟⲩⲟⲩ ⲁⲕⲉⲟⲩⲁ ⲟⲩⲱ ⲉϥϫⲛⲟⲩ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ (III 20)
10. ⲉⲩϣⲁⲛⲟⲩⲱ ⲉⲩⲧⲱⲙⲥ̄ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲧⲙⲟⲟⲩⲧ ⲉⲩⲛⲁϣⲗⲏⲗ (IV 63)
11. ⲉⲩⲛⲁⲃⲱⲕ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲛⲉⲩⲏⲓ ⲛ̄ⲥⲉⲥⲃⲣⲁϩϯ̄ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲙⲁⲧⲉ ϣⲁⲛ-ⲧⲟⲩⲟⲩⲱ ⲉⲩⲣ̄ϩⲱⲃ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ (IV 69)
12. ⲙ̄ⲡⲣ̄ⲗⲟ ⲉⲕⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩϥ (Rossi 2/3 71)
13. ⲙ̄ⲡϥ̄ⲗⲟ ⲉϥⲟ ⲛ̄ϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ (Wess. 9 132)
14. ⲉⲕϣⲁⲛⲃⲱ ⲉⲕⲑ̄ⲃ̄ⲃⲓⲛⲩ ⲥⲉⲛⲁⲙⲉⲣⲓⲧⲕ̄ ϩⲓⲧⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲙⲛ̄ⲛ̄ⲣⲱⲙⲉ (IV 41)
15. ⲥⲉⲛⲁⲟⲩⲱⲛϩ̄ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲉⲩⲧⲙⲁⲓⲛⲩ (III 138)

28.3 THE CIRCUMSTANTIAL PRECEDING THE MAIN CLAUSE (premodifier circumstantial): "Even though he could not work, he came with us", "As long as you are here, I feel safe".

1. ⲉⲓϩⲙⲟⲟⲥ ϩⲓϫⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲧⲟⲟⲩ ⲡⲉϫⲉⲡⲉⲧϫⲱ ⲛ̄ⲛⲁⲓ ⲁⲓⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲩϩⲱⲟⲛ (III 44)
   {NB: ⲡⲉⲧϫⲱ ⲛ̄- definite relative present: "the one who ..."}

2. ⲡⲉⲧⲱⲱⲛⲉ ⲉⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲃⲟⲙ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲩ ⲉⲫⲓ ⲙⲁⲣⲉⲫⲫⲓ (IV 78)
3. ⲉⲕⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲓ ⲕⲛⲁⲧⲟⲩⲭⲟⲕ ⲙⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲧⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲉⲣⲟⲕ (III 145)
4. ⲉⲕⲥⲟⲗⲥⲗ̄ ⲙⲉⲛ ⲙ̄ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲭⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲙⲟⲟⲩⲧⲫ̄ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲕⲭⲟⲟⲥ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲭⲉⲡⲉⲫⲁⲍⲉ ⲡⲉ (III 43)
5. ⲕⲁⲛ ⲉⲁⲡⲉⲕⲭⲁⲭⲉ ⲏ ⲛⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲭⲁⲭⲉ ⲭⲓⲃⲟⲗ ⲉⲣⲱⲧⲛ̄ ⲕⲛⲁⲍⲱⲙ ⲏ ⲧⲉⲧⲛⲁⲍⲱⲙ ⲉⲭⲛ̄ⲡⲉⲩⲙⲁⲕⲍ̄ (A I 131)
6. ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲡⲁⲓ ⲉⲁⲛⲡⲱⲧ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲍⲏⲧⲟⲩ ⲙⲁⲣⲛ̄ⲣ̄ⲯⲁ ⲍⲓⲭⲙ̄ⲡⲕⲁⲍ ⲍⲛ̄ⲟⲩ-ⲧⲃ̄ⲃⲟ ⲙⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲙⲉ (Wcss. 9 141)
7. ⲉⲁⲕⲭⲓ ⲇⲉ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲁⲣⲭⲏ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲍⲓⲧⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲗⲁⲕ ⲛ̄ⲣⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲟ ⲛ̄ⲍⲏⲧⲥ̄ ⲍⲛ̄ⲍⲉⲛⲍⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲉⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲟⲩ (Ch. 85)
8. ⲍⲟⲧⲁⲛ ⲉⲩⲛⲁⲃⲉⲡ-ⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲫⲁⲩⲥⲟⲛⲍⲕ̄ ⲍⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲕⲃⲓⲭ ⲙⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲕ-ⲟⲩⲉⲣⲏⲧⲉ (Ch. 72)
{NB: ⲍⲟⲧⲁⲛ ⲉⲩⲛⲁ-: "Whenerever"; ⲉⲫⲁⲩ- Second Aorist, putting ⲍⲛ̄- in focus}
9. ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲕⲍⲓⲭⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲕⲙⲁ ⲛ̄ⲛ̄ⲕⲟⲧⲕ̄ ⲛⲕ̄ⲛⲁⲣⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲁⲛ (BM 8800 3 ro)
10. ⲛ̄ⲍⲟⲥⲟⲛ ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲉⲭⲥ̄ ⲱⲟⲟⲡ ⲛⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲛ ⲛⲕ̄ⲟⲩⲃⲏⲛ ⲁⲛ (Ch. 70)
11. ⲉⲛⲍⲟⲥⲟⲛ ⲉⲥⲛ̄ⲥⲱⲛ ⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲣ̄ⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲣ̄ⲧⲣⲉⲛⲥⲱⲱ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲭⲁⲣⲓⲥ (IV 24)

29. THE CIRCUMSTANTIAL CARRYING ON A RELATIVE or PRETERITE CONVERSION

1. ⲡⲍⲏⲕⲉ ⲉⲧⲉⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲕⲗⲗⲁⲩ ⲟⲩⲇⲉ ⲉⲛⲕ̄ⲛⲁⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲗⲗⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲛⲟⲕ (Rossi 2/3 70)
2. ⲡⲉⲧⲟⲩⲟⲛⲍ̄ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲧⲏⲣⲕ̄ ⲍⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲕⲍⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲣⲉⲛⲉⲕⲍⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲟⲩⲟⲛⲍ̄ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛ̄ⲍⲏⲧⲕ̄ (RE 10 161)
{NB: this is addressed discourse}
3. ⲛⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲉⲧⲉⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲃⲁⲗ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲥⲉⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲁⲛ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲩⲛ̄-ⲙⲁⲁⲭⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲥⲉⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲡⲣⲟ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲙⲉⲩ-ⲱⲁⲭⲉ (Mun. 107)
4. ⲛⲉⲡⲣⲟⲫⲏⲧⲏⲥ ⲛ̄ⲛⲟⲩⲭ ⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲩⲙⲉⲥⲧⲱⲟⲩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲍⲓⲧⲟⲟⲧⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉ-ⲡⲣⲟⲫⲏⲧⲏⲥ ⲛ̄ⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲁⲩⲙⲉⲣⲓⲧⲟⲩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲍⲓⲧⲛ̄ⲍⲉⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛ̄ⲁⲧⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛ̄ⲣⲉⲫⲣ̄ⲛⲟⲃⲉ (III 171)
5. ⲡⲉⲛⲉⲓⲱⲧ ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲛⲙⲁⲁⲩ ⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲭⲡⲟⲛ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲁⲩⲥⲁⲛⲟⲩⲱⲛ̄ (IV 129)
6. ⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁⲫⲭⲱⲍ ⲏ ⲉⲁⲍⲉⲛⲧⲁ̄ⲧⲗⲉ ⲍⲉ ⲉⲭⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲫⲍⲟⲓⲧⲉ (Wess. 9 113)
7. ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲧⲕⲱ ⲛ̄ⲍⲧⲏⲫ ⲉⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲛⲁⲱⲱⲡⲉ ⲛⲁⲫ ⲛ̄ⲍⲉⲗⲡⲓⲥ (Ch. 161)
8. ⲛⲉⲥⲥⲱⲃⲉ ⲏ ⲉⲥⲣⲁⲱⲉ (A I 53)
9. ⲛⲉⲣⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲃ̄ⲥ̄ ⲉⲣⲱⲧⲛ̄ ⲏ ⲉⲣⲉⲍⲉⲛⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲛ ⲛⲁⲱⲱⲡⲉ (III 86)

(*)30. SOME SPECIAL THEMATIC ROLES OF THE CIRCUMSTANTIAL

The circumstantial is used as theme (subject) in certain special Cleft Sentence ("It is... that.../who...") patterns, in which it marginally overlaps with the relative topic (see section 33). The focus, invariably initial in this pattern, is either an adverbial or a nominal syntagm.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

*SHISHA-HALEVY, chap. 2, par. 2.5

1. ⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲉⲭⲁⲩ ⲉⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲩ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲱⲏⲣⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲱⲉⲉⲣⲉ ⲥⲛ̄ⲧⲉ (III 96)
   [OBS. This is a narrative (here parable) opening role of the Cleft Sentence; cf. Lc. 15:11]
2. ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲡⲁⲓ ⲣⲱ ⲉⲁⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲙⲉⲥⲧⲱⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ϩⲙⲉ ⲛ̄ⲣⲟⲙⲡⲉ (III 133)
3. ⲛ̄ⲁⲱ ⲛ̄ϩⲉ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲉⲟⲩⲟⲓ ⲁⲛ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲧⲥⲱⲕ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲩⲉⲣϩⲩ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲛⲓϩⲓⲉⲓⲧ ⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ⲕⲁⲕⲉ ϩⲓⲃⲟⲥⲙ̄ (A II 155)
4. ϩⲁϩ ⲙⲉⲛ ⲛ̄ⲱⲱⲁⲭⲉ ⲉⲁⲛⲭⲟⲟⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲁⲛⲥⲁϩⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲡⲉⲭⲡⲟ ⲙ̄ⲡⲥⲱⲧⲏⲣ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲧⲉϥⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ (Cat. 42)
5. ⲛ̄ⲁⲱ ⲛ̄ϩⲉ ⲉⲟⲩⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲛⲁⲛ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ (Miss. 278)
6. ⲟⲩⲏⲣ ⲛ̄ⲱⲗⲏⲗ ϩⲓⲛⲏⲥⲧⲉⲓⲁ ... ⲉⲣⲉⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ (III 199)
7. ⲱⲁⲛⲧⲉⲟⲩ ⲇⲉ ⲱⲱⲡⲉ ⲉⲛⲥⲟⲃⲧⲉ ⲛⲁⲛ ⲙ̄ⲡⲕⲱϩⲧ̄ ⲛ̄ⲧⲣⲉϩⲉⲛⲛⲁ (Rossi 2/3 43)
   {NB: ⲱⲁⲛⲧⲉⲟⲩ ⲱⲱⲡⲉ, followed by the circumstantial, is the Coptic idiom corresponding to "Until when ...?" (ⲟⲩ "what?")}

(B) THE RELATIVE CONVERSION: ADNOMINAL (ATTRIBUTIVE)

31.1 The antecedent: definite article, demonstrative pronoun: DETERMINATED (definite) RELATIVE

31.1.1 The formal antecedent π-: NOMINALIZED ("lexemic") RELATIVE: "one who"

31.2 Antecedent: definite noun syntagm

32 The relative conversion carried on

33 The Cleft Sentence with relative topic and pronominal/nominal focus "It is he/the man who (whom) ..."

33.1 The focus: noun syntagm, determinated relative, demonstrative and interrogative pronouns

33.2 The focus: personal pronoun

33.2 The Cleft Sentence converted

єтє- / єт-, єтє-, єтєрє- / єнт-, ⲛ̄т- / є- + clause: Table G

The relative conversion marks an adnominal attributive status of the clause (e.g., marks the clause as expanding and describing a noun or pronoun): it always follows its antecedent (= expanded noun/pronoun, nucleus).

NB: (1) the relative does not occur after indefinite or zero determination.

(2) The two basic constructions of the relative verb clause are:

(a) ANTECEDENT + RELATIVE (*actor of verb = antecedent*: "the man who heard", "the man who will come"); the antecedent is resumed only where the conjugation pattern has an obligatory actor expression, i.e. the base-conjugation and adjective verbs.

(b) ANTECEDENT + RELATIVE + RESUMPTION of antecedent (*actor of verb not = antecedent*: "the man whom I heard", "the man to whom I will come", lit. "... who I heard him", "... who I will come to him").

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

STERN parr. 400, 401-405, 409, 411, 414, 417, 419, 424, 426-427, 428-429, 432-434, 436, 438-439; STEINDORFF parr. 454-455, 459-482; TILL parr. 461-474, 476-

486; VERGOTE parr. 166-168; 172, 189(7); LAMBDIN parr. 3.1, 5.1, 12.1-3, 13.2, 19.1, 21.1, 25.1, 24.2, 28.1; * POLOTSKY, *Nom. Transposition*, (A)

31.1 THE ANTECEDENT: DEFINITE ARTICLE, DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUN (definite determinated relative)

п- єт- (etc) "he who ...", т- єт- (etc.) "she who ...", н- єт- (etc.) "they who": The definite relative form functions to all main purposes as a definite noun syntagm or proper names (sections 1-4). There is no restriction of tense or predicate; the def. article varies freely: masculine, feminine or plural; the whole expresses either a specific or a generic substantival relative clause.

Note the three main constructions:

(a) ARTICLE + RELATIVE ("the one that is listening": *antecedent = actor*), with the actor not expressed in the conjugation form (e.g. affirmative durative present);

(b) ARTICLE + RELATIVE + RESUMPTIVE PRONOUN ("the one that listened", "he who had", "he who is not listening" "that which is good": *antecedent = actor*) where the actor is expressed in the converted conjugation form (e.g. tense-base conjugation, negatived durative present and future (єтє- нq̄- ... ѧн) existential possession, suffixed-actor forms such as the Adjective Verbs);

(c) ARTICLE + RELATIVE ... + RESUMPTIVE PRONOUN (*antecedent* not = *actor*: "he whom I am listening to", "he whom I saw", "that which he has", "he whose house I shall see", "he about whom they say ...").

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

STERN parr. 246, 404; STEINDORFF parr. 476-477; TILL parr. 476-481; VERGOTE parr. 125, 168; LAMBDIN par. 3.1, 27.2; * POLOTSKY, *Nom. Transposition* parr. 51-57, 61-62; QUECKE "Relativsatz"; SHISHA-HALEVY p. 114

1. ⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁϥⲟⲩⲉⲓⲛⲉ ⲁϥⲟⲩⲉⲓⲛⲉ (III 222)
2. ⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁϥⲁⲁⲩ ϫⲓⲛⲧⲁⲣⲭⲏ ⲙ̄ⲡⲥⲱⲛⲧ̄ ⲙ̄ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲁⲁⲩ ϩ̄ⲛⲧⲥⲩⲛⲧⲉⲗⲉⲓⲁ ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲓⲱⲛ (P 130.2 85 vo)
3. ⲧⲉⲧⲥⲟⲟϥ ⲧⲉⲧⲁⲟⲃⲉ (Ch. 78)
4. ⲡⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ (IV 113)
5. ⲛⲉⲧϩ̄ⲡⲉⲛϩⲏⲧ (III 108)
6. ⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲡⲁⲓⲇⲉⲩⲉ ϩ̄ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲅⲣⲁⲫⲏ ⲥⲉⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲙ̄ⲡⲃⲱⲗ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲓⲱⲁϫⲉ (Wess. 9 151)
7. ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲧⲉⲩⲥⲩⲛⲏⲑⲉⲓⲁ ⲡⲉ ⲙⲓⲱⲉ ⲛⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲕ (Ch. 37)
8. ⲡⲉⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩϥ ⲛⲉ ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩϥ ⲛⲓⲙ (A I 236)
9. ⲡⲉⲧⲉⲡⲱϥ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲉⲧⲉⲡⲱⲓ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ (Ch. 77)

10. ⲡⲉⲧⲉⲡⲱⲛ ⲡⲉⲧⲉⲙ̄ⲡⲱⲛ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲛⲁⲡⲉⲣⲣⲟ ⲡⲉⲭ̄ⲥ̄ ⲛⲉ (III 69)
11. ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲛ̄ⲥⲉⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲁⲛ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ (Ch. 78)
12. ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲱⲁⲣⲉⲛⲉⲧⲙⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲙⲛ̄ⲡⲉⲫⲭ̄ⲥ̄ ϫⲟⲟⲩ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ (Wess. 9 148)
13. ⲫⲥϩⲟⲩⲟⲣⲧ̄ ⲛ̄ⲑⲓⲡⲉⲧⲟⲩϫⲱ ⲉⲣⲟϥ ϫⲉⲟⲩⲉⲓⲱⲧ ⲡⲉ ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲧⲟⲩϫⲱ ⲉⲣⲟⲥ ϫⲉⲟⲩⲙⲁⲁⲩ ⲧⲉ ⲉⲩⲱⲁⲛϫⲓ-ⲡⲉⲩⲙ̄ⲧⲟⲛ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲩ (IV 153)
14. ⲓⲥ̄ ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡⲱⲏⲣⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲡⲉⲧⲉⲙ̄ⲡⲫ̄ⲧⲥⲟ ⲉⲧⲁⲁϥ ϩⲁⲛⲉⲛⲛⲟⲃⲉ (IV 42)
15. ⲡⲉⲧⲟⲩⲛⲁⲱⲟⲩⲟⲙϥ̄ (P 130.5 111 ro)
16. ⲥⲉⲧⲁⲩⲟ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲧⲉⲛ̄ⲥⲉⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲁⲛ ϫⲉϥⲛⲁⲱⲱⲡⲉ (P 130.4 97 ro)
17. ⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁϥⲭⲓⲃⲟⲗ ⲉⲣⲟⲛ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧⲟⲩ (Ch. 94)
18. ⲛⲉⲑⲟⲟⲩ ⲙⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲧⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲟⲩ (IV 35)
19. ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲩⲡⲟⲉⲓⲕ (Ch. 120)
20. ⲡⲁⲓ ⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ⲛⲧⲁⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲙⲉⲥⲧⲱϥ (Jcl.)
21. ϥⲧⲟⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲥⲁⲃⲃⲁⲧⲟⲛ ⲧ̄ⲣ̄ⲣⲟⲙⲡⲉ ⲛⲁⲓ ⲉⲛⲧⲁⲡⲉⲛⲉⲓⲱⲧ ⲕⲁⲁⲩ ⲛⲁⲛ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ (IV 120)
    {NB: ⲧ̄ⲣ̄ⲣⲟⲙⲡⲉ sec ⲣⲟⲙⲡⲉ}
22. ⲛ̄ⲱⲁϫⲉ, ⲛ̄ⲧⲥⲟⲫⲓⲁ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲉⲧⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧⲕ ⲧⲁⲓ ⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉⲧⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟ-ⲥⲩⲛⲏ ⲛⲏⲩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧⲥ̄ (III 14)
23. (Can I hide) ⲡⲣⲏ ϩⲛ̄ⲧⲡⲉ ⲙⲛ̄ⲡⲟⲟϩ ⲙⲛ̄ⲛⲥⲓⲟⲩ ⲛⲁⲓ ⲉⲧⲕ̄ⲱⲙ̄ⲱⲉ ⲛⲁⲩ (Ch. 43)
24. ⲛⲓⲙ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲁⲓ ⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉⲡⲉⲭ̄ⲥ̄ ⲱⲁϫⲉ ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲏⲧϥ̄ (Ch. 135)
25. ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲙⲛ̄ⲡⲉⲧⲟ ⲛ̄ϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ⲥⲁⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ (A I 164)

31.1.1 THE FORMAL ANTECEDENT π-: THE LEXEMIC NOMINALIZED RELATIVE

ⲡⲉⲧ- "one who ..."

The nominalized relative functions as a lexeme-equivalent zero-determinated noun, and is preceded by any of the determinators (section 1). Both tense (present only: durative and Adjective Verbs) and predicate (mostly quality: stative and Adjective Verb) are restricted. The element π- is in this case not the definite article: ⲡⲉⲧ- is the invariable form.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

STERN parr. 246, 404; STEINDORFF par. 478; TILL parr. 480-481; VERGOTE parr. 125, 168; LAMBDIN parr. 3.1, 27.2; *POLOTSKY, *Nom. Transposition* parr. 74-79; QUECKE "Relativsatz"; *SHISHA-HALEVY p. 114

1. ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩϥ ⲛⲓⲙ (A I 133)
2. ⲁϥϫⲉⲡⲉⲑⲟⲟⲩ (III 104)
3. ϩⲉⲛⲛⲉⲧⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲟⲩ (III 33) ⲛⲉⲩⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲟⲩ (A II 471)
4. ⲟⲩⲡⲉⲑⲏⲡ (III 88) ϩⲉⲛⲛⲉⲑⲏⲡ (III 49) ⲛⲉⲥⲕⲉⲡⲉⲑⲏⲡ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ (III 57)
5. ⲙⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲑⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲁϩⲱⲛ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ (RE 10 164)
6. ⲱⲱⲡⲉ ⲛ̄ⲱⲏⲣⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲡⲡⲉⲧϫⲟⲥⲉ (A II 452)
7. ⲉⲩⲱⲁⲛ̄ⲣⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩϥ (IV 3)
8. ⲛⲉⲩⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲥⲉⲃⲏⲥ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲡⲉⲑⲏⲡ (IV 2)
9. ⲟⲩⲡⲉⲧⲉⲱⲱⲉ (A II 256)
10. ⲥⲛⲁⲩ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩϥ (P 130.4 93 vo)
11. ϩⲉⲛⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲟⲩ (III 206)
12. ⲛⲓⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲥⲉⲃⲏⲥ ⲙⲛ̄ⲛⲓⲡⲉⲧⲱⲟⲩⲉⲓⲧ (Orig. 414)
13. ⲡϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲙⲛ̄ⲛⲉϥⲡⲉⲧⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ (Orig. 390)
14. ⲙⲉⲥⲧⲉ-ⲡⲡⲉⲑⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲙⲉⲣⲉ-ⲡⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩϥ (Orig. 202)

31.2 THE ANTECEDENT: DEFINITE NOUN SYNTAGM

DEFINITE DETERMINATOR + [noun lexeme] + RELATIVE CONVERSION

Note the three main constructions:

(a) ARTICLE + RELATIVE ("the one that is listening": *antecedent = actor*), with the actor not expressed in the conjugation form (e.g. affirmative durative present)

(b) ARTICLE + RELATIVE + RESUMPTIVE PRONOUN ("the one that listened", "he who had", "he who is not listening" "that which is good": *antecedent = actor*) where the actor is expressed in the converted conjugation form (e.g. tense-base conjugation, negatived durative present and future (ⲉⲧⲉ-ⲛϥ̄- ... ⲁⲛ) existential possession, suffixed-actor forms such as the Adjective Verbs)

(c) ARTICLE + RELATIVE ... + RESUMPTIVE PRONOUN (*antecedent* not = *actor*: "he whom I am listening to", "he whom I saw", "that which he has", "he whose house I shall see", "he about whom they say ...")

NB: (1) the resumption is by means of a 3rd person pronoun ("he", "she" "they") unless the relative expression is addressed ("vocative"), when a 2nd person resumption ("you" masc./fem./plural) is idiomatic.

(2) The resumptive pronoun is normally absent when the antecedent is a time-expression or place-expression noun ("the time when ...", "the place where ..."). For place expressions, ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ "there" and ⲉⲙⲁⲩ "thither" serve as resumption of the antecedent.

1. ⲧⲟⲣⲅⲏ ⲉⲛⲧⲁⲥⲉⲓ ⲉϫⲱⲛ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲓⲧⲛ̄ⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁϥⲧⲁⲙⲓⲉⲡⲧⲏⲣϥ̄ ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛ̄ⲛ̄ⲃⲟⲙ (III 222)
2. ⲡⲙⲁ ⲉⲧⲕ̄ⲛⲁⲃⲱⲕ ⲉⲙⲁⲩ (III 173)
3. ⲡⲉⲛⲧⲏⲃ ⲉⲱⲁⲩⲙⲟⲩ ⲉⲩⲱⲁⲛⲟⲩⲟⲙϥ̄ (RE 11 15)
4. ⲧⲁⲕⲁⲑⲁⲣⲧⲟⲥ ⲛ̄ⲥⲩⲛⲁⲅⲱⲅⲏ ⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ (Ch. 123)
5. ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲡⲱⲁϫⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲁϥϫⲟⲟⲥ ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲛⲉⲡⲣⲟⲫⲏⲧⲏⲥ ⲗⲉ ϩⲱⲟⲩ ⲟⲛ ϫⲟⲟⲩ (P 131.6 73 vo)
6. ⲧⲉⲓⲯⲩⲭⲏ ⲉⲛⲧⲁⲡⲥⲁⲧⲁⲛⲁⲥ ⲗⲁⲥ ⲛ̄ⲃⲗ̄ⲗⲏ ⲏ ⲁϥⲥⲣⲙ̄ⲣⲱⲙⲉ̄ (III 210)
7. ⲁⲱ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲕⲁⲓⲣⲟⲥ ⲉⲧⲉⲛⲛⲁⲣⲡⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲛ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧϥ̄ (IV 179)
8. ⲱ ⲛ̄ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉ†ⲥⲙⲏ ⲁⲡⲉⲓⲗⲏ ⲉⲣⲱⲧⲛ̄ ϫⲉⲛⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲛ̄ⲟⲩ†ⲧⲱⲛ (Ch. 47)
9. ⲡⲉϥⲥⲛⲟϥ ⲙ̄ⲙⲓⲛ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟϥ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ (Ch. 175)
10. ⲛⲓⲡⲁⲑⲟⲥ ⲉⲧⲥⲛϣ (Ch. 163)
11. ⲡⲉⲛϩⲏⲧ ⲉⲧⲟ ⲛ̄ⲕⲁⲕⲉ ϩⲛ̄ⲟⲩϩⲃⲁ (Wess. 9 173)
12. ϩⲱⲃ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲉⲧⲉϣϣⲉ ⲉⲗⲗⲩ (IV 43)
    {NB: the resumption here is in the object of the infinitive}
13. ⲛ̄ⲑⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲩϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲉⲧⲉⲙ̄ⲡϥ̄ϩⲱ ⲉⲣⲟϥ ⲉϫⲉⲡⲉⲑⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲛϩⲙ̄ϩⲗⲗ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉϫ̄ⲥ̄ (Ch. 189)
14. ϩⲉⲑⲛⲟⲥ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲛ̄ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲧⲉⲙ̄ⲡⲟⲩⲥⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ (Ch. 180)
15. ⲛ̄ⲑⲉ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲁϣ̄ⲥ̄ ⲛ̄ⲑⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲩϫⲟⲟⲥ (Ch. 49)
    {NB: ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲁϣ̄ⲥ̄ = ⲉⲧ-ⲟⲩ-ⲟⲩⲁϣ̄ⲥ̄ (3rd person plural actor)}
16. ⲥⲉⲛⲁ† ⲛⲁϥ ⲙ̄ⲡⲟⲉⲓⲕ ⲉⲧⲉⲡⲁⲓ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲛⲟⲙⲟⲥ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ (Ch. 127)
    [OBS. ⲉⲧⲉⲡⲁⲓ ⲡⲉ "namely", "that is to say"]
17. ⲁⲛⲟⲛⲛϣⲏⲣⲉ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲱⲧ ⲉⲧⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲡⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲁⲛⲟⲛⲛϣⲏⲣⲉ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲙⲁⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲱⲧ ⲉⲧⲃ̄ⲑⲓⲗⲏⲙ̄ ⲛ̄ⲧⲡⲉ ⲡⲉ (IV 129)
    [OBS. ⲉⲧⲉ-... ⲡⲉ occurs after definite or indefinite antecedents in the sense "that is ...", "namely"]
18. ⲛ̄ϩⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲉⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲏ ⲉⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ϫⲉϣⲁⲓⲉⲓ ϣⲁⲣⲱⲧⲛ̄ (III 21)
    {NB: ⲉⲧⲉⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ 2nd sgl. fem. actor of the present}
    [OBS. The absence of resumption is typical of time-expression and place-expression antecedents, in adverbial relation with the verb expanding them; so also the next text. However, in texts 7 and 11 we find full resumption of time antecedents]
19. ⲧⲁⲣⲭⲏ ⲛ̄ⲧⲁϥⲥⲱⲛⲧ̄ ⲙ̄ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ (IV 34)
    {NB: ⲧⲁⲣⲭⲏ used as a time-expression}
20. ⲛⲉⲛⲡⲉⲑⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲑⲏⲡ (A I 451)
    {NB: a nominalized relative with the possessive article serves as antecedent of another relative conversion}
21. ⲡⲙⲁ ⲉⲛⲧⲁⲡⲉⲧⲉⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲁⲛ ϫⲉⲛⲓⲙ ⲡⲉ ⲕⲓⲙ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉϥⲁⲡⲉ ⲉϫⲱ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ϩⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲃⲱⲛⲧ̄ ⲙⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲟⲣⲅⲏ (A I 78)

{NB: a "chinese box" construction; ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ resumes ⲡⲙⲁ (the external relative), ⲡⲉ resumes ⲡ- in ⲡⲉⲧⲉⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ; ⲡⲉⲧⲉⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ 2nd sgl. fem. actor; ⲉⲭⲱ preposition, 2nd sgl fem. form}

32 THE RELATIVE CONVERSION CARRIED ON

Constructions:
(a) DEFINITE RELATIVE – ⲁⲩⲱ/ⲏ – DEFINITE (or undeterminated) RELATIVE (all conjugation forms)
(b) RELATIVE – (ⲁⲩⲱ/ⲏ) – RELATIVE (all conjugation forms)
(c) RELATIVE – (ⲁⲩⲱ/ⲏ) – CIRCUMSTANTIAL (all conjugation forms)
(d) RELATIVE – (ⲁⲩⲱ/ⲏ/∅) – UNCONVERTED CONJUGATION FORM (only perfect)

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STEINDORFF par. 475; TILL parr. 482-486

1. ⲡⲉⲧⲣⲏⲥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲧⲣⲟⲉⲓⲥ (III 74)
2. ⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁϥⲧⲁⲙⲓⲟⲟⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁϯⲃⲟⲙ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲓ̄ⲥ̄ (III 68)
3. ⲧⲁⲕⲁⲑⲁⲣⲥⲓⲁ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲥ ⲏ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲛⲁⲁⲁⲥ (IV 48f.)
   [OBS. This is an example of the well known "tautological" *figura Sinuthiana* in which a lexeme is repeated in a more or less different grammatical characterization]
4. ⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁϥⲣ̄ϩⲏⲧⲉⲙⲱⲛ ⲉⲑⲛⲃⲁⲓⲥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲁϥⲣ̄ⲁⲩⲣⲟⲩⲥⲧⲁⲗⲗⲓⲟⲥ ⲉⲣⲁⲕⲟⲧⲉ (Ch. 108)
5. ⲡⲓⲛⲟⲃ ⲙ̄ⲙⲏⲛϩⲉ ⲛ̄ϯⲁⲉⲓⲏⲥ ⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲃⲟⲓⲗⲉ ⲉⲣⲟⲛ ⲏ ⲉⲁⲩⲟⲩⲱϩ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲙⲁ ⲙ̄ⲡⲣⲟ (III 69)
6. ⲡⲉⲧϣⲟⲟⲡ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁϣⲱⲡⲉ (III 41)
7. ⲛ̄ⲟⲉⲓⲕ ⲉⲛⲧⲁϥⲥⲙⲟⲩ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲩⲟⲩⲱⲙ ⲁⲩⲥⲉⲓ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧⲟⲩ (Ch. 158)
8. ⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩϩⲉ ϩⲁⲣⲁⲧ̄ⲕ̄ ⲁⲕϩⲱⲙ ⲉⲭⲱⲟⲩ (Ch. 29)
9. ⲛⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲕⲟⲧⲕ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲧⲧⲁϩⲉ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲉϩⲟⲟⲩ (IV 180)
10. ⲛⲉⲧⲛⲁⲡⲁⲣⲁⲃⲁ ⲏ ⲛⲉⲧⲛⲁⲕⲱⲙⲱ̄ ⲛ̄ⲥⲱⲟⲩ (IV 47)
11. ⲧⲉⲛⲧⲁⲥⲙⲟⲩ ⲁⲩⲧⲟⲩⲛⲟⲥⲥ̄ (Ch. 194)

33. THE CLEFT SENTENCE WITH NOMINAL/PRONOMINAL FOCUS AND RELATIVE TOPIC: "It is I who speak to you", "It is God who will provide", "It was not John whom I saw" — a construction used to put a noun or pronoun in focus with a complete verb clause as its topic.

Constructions:
(33.1) (a) # NOUN (focus) + ⲡ-/ⲧ-/ⲛ- — RELATIVE (topic; the form of the topic in agreement with the gender of the focus) #
(33.2) (b_1) # PERSONAL PRONOUN (focus) + RELATIVE # (focus: present, future)

(b_2) # PERSONAL PRONOUN (focus) + ⲡ- RELATIVE # (topic invariable; all forms)

(b_3) # PERSONAL PRONOUN (focus) + ⲡ-/ⲧ-/ⲛ- — RELATIVE # (topic in agreement with the gender of the pronominal focus)

Negatived: # ($\bar{N}$) FOCUS ⲁⲛ Topic #

NB: of the two main constituents of this pattern, the first (noun or pronoun) is always the focus (marked predicate), the second the topic (verbal logical subject).

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
LAMBDIN par. 13.2; POLOTSKY, "Nominalsatz und Cleft Sentence"; * *Nominale Transposition*, parr. 94, 97-106, 112-120, 132-134; SHISHA-HALEVY, "Discovery Procedure", 167 ff.

33.1 THE FOCUS: PROPER NAME, NOUN SYNTAGM or DETERMINATED RELATIVE, DEMONSTRATIVE, INDEFINITE or INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS

1. ϥcooγn ⲛ̄toϥ ⲭe-ⲡnoγte ⲡetⲁ̄ⲛaγ eroϥ (Orig. 432)
2. ⲙ̄monaxoc ⲛetⲏⲡ eⲣ̄ⲛⲏcteia (Ch. 102)
3. ⲡnoγte ⲡentaϥtreγⲱⲱⲡe (III 47)
4. oγcmoγ ⲛ̄aⲱ ⲛ̄aⲓⲏc ⲡetⲥⲓxωn (III 37)
5. ⲡoγoeⲓn ⲡeⲱaϥϥⲓ ⲙ̄maγ ⲙ̄ⲡkake nⲁ̄aaϥ ⲛ̄θe ⲙ̄ⲡetenⲁ̄-ⲱooⲡ an (P 131.4 157 ro)
6. ⲡekcταγpoc ⲡentaϥkⲓm epkaⲥ tⲏpⲁ̄ (RE 10 163)
7. ⲙ̄ⲡpωme an ⲡetkto ⲙ̄moc (i.e. the sword) (IV 12)
8. ⲡetepepⲡpωme rap naxooϥ ⲡaⲓ on ⲡetⲁ̄naoⲥcⲁ̄ (BKU 180.2)
9. naⲓ on ne etⲥ̄xω ⲙ̄moc eroογ ⲥωωc xe ... (III 53)
   {NB: ne et- a variant of net-?}
10. oγ rap naraθon ⲡetemⲡepⲡnoγte taaϥ nⲏtⲛ̄ (Ch. 97)
11. oγ ⲡetⲱooⲡ xenoγϥ an ne (Ch. 97)
12. nⲓm ⲡetnaⲛa nⲓm ⲡetnaⲱⲛ̄-ⲥtⲏϥ ⲥanⲱⲏre ⲛ̄kronoc (Ch. 156)
13. aⲱ ndⲓaboloc ⲡetnaⲱ† oγbhc ⲏ nⲓm ncatanac ⲡetna-ⲱei ⲉⲥoγn eroc (IV 75)

14. ⲡⲉⲧⲯⲟⲩⲁⲱⲩ ⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲁⲁⲩ (Cat. 42)
    [OBS. The focus here is a definite det. relative; similarly in text 15. In text 8, a det. relative is extraposed to the Cleft Sentence]
15. ⲡⲉⲧⲱⲁϫⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁϯϩⲁⲡ ⲉⲣⲱⲧⲛ̄ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲡⲉⲭ̄ⲥ̄ ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁϯϩⲁⲡ ⲉⲣⲱⲧⲛ̄ (Leyd. 333)
16. ⲥⲓⲛⲟⲩⲑⲓⲟⲥ ⲡⲓⲉⲗⲁⲭⲓⲥⲧⲟⲥ ⲡⲉⲧⲥϩⲁⲓ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲩⲙⲉⲣⲓⲧ ⲛ̄ⲉⲓⲱⲧ ⲛ̄ⲑⲉⲟⲫⲓⲗⲉⲥⲧⲁⲧⲟⲥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲕⲁⲣⲓⲱⲧⲁⲧⲟⲥ ⲁⲡⲁ ⲧⲓⲙⲟⲑⲉⲟⲥ (Mun. 95)
17. ⲯⲉⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲡⲉⲧⲥϩⲁⲓ ⲛ̄ⲧⲁϩⲱⲙ (III 21)
    [OBS. In texts 17-20 we find the Cleft Sentence (with a Proper Name as focus) in the role of a letter-opening self-identification and narrative-opening construction]
18. ⲟⲩⲣ̄ⲣⲟ ⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁϥⲟⲩⲱϣ ⲉⲕⲱⲧ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲡⲟⲗⲓⲥ ⲏ ⲟⲩⲏⲓ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉϥⲙⲁⲧⲟⲓ (A II 462)
19. ⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲡⲉⲧⲉⲟⲩⲛⲧⲁϥ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ⲱⲟⲏⲣⲉ ⲥⲛⲁⲩ (Ch. 103; cf. Lc. 15:11)
20. ⲯⲟⲙⲧⲉ ⲛ̄ⲉⲧⲡⲱ ⲛ̄ⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲛ ⲛⲉⲧⲕⲏ ⲉⲥⲣⲁⲓ ϩⲁϩⲧⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲩⲉⲣⲏⲩ (III 27)
21. ϩⲉⲛⲥⲙⲟⲩ ⲛⲉⲧⲛⲁⲯⲱⲡⲉ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧϥ̄ (Young 3)

33.2 THE FOCUS: PERSONAL PRONOUN

1. ⲛ̄ⲧⲱⲧⲛ̄ ⲉⲧⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ (III 24)
2. ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲕ ⲉⲧⲱⲯ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲕ ⲉⲧⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ (III 104)
3. ⲁⲛⲟⲛ ⲡⲉⲧⲡⲏⲧ ⲛ̄ⲥⲱϥ ⲉⲙⲟⲟⲩⲧϥ̄ (Ch. 70)
4. ⲉⲛⲧⲟ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁⲡⲙⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲉⲓ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲓⲧⲟⲟⲧⲉ (P 130.2 67 178)
    {NB: ⲉⲛⲧⲟ = ⲛ̄ⲧⲟ}
5. ⲛ̄ⲧⲱⲧⲛ̄ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉⲡⲯⲁϫⲉ ϫⲱ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲥ ⲉⲣⲱⲧⲛ̄ ϫⲉ ... (III 48)
    [OBS. contrast the allocutive (2nd-person) resumption in texts 4, 5, 9 with the delocutive resumption of a 2nd-person focus in 8]
6. ⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲙⲟⲩ ⲙ̄ⲙⲡⲉⲭ̄ⲥ̄ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲉⲧⲛⲁⲱⲛϩ̄ ⲟⲛ ⲙ̄ⲙⲡⲉⲭ̄ⲥ̄ (IV 4)
7. ⲛ̄ⲧⲱⲧⲛ̄ ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲡⲉⲩϩⲁⲡ ⲥⲁϩⲱϥ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ ϫⲓⲛⲛ̄ⲯⲟⲣⲡ̄ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲡⲉⲩⲥⲛⲟϥ ⲱⲯⲙ̄ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ (A II 107)
8. ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲕ ⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁⲕⲣ̄ⲯⲣ̄ⲡ-ⲙⲉⲣⲓⲧⲛ̄ (RE 10 162)
9. ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲣⲱⲯⲉ (IV 98)
10. ⲉⲛⲉⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲟⲩ· ⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲣ̄ⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ϫⲛ̄ⲁⲛⲟⲛ ⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁⲛⲣ̄ⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲉⲣⲟϥ (III 38)
    {NB: ⲉⲛⲉ-: interrogation mark}
11. ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲉⲧⲛⲁⲁⲁⲛ ⲛ̄ⲙ̄ⲡⲯⲁ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲙⲁ ⲛ̄ⲙ̄ⲧⲟⲛ (Ch. 156)
12. ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛⲧⲟⲕ ⲉⲧⲛⲁⲕⲟⲧⲕ̄ ⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲛϩⲟⲛ (IV 74)
13. ⲛ̄ⲧⲟϥ ⲡⲉⲧⲉⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲃⲟⲙ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟϥ ⲉⲃⲱⲕ ⲉⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲁⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲉ (A I 193)

33.3 THE CLEFT SENTENCE CONVERTED: circumstantial (ϵ-), preterite (ⲛϵ-)

1. ⲁⲩⲃⲱⲕ ⲟⲛ ϵⲧⲉⲫⲭⲁⲣⲓⲥ ⲧⲉⲧⲣ̄ⲣⲥ̄ⲙⲙⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ (III 87)
2. ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲩⲉⲱⲭⲓⲟⲩⲥⲛⲁⲁⲩ ⲉⲟⲩⲟⲙⲫ̄ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲟⲧⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲧⲁⲓⲁⲕⲟⲛⲉⲓ ⲉⲛ̄ⲁ-ⲛⲟⲕ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁⲓⲧⲁⲁϥ ⲛⲁⲩ (IV 113)
3. (He saying:) ⲛ̄ⲧⲟϥ ⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁϥⲡⲟⲣⲕⲧ̄ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛ̄ⲭⲛⲁⲥ ϩⲛ̄ⲧⲥⲩⲛⲁⲅⲱⲅⲏ ⲉⲛ̄ⲁⲛⲟⲕ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁⲓⲡⲟⲣⲕⲫ̄ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ (III 141f.)
4. (There being four Gospels only) ⲉⲛⲁⲓ ⲛⲉⲧⲣ̄ⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲛ ⲉⲡⲕⲟⲥⲙⲟⲥ ⲧⲏⲣⲫ̄ (Wess. 9 143)
5. ⲉⲛⲉⲟⲩⲯⲩⲭⲏ ⲁⲛ ⲛ̄ϩⲱⲟⲛ ⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧⲟⲩ ⲛⲉⲩⲛⲁⲱⲱ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ ϫⲉ ... (III 220)
   {NB: ⲉⲛⲉ- ... ⲛⲉⲩⲙⲁ- ... hypothetical (remote) condition and result: section 41, circumstantial preterite conversion of the Cleft Sentence}
6. ⲛⲉⲟⲩ ⲡⲉⲧⲱⲟⲟⲡ (Orig. 334)
7. ϩⲉⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲡⲉⲩⲁϩⲉ ⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁϥϫⲱⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ (A I 43)
8. ⲛ̄ⲑⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲉⲧⲉⲁⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲉ ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲕⲗⲏⲣⲟⲛⲟⲙⲉⲓ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲧⲛⲁⲙⲟⲩ ϩⲣⲁⲓ ϩⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲩⲙⲟⲃⲉ ... (A I 232)

(C) THE "SECOND TENSE" CONVERSION: THE FOCUSSING MARK

34.1 Cleft Sentence with initial Second Tense topic, non-interrogative ADVERBIAL focus: ϵqⲁϩϵⲣⲁⲧϥ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲓⲙⲁ "It is here that he stands"
34.2 Cleft Sentence with initial Second Tense topic, interrogative ADVERBIAL focus: ϵqⲁϩϵⲣⲁⲧϥ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲓⲙⲁ ϵⲧⲃϵⲟⲩ "Why is it that he stands here?"

35 Cleft Sentence with INITIAL (mostly interrogative) adverbial focus: ϵⲧⲃϵⲟⲩ ϵⲕⲭⲱ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲥ "Why do you say it?" ("Why is it that ...")

36 Cleft Sentence with interrogative or non-interrogative NOMINAL/ PRONOMINAL focus, Second Tense topic: ϵⲕⲭϵⲟⲩ "What do you say?", ⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲟⲩ ⲱⲱⲡϵ "What happened?" ("What is it that ...")

37 Cleft Sentence: the Second Tense (Second Present) focussing its own predicate adverb: ϵϥⲧⲱⲛ "Where is he?" ("Where is it that ...")

38 Cleft Sentence: the Second Tense focussing its own lexeme: ϵⲕⲗⲟⲃϵ "You are crazy!". The Second Tense in rhetorical questions.

ϵ-/ⲛ̄ⲧ-, ϵⲛⲧ-/ϵⲧϵ- + conjugation form: Table G

The Second Tense conversion marks the conjugation form in the following ways:
(a) (in the presence of other elements than the verb) as of lower predicativity than other, non-verbal clause constituents, thereby putting the latter into focus (focussing or emphasizing them); the English equivalent would be a Cleft Sentence ("It is ... that ..."; French "C'est ... que ..."), with the Second Tense its "that ..." component;
(b) (where only the conjugation form is the pertinent unit) as emphasizing or underlining its own adverbial verbal or predicate: "He did go (indeed)", "You are (truly) crazy", "Will I sin?" (rhetorical), "There he is".

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
TILL par. 303; VERGOTE par. 163; LAMBDIN parr. 14.1-2, 24.1-2, 25.1, 28.1-2; POLOTSKY, *Études* pp. 20-68; "Conjugation System" parr. 11, 30-32; * *Nom. Transposition*, parr. 121-136; * SHISHA-HALEVY, Chapter 2

34.1 The Cleft Sentence with an INITIAL SECOND TENSE TOPIC followed by a NON-INTERROGATIVE ADVERBIAL FOCUS: "It is there that he sat"

SECOND TENSE + ADVERB # (see Table G)

Cleft Sentence Negatived: # (ⲛ̄-) Second Tense ⲁⲛ ADVERB #

NB: As "adverb" here count all lexical adverbs, prepositional phrases, dependent clause conjugation forms (7.1-7.3), circumstantial conversion (28), final clauses (ⲭⲉ- or ⲭⲉⲕⲁⲁⲥ with the Optative or Second Future, 6.4, 17.2).

1. ⲡⲉⲓϩⲱⲃ ⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲓⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲣⲟϥ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲃⲟⲧ ⲉⲡⲏⲡ (IV 198)
2. ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲟⲩⲱⲱ ⲉⲙⲟⲩⲟⲩⲧ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲁⲣⲁⲕⲱⲛ ⲉⲱⲁϥⲣⲁϩⲧⲏ̄ ⲉⲧⲉϥⲁⲡⲉ (Ch. 73)
3. ⲡⲉⲧⲟⲩⲱⲱ ⲉⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲙⲁⲣⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛ̄ⲧⲁϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲛⲁϥ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁϥ (III 165)
4. ⲓ̄ⲥ̄ ⲱⲟⲟⲡ ⲛⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲱⲭⲉϥⲱⲟⲟⲡ ⲟⲛ ⲉϥⲱⲟⲟⲡ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲩⲗⲁⲥ (IV 24)
5. ⲡⲉⲩⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲓ̄ⲥ̄ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲉⲩⲟ ⲛ̄ϩⲙ̄ϩⲁⲗ ⲙ̄ⲡⲙⲁⲙⲙⲱⲛⲁⲥ (Ch. 109f.)
6. ⲉⲓⲱⲁⲭⲉ ⲉⲣⲟⲓ ⲛⲙ̄ⲙⲏⲧⲛ̄ (III 184)
   {NB: ⲛⲙ̄ⲙⲏⲧⲛ̄ adds "you" (pl.) to the 1st sgl. in ⲉⲣⲟⲓ}
7. ⲛⲉⲧϫⲟⲥⲉ ⲉⲩϫⲟⲥⲉ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲛⲉⲩⲡⲣⲁϫⲓⲥ ⲛ̄ⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲛ (IV 4)
8. ⲉⲱⲭⲉⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧϥ̄-ⲟⲩⲃⲟⲙ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲟⲛ ⲉⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲁϥⲥ̄ ϩⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲧⲕⲁⲙⲁ ⲛⲁϥ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧⲟⲩ (III 85)
9. ⲛⲉⲧⲛⲁ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲉⲩⲛⲁ ⲭⲉⲉϥⲛⲁⲛⲁ ⲛⲁⲩ (Ch. 98)
   {NB: the final (purpose) clause is here put in focus}
10. ⲛⲁⲓ ⲇⲉ ⲉⲓϫⲱ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲓⲧⲁⲉⲓⲟ ⲁⲛ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲓ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲧ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲉⲓⲧⲁⲙⲟ ⲙ̄ⲙⲱⲧⲛ̄ (III 35)
    {NB: two circumstantial present forms are here in focus; the negator negatives the Cleft Sentence, not the circumstantial: "It is not ..., but ... that ..."}
11. ⲉⲱⲁⲩⲫⲓⲡϩⲏⲃⲥ̄ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ⲉⲣⲱⲁⲛⲡⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲛ ⲉⲓ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ (IV 20)
    {NB: the conditional is here in focus}

[OBS. The sense "as soon as..." or "no sooner... than..." is idiomatically conveyed by the combination of a Second Tense with a circumstantial or conditional]

12. ⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲡⲁⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲥ ⲓⲱⲃ ⲣ̄ⲣⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲟ ⲁⲛ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲛⲉϥⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲛⲁ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲩ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲛⲕⲉⲱⲱⲛⲉ (III 78)
[OBS. Of two (or more) non-interrogative adverbial adjuncts, it is usually the last that is put in focus by the Second Tense]
13. ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲩⲥⲱⲃⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲛ̄ϩⲉⲛⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲉⲩⲥⲱⲃⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲩ (IV 51)
{NB: ⲛ̄ⲛⲉϥ-...ⲁⲛ is a frequent form of the negatived Second Present construction}
14. ⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲓⲥⲟⲩⲱⲛⲉ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲁⲛ ⲛ̄ⲃⲣ̄ⲣⲉ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲧⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟ ⲭⲓⲛⲛ̄ⲱⲟⲣⲡ̄ (III 21)
15. ⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲩⲧ-ⲛⲁϥ-ⲡϩⲁⲧ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲁⲛ ⲭⲉⲉϥⲉⲧⲟⲙⲥⲏ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲕⲁϩ (Leyd. 311)
{NB: ⲧ constitutes a compound verb with ⲛⲁ-, which governs here an immediate direct object (ⲡϩⲁⲧ)}
16. ⲙⲏ ⲉⲱⲁⲣⲉⲡⲙⲁⲧⲟⲓ ⲁⲛ ⲭⲣⲟ ⲉⲛⲉϥⲭⲁⲭⲉ ϩⲛ̄ⲛⲉϥⲥⲟⲧⲃⲉϥ ⲙ̄ⲙⲓⲱⲉ (III 200)
17. ⲙⲏ ⲛⲉⲛⲱⲱ ⲁⲛ ⲛ̄ⲛⲓⲅⲣⲁⲫⲏ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲱⲧ ⲏ ⲡⲉⲓⲙⲩⲥⲧⲏⲣⲓⲟⲛ ⲁⲛ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲱⲧ ⲡⲉⲧⲛ̄ϫⲓ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲛⲧⲟ̄ (III 221)
[OBS. Note the combination of two complementary focussing patterns: a Second Tense construction with a Cleft Sentence with nominal focus]

34.2 The Cleft Sentence with an INITIAL SECOND TENSE TOPIC followed by an INTERROGATIVE ADVERBIAL FOCUS: "Where is it that he sat?"

 # SECOND TENSE + ADVERB # (see Table G)

NB: the focus here is an interrogative adverbial, mostly a prepositional phrase containing an interrogative pronoun: "why?" "where?", "whither?" "in what way?", "how much? (adv.)", "in which house?"

1. ⲉⲧⲉⲧⲛⲁⲃⲱⲕ ⲉⲧⲱⲛ (III 74)
2. ⲉⲣⲉⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟ ⲉⲛⲓⲙ (P 130.2 6 87)
3. ⲉϥⲛⲏⲩ ⲉⲣⲟⲩ (IV 94)
{NB: here the adverb in focus is an infinitive (ⲣ̄-, see ⲉⲓⲣⲉ), attached with ⲉ- as adjunct ("in order to..."), with the interr. pronoun as direct object}

4. ερεϣοβε ⲛ̄ⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟ ⲉⲛⲣⲉϥⲣ̄ⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲣⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲥ ⲛ̄ϩⲟⲩⲟ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ϩⲛ̄ⲟⲩ (III 207)
5. ⲉⲛⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ ⲉⲟⲩ ⲃⲉ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲉⲙⲡⲛ̄ⲙⲉⲧⲁⲛⲟⲓ ⲉⲭⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲛⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲏ ⲛ̄ⲕⲱ ⲛ̄ϩⲧⲏⲛ ⲉⲛⲓⲙ ⲏ ⲛ̄ⲃⲱϣϥ̄ⲧ̄ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲛⲧⲉϥ̄ ⲛ̄ⲛⲓⲙ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲩⲡⲣⲟⲫⲏⲧⲉⲩⲉ ⲛⲁⲛ ⲛ̄ⲕⲉⲥⲟⲡ (IV 183)
{NB: ⲛ̄ⲕⲱ, ⲛ̄ⲃⲱϣϥ̄ⲧ̄ = ⲉⲛⲕⲱ, ⲉⲛⲃⲱϣϥ̄ⲧ̄}
6. ⲉⲩⲃⲟⲛ̄ⲧ̄ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲧⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲏⲣ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲁⲁϥ (IV 6)
7. ⲏ ⲉⲕⲛⲁϣⲟⲩϣⲟⲩ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲕ ⲛ̄ⲁϣ ⲛ̄ϩⲉ ⲡⲁⲛⲟⲙⲟⲥ ⲛ̄ⲓⲟⲩⲇⲁⲓ (A II 385)
8. ⲛ̄ⲧⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲁⲛ ϫⲉⲉⲛⲛⲏⲩ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲛⲉϥⲃⲓϫ ⲛ̄ⲁϣ ⲛ̄ϩⲉ (Ch. 156)
9. ⲛⲓⲙ ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲡⲣⲟⲥⲉϫⲉ ⲁⲛ ϫⲉⲉϥⲟⲩⲱⲙ ⲛ̄ⲁϣ ⲛ̄ϩⲉ (IV 156)
[OBS. Note the combination of the two Cleft Sentence types: the first with pronominal, the second with an adverbial interrogative]
10. ⲛ̄ⲧⲟϥ ⲉⲧⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ϫⲉⲛ̄ⲧⲁϥϫⲓⲧ̄ϥ ⲛ̄ϫⲛⲁϩ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ (IV 60)
11. ⲉⲩⲟ ⲛ̄ⲁϣ ⲛ̄ϩⲉ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ϩⲛ̄ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲕϩⲥ̄ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧⲟⲩ (IV 6)

35 The Cleft Sentence with an INITIAL (interrogative or non-interrogative) ADVERBIAL FOCUS followed by a SECOND TENSE TOPIC: "Why is it that he sits here?", "That is why he said this"

\# ADVERB + SECOND TENSE # (Table G)

Cleft Sentence negatived: # ADVERB ⲁⲛ + Second Tense #

NB: As "adverb" here count some lexical adverbs non-interrogative prepositional phrases, dependent clause conjugation forms (7.1-7.3), circumstantial conversion (28) and very characteristically two interrogative prepositional phrases: ⲛ̄ⲁϣ ⲛ̄ϩⲉ "how?" and ⲉⲧⲃⲉ-ⲟⲩ "why?"

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

* SHISHA-HALEVY, par. 2.4

1. ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ ⲉⲕⲛⲁϫⲡⲉϣⲏⲣⲉ ⲛ̄ϫⲓⲟⲩⲉ ⲱ ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟ ϩⲱⲱⲧⲉ ⲧⲉϩϩⲓⲙⲉ (Or. 153)
2. ⲛ̄ⲁϣ ⲛ̄ϩⲉ ⲉⲩⲟⲩⲉⲙⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲁⲛ (A II 337)
3. ⲙⲏ ϩⲱⲥ-ⲁⲑⲏⲧ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲁⲓ ⲧⲁⲙⲟ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟ (A I 113)
4. ⲛ̄ⲁϣ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲛ̄ϩⲉ ⲏ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ ⲉⲣⲉⲓⲥ̄ ⲛⲁⲣⲟⲩⲏⲓ ⲏ ⲟⲩⲧⲟⲡⲟⲥ ⲛ̄ϣⲙ̄ⲙⲟ ⲉⲣⲟϥ (A II 8f.)
5. ⲕⲁⲗⲱⲥ ⲃⲉ ⲉⲩⲟⲩⲉϣⲡⲁϥⲉⲛⲉⲃⲓⲱ (III 46)
6. ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲡⲁⲓ ⲛ̄ⲧⲁϥϫⲟⲟⲥ ϫⲉ ... ϩⲓⲧⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲓ ⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲩϫⲟⲟⲥ ⲛ̄ⲃⲓⲛⲉⲅⲣⲁⲫⲏ ϫⲉ ... (Wess. 9 144, 152)
7. ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲧⲱⲛ ⲛ̄ⲧⲁϩⲱⲣⲓⲅⲉⲛⲏⲥ ⲥⲱⲟⲩϩ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲁϣⲓ ⲛ̄ϣⲁϫⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲗⲁⲃ (Wess. 9 131)

8. ϩⲛ̄ⲡⲁⲓ ⲟⲛ ⲉⲩⲧⲏⲙ ⲛ̄ⲑⲓⲛⲉⲩⲃⲁⲗ (Wess. 9 128)
9. ⲉⲩⲙⲟⲥⲧⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲱⲧⲛ̄ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲩⲭⲱ ⲛⲏⲧⲛ̄ ⲛ̄ⲛⲁⲓ (Wess. 9 158)
   {NB: ⲁⲛ negates the preposed circumstantial focus: "It is not hating you that ..."; sim. in text 12 (conditional focus)}
10. ϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧⲥ̄ ⲉⲩⲛⲁϯϩⲁⲡ ⲉⲟⲩⲟⲛ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲛ̄ⲥⲉⲕⲣⲓⲛⲉ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲟⲛ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲓⲧⲟⲟⲧⲥ̄ (IV 17)
11. ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲡⲁⲓ ⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲡⲉⲓⲛⲟϭ ⲛ̄ⲥⲁϩⲟⲩ ⲉⲓ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲭⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲓϩⲏⲧⲉⲙⲱⲛ (Mun. 96)
12. ⲉⲣⲱⲁⲛⲧⲃⲁⲱⲟⲣ ⲁⲱⲕⲁⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲁⲛ ... ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲙⲟⲩⲓ ⲧ̄ⲣ̄ⲣⲉ (Ch. 38)
13. ⲙⲏ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲛⲁⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲕⲙⲁⲥⲧⲓⲅⲟⲩ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲓ (Λ 1 81)

36 Cleft Sentence with (mostly interrogative) NOMINAL or PRONOMINAL FOCUS and SECOND TENSE TOPIC: "What is it you say?", "What is it that has happened?"

The focus occupies here the normal place of the non-focal actor or object. The actor following the conjugation base in the base conjugation, the Second Tense converter in the durative pattern, the object following the infinitive.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

* SHISHA-HALEVY, par. 2.3

1. ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲕ ϩⲱⲱⲕ ⲉⲕⲟⲩⲱⲙⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲟⲩϩⲣⲉ ⲁⲛ (A II 509)
   {NB: ⲟⲩⲱⲙ orthographic variant of the construct ⲟⲩⲉⲙ-}
2. ⲉⲱⲭⲉⲁⲓⲭⲉⲟⲩⲱⲁⲭⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲓⲭⲉⲡⲉ†ⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟϥ (Wess. 9 171)
3. ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛⲁⲣⲟⲩ ⲛⲁⲓ ⲉⲓⲱⲁⲛ̄ⲣ̄ⲛⲟⲃⲉ (Ch. 71)
4. ⲉⲓⲛⲁⲧⲃⲁⲓⲉ-ⲁⲱ ⲙ̄ⲙⲉⲗⲟⲥ ⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲕⲁⲁⲱ ⲏ ⲉⲓⲛⲁⲣⲁⲱ ⲙ̄ⲙⲉⲗⲟⲥ ⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲗⲗⲁⲓⲡⲱⲣⲟⲥ ⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲙⲁⲕⲁⲣⲓⲍⲉ ⲛ̄ⲁⲱ (A II 512)
   {NB: ⲛ̄ⲧⲁ- 1st sgl. of the conjunctive (42.1): "and ..."}
5. ⲉⲓⲛⲁⲭⲉⲟⲩⲏⲣ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ (A II 510)
6. ⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲡⲛⲓ ⲣ̄ⲟⲩ ⲙ̄ⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲛ (A II 150)
7. ⲛⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲁⲛ ⲭⲉⲉⲩⲭⲉⲟⲩ (P 130.2 111 vo)
8. ⲉⲓⲛⲁⲟⲩⲉⲙⲟⲩ (Ch. 105)
9. ⲉⲣⲉⲛⲓⲙ ⲛⲁⲛⲁ ⲛⲁⲛ ⲉⲣⲉⲛⲓⲙⲛⲁⲱⲟⲡⲛ̄ ⲉⲣⲟϥ (P 131.5 4 vo)
10. ⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲛⲓⲙ ⲛ̄ⲱⲱⲥ ⲉⲛⲉϩ ⲕⲁⲛⲉⲥⲟⲟⲩ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲟϩⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲧⲱⲗⲓⲣⲉ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲧⲣⲉϥⲙⲟⲩ (A II 18)

37. THE SECOND TENSE PUTTING IN FOCUS ITS OWN ADVERBIAL PREDICATE: "Where is it that he is?"

For adverbs which occur also as predicates in the present pattern (section 19), this construction differs in the degree of focality: the Second Tense marks the adverb as higher on the scale of focality ("there he is" as contrasted with "he is there"). Others, notably ⲧⲱⲛ "where?", occur only in the Second Tense conversion.

NB: ⲉⲫⲧⲱⲛ "where is he?" is special in that a nominal theme, if postposed, is immediately adjoined to it and, unlike all other conjugation forms, is not introduced by ⲛ̄ⲑⲓ-.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

POLOTSKY, "Conjugation System", par. 30; * *Nominale Transposition* par. 122; * SHISHA-HALEVY par. 2.1.1

1. ⲉⲫⲧⲱⲛ ⲡⲉⲓⲱⲧ ⲏ ⲧⲙⲁⲁⲩ ⲏ ⲡⲱⲏⲣⲉ ⲏ ⲡⲥⲟⲛ (Leyd. 410)
2. ⲉⲥⲧⲱⲛ ⲧⲉⲛⲡⲗⲁⲛⲏ ⲙ̄ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲛⲙⲛⲧⲱⲁⲫⲧⲉ ⲏ ⲉⲫⲧⲱⲛ ⲡⲉⲛⲃⲟⲗ ⲙ̄ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲛⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲛⲟⲩⲭ ⲙ̄ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲛϩⲩⲡⲟⲕⲣⲓⲥⲓⲥ (Leyd. 316)
3. ⲉⲥⲛ̄ⲥⲱⲛ ⲉⲣⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲙⲉⲓⲣⲉ (Ch. 65)
4. ⲉⲣⲉⲓⲟⲩⲇⲁⲥ ⲱⲟⲟⲡ ⲧⲱⲛ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲉⲫϩⲛ̄ⲁⲙⲛⲧⲉ (A II 53)
5. ⲙⲏ ⲉⲛϩⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲓⲉⲕⲕⲗⲏⲥⲓⲁ ⲁⲛ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲱⲧ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲧⲉⲓⲥⲩⲛⲁⲅⲱⲅⲏ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲱⲧ (III 220f.)
6. ⲡⲙⲁ ⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉⲧⲱⲉⲗⲉⲉⲧ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ⲉⲫⲙ̄ⲙ́ⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ⲑⲓⲡⲛⲩⲙⲫⲓⲟⲥ ⲙ̄ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲙ̄ⲙⲁϥ (Ch. 138)
7. ⲉⲣ̀ⲉⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲟⲧⲥ̄ (IV 12)

38 THE SECOND TENSE PUTTING IN FOCUS ITS OWN PREDICATE VERB: "You are crazy", "He (does) sin"

Note especially:
(a) the use of the Second Tense in rhetorical questions;
(b) the antithetic Second Tense (second member of antithetic figures);
(c) the use of the Second Future as a jussive, instruction form ("let him hear!") or 3rd-person imperative)

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

* SHISHA-HALEVY, parr. 2.1.2-2.1.7

1. ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲡⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲥ ⲙⲟⲩ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲉⲫⲛ̄ⲕⲟⲧⲕ̄ (Ch. 207; cf. Lc. 8:52)
2. ⲁⲛ†ⲧⲣⲉⲩⲡⲱⲣⲉⲕ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲓⲉⲛⲧⲏⲃ ... ⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲩⲧⲱⲃⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟϥ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟϥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲁⲩⲧⲥⲟϥ (IV 157)

{NB: πωρεκ = πωρϰ̄}

3. ειψανχοοc νε ειρ̄νοβε (K 926)
4. εγψανογω εγτωмс̄ ν̄τετмοογτ εγναψληλ (IV 63)
5. ερεπειωτ ν̄νειcγναγωγη νασπογααζε ετρεγсбραζ̄τ ζωογ νζαζ ν̄сοπ ζν̄νεγηι (IV 50)
6. ογον δε νιм етναει езογν ψαρον ер̄монахос ειτε ζοογτ ειτε сζиме εγνααποτассе ν̄ψορп̄ ν̄ζναλγ нім етеоγν̄таγсоγ (IV 71)
7. ερεппоγте натако ν̄таψγхн (III 20)
8. (He violated his oath) евол ан хеецр̄ζоте н ецψιпе (A I 131f.)
9. мн ецнаqіоγбερωв езраі ероі н ецнаат ν̄ζнке (Ch. 70)
10. мн еγν̄танψахе ν̄мау ехω (BM Cat. 94)

(D) THE PRETERITE CONVERSION: THE OFF-PLANE/OFF-PACE PROJECTING MARK

39 In NARRATIVE
39.1 Narrative detailed ("slow motion") description: progressive view of action, recurring action, state, circumstance: THE IMPERFECT. Projection onto the historical plane.
39.1.1 Converted imperfect in narrative: the Imperfect in adnominal status
39.2 Framing action in narrative: verbs of saying, perceiving, feeling
39.3 Background, anteriority in narrative. Narrator's interposition: interpretation, background information or personal-attitudinal parenthesis

40 The Imperfect in DIALOGUE or EXPOSITION: Past state, habit, durative action.

41 The Preterite converter expressing REMOTENESS FROM REALITY or HYPOTHETICALITY
41.1 The remote condition ("irrealis" protasis): CIRCUMSTANTIAL PRETERITE
41.2 Remote wish: ϩⲁⲙⲟⲓ
41.3 Remote consequence: PAST FUTURE, IMPERFECT, PAST NOMINAL SENTENCE

ⲛⲉ- + clause: Table G

An off-plane, off-pace projecting mark, the preterite converter indicates a deviation in time, pace ("tempo") or actuality from a mainstream frame of reference. In narrative, this means a change in narrative pace (esp. from historical narration to description or detail-rich recounting) or in time perspective (background, anteriority) or in both. In dialogue or exposition, this "gear shift" expresses past state or habit, or speaker's past perspective.
A second important function of the preterite converter is to convey remote hypotheticality, notably in remote hypothetical condition and result ("irrealis"), also in remote wish.

NB: The morph ⲡⲉ following the preterite form seems to mark its backgrounding role.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

STERN parr. 303, 373, 376, 391, 428-429, 630; TILL parr. 307, 317-8, 327, 456; STEINDORFF parr. 329-333, 374, 481-6; LAMBDIN parr. 21.1, 24.2, 25.1, 28.1, 29.1; POLOTSKY, "Conjugation System" parr. 16-17

39. THE PRETERITE CONVERSION IN NARRATIVE

39.1 NARRATIVE DETAILED DESCRIPTION ("slow motion"): a progressive view of action, recurring action, state, circumstance: the IMPERFECT. Projection onto the plane of "history".

NB: note the frequent combination of the Imperfect with the perfect, with the caracteristic predication of state (statives and adverbs) in the former *vs.* act (infinitives) in the latter conjugation form.

1. ⲁϥϩⲉ ⲉⲩⲱⲱⲛⲉ ⲛ̄ⲟ̀ⲓⲡⲛⲟⲃ ⲛ̄ⲱⲏⲣⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲉϥⲥⲕ̄ⲣ̄ⲕⲟⲣⲧ̄ ⲉⲙⲁⲧⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲉϥⲕⲓⲛⲇⲩⲛⲉⲩⲉ ⲉϥϩⲏⲛ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲡⲙⲟⲩ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲉⲡⲱⲛϩ̄ (Mun. 96)
2. ⲛ̄ⲧⲟϥ ⲭⲣⲏⲥⲓⲡⲡⲟⲥ ⲛⲉϥϩⲛ̄ⲧⲡⲟⲗⲓⲥ ⲧⲡⲁⲛⲟⲥ ϩⲛ̄ⲛⲉϩⲟⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲛϥⲓ ⲛ̄ⲛⲓⲭⲱⲱⲙⲉ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲓ ⲙ̄ⲡⲓⲁⲧⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ (III 32)
{NB: ⲧⲡⲟⲗⲓⲥ ⲧⲡⲁⲛⲟⲥ = Panopolis ("Pan's city", Akhmim in upper Egypt)}
3. ⲕⲁⲓ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲁⲩⲣ̄ⲡⲉⲩⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲁⲩⲡⲱⲧ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲟⲧ ⲉⲉⲓⲭⲓ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲃⲟⲛⲥ̄ ϩⲱⲥⲧⲩⲣⲁⲛⲛⲟⲥ ⲁⲩⲃⲱⲕ ⲉⲡⲙⲁ ⲉⲧⲉϩⲛⲁⲩ ⲁⲛⲟⲕ ⲇⲉ ⲛⲉⲓⲟ ⲙ̄ⲡⲁϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲉⲧⲣⲁⲡⲱⲧ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲟⲧⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲧⲭⲓ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲓ ⲛ̄ⲃⲟⲛⲥ̄ (III 145)
4. ⲁϥⲣⲓⲙⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲥⲙ̄ⲧⲟ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ... ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲥ ⲇⲉ ⲛⲉⲥⲥⲱⲃⲉ ⲏ ⲉⲥⲣⲁϣⲉ ⲉⲥⲣⲟⲟⲩⲧ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲧⲉ (A I 53)
5. ⲛⲉⲣⲉⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲗⲱⲛⲏⲥ ⲇⲉ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲙⲛ̄ⲛ̄ⲣⲉϥⲣ̄ⲛⲟⲃⲉ ϩⲏⲛ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲣⲟϥ (A I 265)
6. ⲛⲉⲓϣⲁϫⲉ ⲇⲉ ⲙⲛ̄ϩⲉⲛⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲉⲛⲁϣⲱⲟⲩ ⲛⲉϣⲁⲛⲁⲁⲩ ⲡⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲉϣⲁⲛϫⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲛⲟⲩⲱϣ ⲉⲡⲉⲓⲃⲉ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲓⲁⲑⲏⲧ ⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲉⲙⲉⲛⲉϣⲡⲉⲓⲃⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲡⲉ (III 149)
7. (They drank from the rock) ⲧⲡⲉⲧⲣⲁ ⲛⲉⲥⲟⲩϩϩ ⲛ̄ⲥⲱⲟⲩ (A II 465f.; cf. I Cor. 10:4)
8. ⲡⲉϫⲁⲩ ⲟⲛ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲛⲉⲑⲏⲣⲓⲟⲛ ⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ⲙ̄ⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲛ ϫⲉⲛⲉⲩϣⲓⲛⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲉⲩϩⲟⲧϩⲉⲧ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲩⲛⲁⲩ ϫⲉ-ⲥⲉⲛⲁⲃⲛ̄-ⲟⲩⲑⲁⲃ (A II 170)
{NB: ϫⲉ- (usually ϫⲉⲛⲉ- i.e. ϫⲉ-ⲉⲛⲉ-) "whether"}
9. ⲗⲁⲍⲁⲣⲟⲥ ⲟⲩⲙⲟⲛⲟⲛ ϫⲉⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲁϥ ⲉ† ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲛⲉϥⲣ̄ⲡⲕⲉⲉⲡⲓⲑⲩⲙⲉⲓ ⲟⲛ ⲉⲥⲓ ϩⲛ̄ⲛⲉϣⲁⲩϩⲉ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲧⲣⲁⲡⲉⲍⲁ (Ch. 38)

39.1.1 CONVERTED IMPERFECT IN NARRATIVE: THE IMPERFECT IN ADNOMINAL STATUS

Circumstantial or relative Imperfect, predicating a stative or an adverb (i.e. STATE)

NB: following a definite time-expressing noun, the form ⲉⲛⲉ- is ambiguous: it merges circumstantial and relative conversions (Table G, and 27.2)

1. ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲱ ⲧⲏⲣⲟ̄ ⲉⲛⲉⲩⲱⲟⲟⲡ ϩⲓⲭⲙ̄ⲡⲕⲁϩ (A II 539)
2. ⲡⲧⲱⲱ ⲉⲛⲉⲓⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧⲟ̄.(III 117)
3. ⲛ̄ⲑⲉ ⲉⲛⲉⲕⲟ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲥ ϩⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲕⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲧⲃ̄ⲏⲏ ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲧⲕ̄ⲉⲓ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲛⲉⲓⲧⲟⲡⲟⲥ (IV 95)
   [OBS. -ⲟ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟ-: this is the pronominal form of -ⲟ ⲛ̄- ("being in a state of"), with the pronoun resuming the antecedent ⲑⲉ "the manner"; the whole would correspond to English "as you were"]
4. ⲙ̄ⲡⲥⲟⲡ ⲉⲛⲉⲩϩⲁϩⲧⲏⲛ (Ch. 83)
5. ⲡⲉⲓⲁ ⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲡⲣⲏⲥ ⲙ̄ⲡⲓⲏⲓ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲛⲉⲓⲱⲧ ⲛ̄ϩⲗ̄ⲗⲟ ⲁⲡⲁ ⲡⲱⲟⲓ ⲡⲙⲁ ⲉⲛⲉⲫⲱⲟⲟⲡ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧⲟ̄ (IV 120)
6. ⲧⲉⲯⲩⲭⲏ ⲉⲧⲛⲉⲥⲟ ⲛ̄ⲁⲧⲕⲁⲣⲡⲟⲥ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲱ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲁⲉ ⲁⲥⲁⲱⲁⲓ ϩⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲡⲣⲁⲍⲓⲥ ⲛ̄ⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲛ (IV 186)
   {NB: ⲉⲧⲛⲉⲥ- = ⲉⲧⲉⲛⲉⲥ-, ⲉⲛⲉⲥ-}
7. ⲁϥⲡⲱⲧ ⲛ̄ⲑⲓⲁⲱⲧ ϩⲛ̄ⲙ̄ⲡⲟⲗⲓⲥ ⲉⲛⲉⲫⲛ̄ϩⲓⲧⲟⲩ ⲭⲉⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲫⲧⲁⲕⲟ ⲙⲛ̄ⲛ̄ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛ̄ⲥⲟⲇⲟⲙⲁ ⲙⲛ̄ⲅⲟⲙⲟⲣⲣⲁ (Mun. 98)
8. ⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁϥⲧⲁⲙⲓⲉⲡⲧⲏⲣⲟ̄ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲧⲉⲛⲉⲫⲱⲟⲟⲡ ⲁⲛ (A II 418)

39.2 FRAMING ACTION IN NARRATIVE: VERBS OF SAYING, PERCEIVING, FEELING (*"verba dicendi et sentiendi"*)

1. ⲙ̄ⲡⲟⲩⲱⲛ̄ϩⲧⲏⲩ ϩⲁⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲩ ⲏ ⲛⲉⲩⲙⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲭⲉⲛⲉⲩⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲛⲁⲕⲧⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲭⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲩⲁⲡⲉ (A II 102)
2. ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲁⲫⲱⲱⲡⲉ ⲉⲫⲟ ⲛ̄ϩⲃⲁ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲡⲱⲱⲥ̄ ϩⲛ̄ⲱⲁⲭⲉ ⲉⲛⲧⲁϥⲥⲟⲧⲙⲟⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲉⲫⲭⲱ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲥ ⲭⲉⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲥ ⲛⲁⲓ ⲉⲧⲣⲁϥⲓ ⲛ̄ϩⲟⲩⲉ-ⲁⲡⲟⲧⲁⲥⲥⲉ (A I 453)
3. ⲡⲉⲭⲁⲩ ⲭⲉ ... ϩⲉⲛⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲇⲉ ⲛⲉⲩⲭⲱ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲥ ⲭⲉ ... ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲩⲭⲱ ⲛ̄ⲛⲁⲓ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲭⲉⲙ̄ⲡⲟⲩⲙⲉⲕⲙⲟⲩⲕⲟⲩ (III 118)
   {NB: ⲉⲩⲭⲱ: Second Present}
4. ⲛⲉϥⲕⲱ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲛ̄ϩⲧⲏϥ ⲉⲡⲉⲧⲛⲏⲩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲛ̄ⲣⲱⲓ (A II 520)
5. ⲙⲏ ⲉⲛⲉⲩⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲇⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲭⲉⲡⲛⲟⲃⲛⲉϭ ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲩⲡⲏ ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲓ ... ⲛⲁⲕⲧⲟⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲥⲉⲉⲓ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲭⲱⲟⲩ (A II 2f.)

{NB: ⲉⲛⲉⲩ- Second Imperfect, marking the question as rhetorical}

6. (Of Jacob and his parents) ⲛⲉⲩⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲛ̄ⲥⲱⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲑⲓⲡⲱⲏⲣⲉ ⲉⲧⲛⲁ-ⲛⲟⲩⲩ (A I 225)
7. ⲁⲃⲣⲁϩⲁⲙ ⲡⲉⲛⲉⲓⲱⲧ ⲛⲉⲩⲟⲩⲱⲱ ⲡⲉ ⲉⲧⲣⲉϩⲉⲛⲱⲏⲣⲉ ⲱⲟⲡⲉ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲛ̄ⲥⲁⲣⲣⲁ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲥⲁⲣⲣⲁ ⲛⲉⲥⲟⲩⲱⲱ ⲡⲉ ⲉⲧⲣⲉϩⲉⲛ-ⲱⲏⲣⲉ ⲱⲏⲙ ⲱⲟⲡⲉ ⲛⲁⲥ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲛ̄ⲁⲃⲣⲁϩⲁⲙ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲧⲁⲓ ⲧⲉ ⲑⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ † ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲱⲏⲣⲉ ⲛ̄ⲁⲃⲣⲁϩⲁⲙ ϩⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲫⲙⲛ̄ⲧϩⲗ̄ⲗⲟ ⲉⲁⲫϫⲡⲟ ⲛ̄ⲓⲥⲁⲁⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲛ̄ⲥⲁⲣⲣⲁ ϩⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲥⲙⲛ̄ⲧϩⲗ̄ⲗⲱ ⲁⲫⲱⲱⲡⲉ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩ-ⲱⲏⲣⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲉⲣⲓⲧ (IV 26)

39.3 BACKGROUND, ANTERIORITY IN NARRATIVE. NARRATOR'S INTERPOSITION (interpretation, background information) or PERSONAL-ATTITUDINAL PARENTHESIS

Imperfect, Pluperfect (ⲛⲉ-ⲁⲫ-/ⲛⲉ-ⲙ̄ⲡⲣ̄-), ⲛⲉ- + Nominal Sentence

1. ⲛⲉⲩⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲡⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲧⲟⲩⲉⲓ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲉⲡⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲛ ϫⲉⲛⲉⲩⲱⲟⲟⲡ ϩⲛ̄ϩⲉⲛⲧⲁⲙⲓⲟⲛ ⲉⲩⲙⲉϩ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲛ (III 48)
   {NB: ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲧⲟⲩ- = ⲉⲙⲡⲁⲧⲟⲩ-}
2. ϩⲁⲑⲏ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲙ̄ⲡⲡⲱⲣϫ̄ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲥⲟⲟⲩ ⲙⲛ̄ⲛⲃⲁⲁⲙⲡⲉ ⲛⲉⲩⲱⲟⲟⲡ ϩⲙ̄-ⲡⲉⲓⲙⲁ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲛⲉ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲱⲧ ⲛⲉⲥⲟⲩⲟ ⲇⲉ ⲙⲛ̄ⲡⲧⲱϩ ϩⲟⲙⲟⲓⲱⲥ ⲛⲉⲩϩⲓ-ⲡⲉⲓϫⲛⲟⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲱⲧ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛ̄ⲧⲃ̄ⲧ ⲉⲧϩⲟⲟⲩ ⲙⲛ̄ⲛⲧⲃ̄ⲧ ⲉⲧⲛⲁ-ⲛⲟⲩⲟⲩ ⲛⲉⲩϩⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲓⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲱⲧ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲁⲩⲃⲟⲡⲟⲩ ϩⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲓⲁⲃⲱ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲱⲧ (A II 352)
3. (The destruction of the Deluge descended upon them) ⲟⲩⲙⲟⲛⲟⲛ ϫⲉⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲟⲩⲁ ⲛⲟⲩⲃⲥ̄ ⲉⲟⲩⲁ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ϫⲉⲛⲉⲩⲣ̄ⲡⲕⲉⲣⲁⲱⲉ ϩⲛ̄ⲧⲙⲛ̄ⲧ-ⲁⲥⲉⲃⲏⲥ (Wess. 9 86)
   {NB: -ⲣ̄ⲡⲕⲉ- "do also ..."; lexeme premodifier}
4. ⲧⲁⲓ ⲧⲉ ⲑⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲥⲩⲛⲁⲅⲱⲅⲏ ⲛ̄ⲛⲓⲟⲩⲇⲁⲓ ⲛⲉⲥ†ⲥⲟⲉⲓⲧ ⲡⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲥ ⲉⲙⲁⲧⲉ ϫⲉⲥⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁϥⲧⲁⲙⲓⲟⲥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲥⲱⲙ̄ⲱⲉ ⲛⲁϥ (Ch. 122)
   [OBS. Note the use of the present conjointly with the Imperfect]
5. ⲛⲉⲁϥⲟⲡⲥ̄ ⲅⲁⲣ ϫⲉⲟⲩⲁⲛⲁⲅⲕⲁⲓⲟⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲕⲁⲁⲩ ⲉⲱⲁϫⲉ (A II 44)
   [OBS. -c neutric feminine, pronominally heralding the ϫⲉ- clause]
6. (The Sword returned to its sheath) ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲁⲛ ϫⲉⲁⲥⲥⲉⲓ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ϫⲉⲛⲉⲁⲥ†ⲥⲟ ⲡⲉ (IV 11)
7. ⲛⲉϩⲉⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲉ ⲁⲩⲣ̄ⲟⲩⲱⲛⲱ̄ ⲛ̄ⲑⲉ ⲛ̄ⲛⲓⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲛⲉϩⲉⲛⲁⲅⲅⲉⲗⲟⲥ ⲛⲉ ⲉⲁⲩⲣ̄ⲇⲁⲓⲙⲱⲛ (Ch. 72)
8. ⲛⲉⲁⲓϫⲉⲡⲁⲓ ⲇⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲉⲓⲉⲡⲁⲓⲛⲟⲩ. ⲙ̄ⲙⲟϥ ϫⲉⲛⲉⲁϥⲁϩⲉⲣⲁⲧⲏ ϩⲙ̄-

ⲧⲉⲕⲕⲗⲏⲥⲓⲁ ⲯⲁⲛⲧⲉⲡⲙⲏⲏⲩⲉ ⲧⲏⲣⲟ̄ ⲟⲩⲱ ⲉⲩⲭⲓ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲛ̄ⲧⲉ-ⲡⲣⲟⲥⲫⲟⲣⲁ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ ⲛⲉⲟⲩⲛⲟⲃ ⲙ̄ⲙⲏⲏⲩⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ⲡⲉ ⲁⲓϫⲟⲟⲥ ⲛⲁϥ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲓϩⲉ ϫⲉ ... (Ch. 133)

40. THE IMPERFECT IN DIALOGUE OR EXPOSITION: PAST HABIT, STATE, DURATIVE ACTION

1. (Confessions:) ⲛⲉⲓϩⲛ̄ⲧⲡⲟⲗⲓⲥ ⲙ̄ⲛⲛⲓⲙ ⲛⲉⲓⲟ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲧⲟⲓ ⲙ̄ⲛⲛⲓⲙ (A I 184)
   {NB: ⲛⲓⲙ indefinitė, not interrogative}
2. ⲛⲉⲓⲙⲟⲕⲙⲉⲕ ⲅⲁⲣ ϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧ ϫⲉⲟⲩⲁⲧⲃⲟⲙ ⲡⲉ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲣⲱⲙⲉ ϫⲣⲟ ⲉⲡⲛ̄ⲁ̄ ⲏ ⲉⲁⲅⲅⲉⲗⲟⲥ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ (III 39)
3. ⲁⲛⲟⲕ ⲇⲉ ⲛⲉⲓⲟ ⲙ̄ⲡⲁϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲉⲧⲣⲁⲡⲱⲧ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲟⲧⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲧϫⲓ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲓ ⲛ̄ⲃⲟⲛⲥ̄ (III 145)
4. ⲛⲉⲓⲟⲩⲱϣ ⲙⲛ ⲛⲉⲥⲛⲏⲩ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲣ̄ⲥⲁⲃⲉ (IV 93)
5. ϩⲁⲑⲏ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲧⲟⲩⲣ̄ⲕⲟⲓⲛⲱⲛⲓⲁ ⲛⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲛ ⲛⲉⲛⲣ̄ϩⲟⲧⲉ ⲁⲛ ϫⲉⲛ-ⲛⲉⲩⲫⲓ-ⲧⲛ̄ϩⲟⲓⲧⲉ ⲛ̄ϫⲓⲟⲩⲉ (IV 105)
6. ⲛⲉⲓϫⲓϣⲟϫⲛⲉ ⲛⲁⲓ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲧ ϫⲉⲛⲛⲁϣⲱⲡⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲛ̄ⲥⲕⲁⲛⲇⲁⲗⲟⲛ ⲛⲛⲁⲓ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲓⲙⲓⲛⲉ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲓⲕⲉϩⲱⲃ (III 147)
7. ⲛⲉⲓⲟⲩⲱϣ ⲙⲉⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲉⲧⲁϣⲉϣⲁϫⲉ ⲉⲣⲟϥ (i.e. about David) ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲡⲉϥⲙ̄ⲡϣⲁ ⲗⲗⲁ ϫⲉⲕⲁⲥ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲛⲱⲥⲕ̄ ϩⲛ̄ⲛⲁⲓ ⲛ̄ⲧⲛ̄ⲁⲙⲉⲗⲉⲓ ⲉⲧⲕⲁⲑⲏⲏⲥⲓⲥ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲟϣⲟⲩ ⲉⲣⲟⲛ ⲧⲛ̄ⲛⲁⲕⲧⲟⲛ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲉⲛⲉ-ⲅⲣⲁⲫⲏ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ ⲛ̄ⲧⲛ̄ϣⲁϫⲉ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ (Ch. 209)

41 THE PRETERITE CONVERTER EXPRESSING REMOTENESS FROM REALITY or HYPOTHETICALITY

41.1 THE REMOTE-HYPOTHETICAL CONDITION (*"irrealis"* protasis): CIRCUMSTANTIAL PRETERITE

ⲉⲛⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ (... ⲡⲉ) / ⲉⲛⲉ(ⲛ̄)ϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ (... ⲡⲉ), "If he heard/did not hear ..."
ⲉⲛⲉⲛ̄ⲧⲁϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ (... ⲡⲉ) / ⲉⲛⲉⲙ̄ⲡϥ̄ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ (... ⲡⲉ) "If he had (not) heard/had he (not) heard ..."
ⲉⲛⲉ- + Nominal Sentence: "If (he) were, had been ..."

NB: the most common result clause has the past future ⲛⲉϥⲛⲁ ... ⲡⲉ, see 41.3

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

STERN par. 630; STEINDORFF part. 486-489; TILL par. 456; VERGOTE par. 212(3); LAMBDIN par. 29.1; POLOTSKY, "Conjugation System" par. 17; YOUNG, "Unfulfilled Conditions"

1. ⲉⲛⲉⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲣⲣⲱⲟⲩ ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲧⲛⲁⲣϩⲟⲧⲉ ϩⲓⲧⲟⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ (Mun. 102)
2. ⲉⲛⲉⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲃⲟⲙ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲁ ⲉⲥⲙⲓⲛⲉ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲃⲁⲗ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲟⲩϩⲙ̄ϩⲁⲗ ⲛ̄ⲧⲁϥ ⲛⲉϥⲛⲁⲧⲁⲗⲃⲟϥ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ (III 36)
3. ⲉⲛⲉⲩⲟ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲛ̄ⲁⲧⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲛⲉⲩⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲧⲱⲁⲩ ⲛⲉⲟⲩⲱⲓⲡⲉ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ (III 75)
4. ⲉⲛⲉϩⲉⲛⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧⲛ̄ ⲛⲉ ⲏ ⲉⲛⲉⲩⲙⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲛ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ ⲛⲉⲩⲛⲁⲃⲱ ⲛⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ (E 87)
5. ⲉⲛⲉϩⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲙⲛ̄ⲧϩⲁϩ ⲛ̄ⲱⲁϧⲉ ⲛⲉⲩⲙⲁⲱⲃⲙ̄ⲃⲟⲙ ⲁⲛ ⲛ̄ⲁⲡⲁⲧⲁ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲧⲣⲟⲉⲓⲥ (IV 94)
   [OBS. The protasis here is an adverbial phrase, with no verb]
6. ⲉⲛⲉⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲓⲱⲓⲃⲉ ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲧⲛⲁⲁⲣⲭⲉⲓ ⲁⲛ ⲟⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲉⲕⲉⲧ-ⲡⲩⲣⲣⲟⲥ (III 21)
7. ⲉⲛⲉⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲛ ⲛⲉⲩⲛⲁϫⲟⲟⲥ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ ϫⲉ ... (Ch. 179)
8. ⲉⲛⲉⲙⲛ̄ⲃⲁⲣⲃⲁⲣⲟⲥ ⲱⲟⲟⲡ ⲟⲩ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲧⲁⲉⲓⲟ ⲙ̄ⲡⲙⲁⲧⲟⲓ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡⲉⲩ-ⲱⲟⲩⲱⲟⲩ (Ch. 70)
9. ⲉⲛⲉⲟⲩⲛⲟϭ ⲁⲛ ⲧⲉ ⲧⲉⲓⲁⲛⲟⲙⲓⲁ ⲛⲉⲣⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛⲁⲥϩⲟⲩⲉⲣ-ⲕⲁⲉⲓⲛ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ (IV 157)
10. ⲉⲛⲉⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲡⲥⲁⲧⲁⲛⲁⲥ ⲱⲱⲡⲉ ⲣⲱ ⲛⲉⲣⲉⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲛⲁⲱⲱⲡⲉ ⲉⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩϥ ⲡⲉ (A I 393)
11. ⲉⲛⲉⲛϭⲥⲙⲟⲩ ⲉⲣⲟⲥ ⲁⲛ (i.e. the well) ⲛⲉⲥⲛⲁⲣⲱⲱⲉ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲩⲥⲉⲙⲟⲟⲩ (III 70)
12. ⲉⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲕⲉⲱ-ⲥⲟⲕⲟⲩ ⲣⲱ ⲉⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲩ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲛⲉⲕⲃⲟⲧⲉ ⲛⲉⲟⲩ ⲉⲣⲟⲕ ⲡⲉ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲕϯ ⲟⲩⲃⲏⲩ ϩⲛ̄ϩⲉⲛⲫⲁⲛⲧⲁⲥⲓⲁ (Ch. 29)
    {NB: ⲉⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲩ see ⲉⲓⲛⲉ}

41.2 THE REMOTE or HYPOTHETICAL WISH

ϩⲁⲙⲟⲓ ⲉⲛⲉ-, ϩⲁⲙⲟⲓ ⲛⲉ- "Would that ...!"

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

STERN par. STEINDORFF par. 491; TILL par. 456 B2; VERGOTE par. 201(3)

1. ϩⲁⲙⲟⲓ ⲉⲛⲉⲁⲛⲟ̄ⲩⲙⲁⲓϩⲟⲙⲧ̄ ⲁⲛ (Ch. 77)
2. ϩⲁⲙⲟⲓ ⲟⲛ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ ⲛⲉⲩⲛⲁϯⲗⲟⲅⲟⲥ ϩⲁⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲑⲓⲛⲉⲓⲁⲧⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ (Mun. 100)

3. ϩⲁⲙⲟⲓ ⲉⲛⲉⲣⲉⲛⲉⲧⲟ ⲛ̄ϩⲙ̄ϩⲁⲗ ⲙ̄ⲡⲙⲁⲙⲙⲱⲛⲁⲥ ⲛⲁⲕⲱ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ϩⲉⲛ-
ⲱⲃⲏⲣ ϩⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲧⲟ ⲛ̄ϩⲙ̄ϩⲁⲗ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲭ̄ⲥ̄ ϩⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲙⲉ (P 131.8 94 ro)
4. ϩⲁⲙⲟⲓ ⲟⲛ ⲛⲉⲱⲁⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲃⲱ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲓϩⲉ ⲡⲉ (III 83)
5. ϩⲁⲙⲟⲓ ⲟⲛ ⲉⲛⲉⲩⲇⲟⲕⲓⲙⲁⲍⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲱⲟⲣⲡ̄ ⲡⲉ (IV 66)
6. ϩⲁⲙⲟⲓ ⲛⲉⲁⲛⲟⲛⲟⲩⲁ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ (IV 92)
7. ϩⲁⲙⲟⲓ ⲃⲉ ⲉⲛⲉⲙⲛ̄ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛ̄ⲕⲟⲧⲕ̄ ⲏ ⲧⲁϩⲉ ⲛ̄ⲥⲁⲛⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲕⲟⲧⲕ̄ ϩⲛ̄-
ⲧⲉⲩⲱⲏ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲉⲟⲩⲛ̄ϩⲛⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲛ ⲉⲛⲁⲱⲱⲟⲩ ⲛⲁⲱⲱⲡⲉ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉ-
ⲧⲟⲩⲏϩ ϩⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲓⲕⲟⲩⲙⲉⲛⲏ (IV 180)

41.3 THE REMOTE or HYPOTHETICAL RESULT following a remote protasis (41.1)

Past future (ⲛⲉϥⲛⲁ-), ⲛⲉ- + Nominal Sentence; ... ⲡⲉ is the rule.

1. ⲉⲛⲉⲟⲩⲣⲙ̄ⲣⲁⲱ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲉϥⲁⲙⲁϩⲧⲉ ⲉⲭⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲣⲅⲏ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉϥⲃⲱⲛⲧ̄ ⲛⲉϥ-
ⲛⲁϩⲱ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ (IV 19)
2. ⲉⲛⲉⲩⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲛⲉⲧϩⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲛϩⲏⲧ ⲛⲉⲩⲛⲁⲁⲩ ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲧⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲉ-
ⲣⲟⲟⲩ (III 108)
{NB: ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲧⲛ̄- = ⲉⲙⲡⲁⲧⲛ̄-}
3. ⲱ ⲉⲛⲉⲣⲉⲙⲙⲁⲣⲧⲩⲣⲟⲥ ⲟⲛϩ̄ ⲛ̄ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲛ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲛⲉⲛⲛⲁⲉⲓⲙⲉ ⲡⲉ
ⲭⲉⲉⲩⲃⲟⲛⲧ̄ ⲉⲣⲟⲛ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲏⲣ (A I 102)
4. ⲛ̄ⲥⲁⲃⲏⲗ ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲏⲧϥ̄ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲭⲉⲛⲉⲛⲟ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲛⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲛⲉⲛⲛⲁⲃⲱ ⲁⲛ
ⲡⲉ (IV 96)
{NB: ⲛ̄ⲥⲁⲃⲏⲗ is the approx. equivalent of a negative remote protasis: "Were it not"}
5. ⲉⲛⲉⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲩ-ϩⲛⲧ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲉⲉⲓⲙⲉ ⲛⲉⲥⲣⲱϣⲉ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲃⲓⲧⲁ-
ⲡⲟⲇⲉⲓⲝⲓⲥ ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲡⲟⲥⲧⲟⲗⲟⲥ (Wess. 18 128)
6. ϩⲁⲙⲟⲓ ⲉⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲙⲟⲩⲣ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲱⲛⲉ ⲛ̄ⲥⲓⲕⲉ ⲉⲡⲉⲩⲙⲁⲕϩ̄ ⲛ̄ⲥⲉⲟⲙ-
ⲥⲟⲩ ⲙ̄ⲡⲡⲉⲗⲁⲅⲟⲥ ⲛ̄ⲑⲁⲗⲁⲥⲥⲁ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲉⲥⲣ̄ⲛⲟⲩⲣⲉ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲡⲉ ⲙⲛ̄-
ⲡⲕⲉⲓⲟⲩⲇⲁⲥ ⲛ̄ϩⲟⲩⲟ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲩⲙⲉⲣⲉⲡⲥⲁϩⲟⲩ (IV 9)

UNIT (II): THE CONJUNCTIVE
(sections 42-43)

42.1 The conjunctive extending (continuing-and-representing, extending, "carrying on") preceding conjugation-forms
42.2 The conjunctive extending (continuing-and-finitizing, "carrying on") preceding infinitives

43. The conjunctive as a "that" clause form: in construction with preceding adverbial ("conjunction"), nouns or clauses.

42.1 THE CONJUNCTIVE CONTINUING-AND-REPRESENTING ("CARRYING ON", EXTENDING) CONJUGATION FORMS

Form: ⲛ̄ⲧ̄ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄. Nominal, demonstr./indef. pronoun, 2nd person sgl. fem. actor: ⲛ̄ⲧⲉ- ... ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄

The conjunctive (7.4) serves to express a special, closely-knit kind of coordination ("**microcoordination**") to a preceding verbal clause amounting to its extension. It is in this role either preceded by ⲁⲩⲱ "additionally", "and"; ⲏ "or"; ⲁⲗⲗⲁ "however", and other conjunctional adverbials, or it may be conjunctionless; in the latter case it usually expresses directed coordination ("and then ...", "and so ...", "so that ..."). Note that, while its verbal semantics (tense, mode etc.) are wholly induced by the conjugation form "carried on" or extended by it, its actor may either resume the actor of the extended conjugation form, or a new actor (noun or pronoun) may be asserted. Similarly, its negativing (by -ⲧⲙ̄-, 7.1-4) may either be induced by a negatived precedent clause or be asserted as a new negation.

Illustrated below are the constructions of (a) the conjunctive extending specific conjugation forms, (b) the conjunctive extending various protatic clauses ("if ..." clauses).

NB: (1) note the prevalence of subcoordination following imperatives.
(2) The 1st sgl. form of the conjunctive is ⲛ̄ⲧⲁ- (for the micro-coordination function) or ⲧⲁ- (for subcoordination).

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

STERN parr. 440, 443-445, 447; STEINDORFF parr. 368-369; TILL parr. 321-322; VERGOTE par. 161(1); LAMBDIN par. 25.2; *SHISHA-HALEVY, Chapter 7

(a) The conjunctive extending specific conjugation forms:

1. †ⲛⲁⲧⲟⲗⲙⲁ ⲁⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲭⲱ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲓⲱⲁⲭⲉ ⲛ̄ⲛⲁϩⲣⲛ̄ⲛⲁⲥⲛⲏⲩ (III 123)
2. ⲧⲱⲟⲩⲛ ⲛ̄ⲧⲛ̄ⲙⲉⲧⲁⲛⲟⲉⲓ (III 181)
3. ⲥⲛⲁⲱⲱⲡⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲙⲉⲥⲧⲱⲓ (Ch. 93)
   [OBS. The neutric ⲥ "it" with ⲱⲱⲡⲉ "happen" is typically continued by the conjunctive as a content-clause ("that ...")]
4. ⲟⲩⲱⲙ ⲛ̄ϭⲥⲱ (A I 206)
5. ⲥⲉ̄ϩⲟⲧⲉ ϩⲛⲧ̄ⲕ ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲅⲅⲉⲗⲟⲥ ⲭⲉⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲕⲡⲁⲧⲁⲥⲥⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛ̄ⲕ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩⲧⲟⲩ (IV 21)
6. ⲱⲁⲣⲉⲧⲃ̄ⲃⲓⲗⲉ ⲛ̄ⲥⲟⲩⲟ ⲙⲟⲩ ⲛⲥ̄ⲣ̄ⲕⲁϩ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲧⲣⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲉⲓ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲛ̄ϩⲛⲧ̄ⲥ̄ (A II 191f.)
7. ⲛⲉⲩⲛⲁⲁⲛⲉⲭⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲱⲁⲛⲧⲟⲩⲛⲟⲭⲟⲩ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲡⲕⲱϩ̄ⲧ̄ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲡⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛ̄ⲥⲉⲣⲁϩⲧⲟⲩ ⲉⲡⲕⲁϩ (IV 24)
8. †ⲛⲁⲧⲁⲙⲱⲧⲛ̄ ⲉⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁϥⲭⲓⲃⲟⲗ ⲉⲣⲟⲛ ⲛ̄ϩⲛⲧⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲧⲥⲁⲃⲱⲧⲛ̄ ⲉⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲛⲥϩⲁⲓⲥⲟⲩ ⲛⲁϥ (Ch. 94)
9. ⲁⲱ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁ ⲛⲉⲧ̄ⲛⲁⲡⲁⲣⲁⲧⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲏ ⲛ̄ⲧ̄ⲃⲱⲕ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲧ̄ⲧⲙ̄ⲛ̄-ⲡⲟⲥⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲫ̄ⲯⲩⲭⲏ (Ch. 56)
   {NB: ⲛ̄- sec ⲉⲓⲛⲉ}
10. ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲉⲭⲥ̄ ⲛⲁⲥⲙⲟⲩ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲏⲣ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛ̄ⲧ̄ⲧⲉⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲁⲩ (Ch. 85)
11. ⲁⲁⲕ ⲛ̄ⲉⲗⲁⲭⲓⲥⲧⲟⲛ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲱⲁⲭⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲕⲧⲁⲡⲣⲟ ⲛⲧ̄ⲁⲁⲕ ⲛ̄ⲁⲧⲛⲟⲉⲓ ϩⲛ̄ⲧⲙⲏⲧⲉ ⲛ̄ⲛ̄ⲥⲁⲃⲉⲉⲩ (IV 41)
12. ⲙⲁⲣⲟⲩⲁⲓⲥⲑⲁⲛⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛ̄ⲥⲉⲉⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ (Ch. 163)
13. ⲉⲓⲉⲃⲉϩⲭⲱⲓ ⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲁⲱⲁϩⲟⲙ (III 183)
14. ⲙ̄ⲡⲣ̄ⲧⲣⲉⲛⲁⲁⲛ ⲛ̄ⲱⲙ̄ⲙⲟ ⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲙⲛ̄ⲡⲉⲫⲭ̄ⲥ̄ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩⲟⲩⲛⲟϥ ⲙⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲥⲟⲗⲥ̄ ⲛ̄ⲛⲟⲩⲭ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲙ̄ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲥⲉⲃⲏⲥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛ̄ⲧⲛ̄ⲱⲱⲡⲉ ⲛ̄ⲭⲁⲭⲉ ⲉⲛⲉϥⲡⲉⲧⲟⲩⲗⲁⲃ (IV 5)
15. ⲱⲛ̄ϩⲧⲏ ϩⲁⲣⲟ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲧⲉ ⲧⲥⲩⲛⲁⲅⲱⲅⲏ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲛ̄ⲥⲁⲡⲱⲁⲭⲉ ⲉⲧⲥϩ (III 191)
16. ⲕⲁⲁⲧ ⲧⲁⲧⲣⲉⲛⲉⲥⲛⲏⲩ ⲣ̄ⲟⲩⲁⲛⲁⲱ ⲛⲁⲓ (III 16)

(b) The conjunctive extending protatic ("if ...") clauses:

1. ⲉⲱⲱⲡⲉ ⲟⲩⲉⲓⲱⲧ ⲙⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲙⲁⲁⲩ ⲉⲟⲩ̄ⲛⲧⲁⲩ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ϩⲉⲛⲱⲏⲣⲉ ⲙⲛ̄ϩⲉⲛⲱⲉⲉⲣⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉϩⲁϩ ⲛ̄ϩⲛⲧⲟⲩ ϩⲉ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ϩⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲱⲥ̄ⲛⲉ ... (P 130.2 41 160)
   {NB: ⲉⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲩ: the circumstantial is governed by ⲉⲱⲱⲡⲉ "If it be the case that ..."}
2. ⲟⲩⲁⲧⲃⲟⲙ ⲡⲉ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲡⲇⲓⲁⲃⲟⲗⲟⲥ ⲧⲣⲉⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲣ̄ⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲡⲉⲕⲟⲩⲱⲱ ⲣ̄ⲱⲟⲣⲡ̄ ⲉⲡⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲇⲓⲁⲃⲟⲗⲟⲥ ⲏ ⲛ̄ⲧ̄ϩⲟⲧⲣ̄ ⲛⲙ̄ⲙⲁϥ (Ch. 63)

{NB: ⲙ̄ⲡⲉ- = ⲉⲙⲡⲉ- "unless"}

3. ⲛⲓⲙ ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲣ̄ⲡⲁⲓ ⲉⲙⲡⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲣ̄ⲱⲣ̄ⲡⲥⲁϩⲉ-ⲡⲉϥϩⲟ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛ̄ϥⲁⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ⲱⲙ̄ⲙⲟ ⲉⲡⲉϥⲡⲛⲁ̄ (P 130.2 75 ro)
4. ϩⲁⲙⲟⲓ ⲉⲛⲉⲩⲱⲟⲟⲡ ⲛⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲛ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲥⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲡⲉϩⲛⲉⲛϩⲟⲉⲓⲧⲉ ϩⲓⲭⲱⲛ (A I 202)
5. ϩⲉⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲩ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ϩⲉⲛⲱⲏⲣⲉ ⲏ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟϥ ⲉⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ⲥⲉⲁ-ⲡⲟⲧⲁⲥⲥⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ (IV 3)
   [OBS. The circumstantial (ⲉⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲩ) as protasis]
6. ⲡⲉⲧⲥⲱⲧⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲛ ⲛ̄ϥϩⲩⲡⲟⲙⲓⲛⲉ (Leyd. 355)
   [OBS. The definite relative present ("the one that ...") as protasis-equivalent]
7. ⲡⲉⲧⲉⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲁϥⲥⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ϥⲧⲙ̄ⲛⲁ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧⲟⲩ (Ch. 195)

42.2 THE CONJUNCTIVE CONTINUING-AND-FINITIZING ("CARRYING ON", EXTENDING) INFINITIVES

Here the conjunctive, extending the infinitive (actorless), also supplies a finite actor (pronoun or noun), i.e. finitizes it. The pronominal actor used is either one in agreement with the context, or the generic "you" (2nd person singular masculine).

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STERN par. 447(g); * SHISHA-HALEVY, par. 7.2.5

1. ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲃⲟⲙ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲱⲗⲏⲗ ⲉⲭⲱⲓ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲕⲱ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ (III 135f.)
2. ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲥ ⲛⲁⲛ ⲉⲣⲥⲟⲫⲟⲥ ⲛ̄ⲧⲛ̄ⲕⲗⲏⲣⲟⲛⲟⲙⲉⲓ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲟⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ϩⲟⲩⲟ ⲉⲣ̄ⲁⲑⲏⲧ ⲛ̄ⲧⲛ̄ⲥⲱⲧⲡ̄ ⲛⲁⲛ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲥⲱⲱ ⲉϥⲭⲟⲥⲉ ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲥ ⲛⲁⲛ ⲉⲑⲃ̄-ⲃⲓⲟⲛ ⲛ̄ⲧⲛ̄ⲭⲓ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩϩⲙⲟⲧ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲓⲧⲙ̄ⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲛ̄ϩⲟⲩⲟ ⲉⲣ̄ⲭⲁⲥⲓϩⲏⲧ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ † ⲟⲩⲃⲏⲛ (P 130.4 38 vo)
3. ⲛⲉⲓⲟⲩⲱⲱ ⲙⲛ̄ ⲛⲉⲥⲛⲏⲩ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲣ̄ⲥⲁⲃⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲥⲟⲩⲛ̄-ⲛⲉⲧⲱⲟⲟⲡ ⲛⲏⲧⲛ̄ ⲉⲩⲉⲟⲟⲩ (IV 93)
4. ⲱⲱⲉ ⲉⲱⲓⲡⲉ ϩⲏⲧⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲛⲉⲓⲟⲧⲉ ⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲛ̄ⲕⲟⲧⲕ̄ ⲛ̄ⲧⲛ̄ϩⲩⲡⲟ-ⲙⲓⲛⲉ (III 118)
5. ⲟⲩⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲙⲁⲕⲁⲣⲓⲟⲥ ⲡⲉ † ⲙ̄ⲡϩⲏⲕⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲙ̄ⲭⲓ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲟⲧⲕ̄ ⲏ ⲉⲁⲕⲭⲓ ⲟⲛ ⲛ̄ϩⲱ ⲉⲣⲟⲕ ⲉⲧⲱⲃ̄ⲃⲉⲓⲱ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲕⲧⲁⲁⲩ ⲛⲁϥ (III 65f.)
   {NB: ⲏ ⲉⲁⲕ- ... ⲟⲛ "or, even having ..."}
6. ⲙ̄ⲡⲭⲱⲕ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲙⲟⲥ ⲡⲉ ⲙⲉⲣⲉⲡⲉⲧϩⲓⲧⲟⲩⲱⲕ ⲛ̄ⲙⲉⲥ-ⲧⲉⲡⲉⲕⲭⲁⲭⲉ (III 65)

7. ⲁⷭⲉⲣⲏⲧ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲟⲛ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲩⲟⲩⲱⲙ ⲛ̄ⲥⲉⲥⲱ ⲛ̄ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⷭ ⷯⲓⲭⲛ̄ⲧⲉⷭⲧⲣⲁ-ⲡⲉⷯⲁ (Ch. 131)
8. †ⲡⲁⲣⲁⲕⲁⲗⲉⲓ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲣⲙ̄ⲛ̄ⷯⲓⲓⲧ ⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲧⲣⲉⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄ⷯⲟⲙⲉⲗⲉⲓ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲭⲓⷯⲣⲏⲧⲛ̄ ⲉⲛⷱⲁⲭⲉ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ (III 31)
9. ⷯⲙ̄ⲡⲧⲣⲉⷭⲣ̄ⲟⲩⲁ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲱⲧ ⲙⲛ̄ⲡⲉⲡⲛⲁ̄ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲡⲉⲡⲛⲁ̄ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ ⲣ̄ⲟⲩⲁ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲱⲧ ⲛ̄ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⷭ (A II 403)
10. ⲙⲛ̄ⲛ̄ⲥⲁⲧⲣⲉⲕ†ⲥⲃⲱ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲥⲟⲡ ⲁⲛ ⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲥⲛⲁⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲛ̄ⷯⲁⷯ ⲛ̄ⲥⲟⲡ ⲉⲙⲁⲧⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛ̄ⲥⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲣⷯⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ (III 169)
11. ⲉⲓⷱⲁⲛⲧⲙ̄ⲧⲣⲉⲡⲕⲁⷯ ⲟⲩⲱⲛ ⲛ̄ⲣⲱⷭ ⲛⷭⲟⲙⲕⲟⲩ (III 131)

43. THE CONJUNCTIVE AS A "THAT"-CLAUSE: IN CONSTRUCTION WITH PRECEDING ADVERBIALS ("conjunctions"), NOUNS or CLAUSES

Note especially the conjunctive following ⲉⲓⲙⲏⲧⲓ "unless", ⷯⲱⲥⲧⲉ "so that" and its negative ⲙⲏⲡⲟⲧⲉ "lest", ⲙⲟⲣⲓⲥ "hardly", ⷯⲁⲙⲟⲓ (and ⲣⲉⲛⲟⲓⲧⲟ) "Would that..."; the Nominal Sentence ⲕⲉⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲡⲉ ... "It is but a step..." and similar; ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲥ, "It is better"

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

STERN parr. 443, 611-616; STEINDORFF par. 371; TILL parr. 323-324; 416; VERGOTE parr. 161(1), 209(4,5), 211(3,4), 212(5); LAMBDIN par. 30.10; *SHISHA-HALEVY parr. 7.3-7.4

1. ⲛ̄†ⲛⲁⷱⲟⲩⲱⲙ ⲁⲛ ⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛ̄†ⲛⲁⷱⲥⲉⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲓⲙⲏⲧⲓ ⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲃⲛ̄-ⲡⲉⷱⲁⲓⲟⲩⲟⲙⷋ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡⲉⷱⲁⲓⲥⲟⲟⲩ (Ch. 158)
2. ⲟⲩ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲡⲉⲧ† ⲟⲩⲃⲏⲛ ⲉⲓⲙⲏⲧⲓ ⲛ̄ⲧⲛ̄† ⲟⲩⲃⲏⲛ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲛ (III 107)
3. ⲥⲉⲣⲁⷱⲉ ⲉⲭⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲛ ⷯⲱⲥⲧⲉ ⲛ̄ⲥⲉⲥⲙⲟⲩ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ (Ch. 85)
4. ⷱⲁⲓⲉⲓ ⷱⲁⲣⲱⲧⲛ̄ ⷯⲛ̄ⲁⷱ ⲛ̄ⲧⲓⲙⲱⲣⲓⲁ ⷯⲱⲥⲧⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲡⲉⷯⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲃ̄ⲱⲃ ⲙⲉⷯⲡ†ⲙⲉ ⲉⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲛ̄ⷯⲏⲧⲕ̄ (III 21)
5. ⲛ†ⲛⲁⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲕⲉⲗⲁⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ⲥⲁⲧⲣⲁ†ⲥⲃⲱ ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲡⲉ†ⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ ⲉⲣⲟⷯ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⷯⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲅⲣⲁⲫⲏ ⲙⲏⲡⲟⲧⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲁⷱⲱⲱⲭⲉ ⲏ ⲧⲁⲃⲗⲁⲡⲧⲉⲓ ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲓ (A I 52)
   {NB: (ⲛ̄ⲥⲁ-)ⲧⲣⲁ- 1st sgl. of -ⲧⲣⲉⷯ- "(other) than that..."}
   [OBS. Note the different function of ⲛ̄ⲧⲁ- (following conjunctions) and ⲧⲁ- (microcoordinating)]
6. ⲕⲁⲗⲱⲥ ⲛ̄ⷯⲟⲩⲟ ⲉⲛⷱⲁⲛⲥⲁⷯⲱⲛ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲛⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲙⲏⲡⲟⲧⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲟⲩⲙⲕⲁⷯ ⲛ̄ⷯⲏⲧ ⷱⲱⲡⲉ ⲛⲁⲛ ⲙⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲁⷱⲁⷯⲟⲙ (III 222)
7. ⲁⲙⲟⲩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⷯⲛ̄ⲙ̄ⲡⲟⲗⲓⲥ ⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲛⲟⲙⲓⲁ ⲙⲏⲡⲟⲧⲉ ⲛ̄ⲥⲉⲭⲓⲧⲕ̄ ⲛ̄ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ⲉⷯⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲧⲟⲟⲧⲥ̄ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲣⲅⲏ (III 169)

8. ⲡⲥⲁⲉⲓⲛ ⲉⲯⲁⲫⲃⲱⲕ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲣⲁⲧⲟ̄ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲟⲛ ⲛⲓⲙ ϩⲁⲡⲗⲱⲥ ⲉⲣ̄ⲡⲁϩⲣⲉ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲙⲟⲩⲓⲥ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲛ̄ⲫⲃⲱⲕ ⲉⲣⲁⲧⲟ̄ ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲣⲭⲱⲛ ⲏ ⲡⲣⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲟ (Ming. 84)
9. ⲁⲗⲗⲟ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲡϩⲏⲧ ϫⲓⲗⲁⲁⲩ ϫⲉⲫⲯⲱⲛⲉ ⲁⲗⲗⲟ ⲧⲣⲉⲕⲁⲛⲁⲅⲕⲁϩⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲕ ⲡⲁⲣⲁⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲡⲉⲕϩⲏⲧ ⲯⲟⲡⲟⲩ (IV 85f.)
[OBS. Note the variation of the conjunctive and ⲧⲣⲉ- as "that"-forms]
10. ⲟⲩⲣⲓⲕⲉ ⲯⲏⲙ ⲡⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲯⲱⲡⲉ ⲛ̄ⲯⲏⲣⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲏ ⲛ̄ⲫⲯⲱⲡⲉ ⲛ̄ⲯⲏⲣⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲇⲓⲁⲃⲟⲗⲟⲥ (Ch. 68)
11. ⲛ̄ⲕⲉⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲛⲓ̄ⲟⲩⲱϩⲙ̄ ⲟⲩⲃⲉⲡⲣⲉⲫⲥⲱⲛⲧ̄ (P 131.5 79 84)
12. ⲅⲉⲛⲟⲓⲧⲟ ⲇⲉ ⲛ̄ⲫⲧⲟⲩϫⲟ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲧⲯⲓⲛⲉ ⲛ̣ⲥⲱϥ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲑⲟⲟⲩ' ⲛⲓⲙ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛ̄ⲫϩⲁⲣⲉϩ ⲉⲡⲉⲫⲛⲓ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲉⲫⲛⲓ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲛ̄ⲯⲧⲟⲣⲧⲣ̄ ⲛⲓⲙ (Wess. 9 88)
13. ϩⲁⲙⲟⲓ ⲛ̄ⲥⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲣ̄ⲃⲟⲧⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲏ ⲛ̄ⲥⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲁⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ⲃⲟⲧⲉ (IV 164)
14. ⲛ̄ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲥ ⲁⲛ ⲛ̄ⲧⲛ̄ⲣ̄ⲟⲩϩⲟⲟⲩ ⲏ ⲥⲛⲁⲩ ⲏ ⲟⲩⲉⲃⲟⲧ ⲏ ⲟⲩⲣⲟⲙⲡⲉ ⲓⲓ ⲡⲉⲛⲁϩⲉ ⲧⲏⲣⲫ̄ ⲉⲛⲫⲓ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ϩⲁϩⲉⲛⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲛ̄ⲃⲁⲥⲁⲛⲟⲥ ⲛ̄ϩⲟⲩⲟ ⲉⲣⲟⲥ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲛⲯⲱⲡⲉ ⲉⲩⲣⲱⲕϩ̄ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲛ ϩⲣⲁⲓ ϩⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲕⲱϩⲧ̄ (Wess. 9 158)

UNIT III: CONDITIONAL AND RELATED CONSTRUCTIONS
(sections 44-48)

44.1 ⲉⲫⲯⲁⲛⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ generic-eventual condition: "If and when ...", "Whenever ..."
44.2 ϩⲟⲧⲁⲛ ⲉⲫⲯⲁⲛ-: "As soon as ...", "Immediately when ..."
45 ⲉⲯⲭⲉ- argumentative, topical condition: "Granted that ...", "Given/supposing that ..."
45.1 ϩⲱⲥ ⲉⲯⲭⲉ- "as if ..."
46 ⲉⲯⲱⲡⲉ, ⲕⲁⲛ disjunction of alternative cases: "Whether ... or ...", "Be it ..., be it ..."
47 ⲉⲛⲉ- remote or hypothetical ("unreal") condition: see 41.1-3
48 Concessive "conditions" ("Even though ...", "Even if ...", "Even if (as is usual/apparent) ...": ⲕⲁⲛ, ⲉⲯⲭⲉ-

44.1 ⲉⲫⲯⲁⲛⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄, GENERIC-EVENTUAL CONDITION: "If and when ...", "Whenever ..." (7.3)

Note the use of the Conditional in general (also gnomic) statements, with the aorist as a typical apodosis

NB: ⲉⲫⲧⲙ̄ⲙⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ is a rare form of the negatived Conditional (normally ⲉⲫⲯⲁⲛⲧⲙ̄-)

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

STERN parr. 420-421; STEINDORFF par. 492; TILL parr. 447-448; VERGOTE parr. 161(5), 212(2); LAMBDIN par. 29.1; WILSON pp. 90-95; YOUNG, "*Esôpe*"

1. ⲁⲗⲏⲑⲱⲥ ⲉⲓⲯⲁⲛⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲉⲛⲉⲛⲉⲓⲟⲧⲉ ⲛ̄ⲁⲣⲭⲁⲓⲟⲥ ⲯⲁⲓⲣ̄ⲑⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲧⲉⲙ̄ⲡⲣ̄ⲥⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ (IV 22)
2. ⲉⲣⲯⲁⲛⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲣ̄ϩⲛⲁϥ ⲥⲉⲛⲁⲡⲁⲣⲁⲕⲉ (III 31)
   {NB: ⲡⲁⲣⲁⲕⲉ = ⲡⲁⲣⲁⲅⲉ}
3. ⲛ̄ⲯⲁⲛⲟⲛⲟⲙⲁⲍⲉ ⲛ̄ⲓ̄ⲥ̄ ⲉⲛⲟⲛⲟⲙⲁⲍⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲧⲣⲓⲁⲥ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ (Wess. 9 136)
   {NB: ⲛ̄ⲯⲁⲛ- = ⲉⲛⲯⲁⲛ-}
4. ⲉⲛⲯⲁⲛⲭⲟⲟⲥ ⲭⲉⲁⲛⲟⲛ ⲧⲛ̄ⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲁⲛ ⲛ̄ⲗⲁⲁⲩ ⲧⲛ̄ⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲯⲥⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲡϩⲏⲧ ⲙ̄ⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ (Ch. 68)
5. ⲉⲥⲯⲁⲛⲯⲱⲡⲉ ⲇⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲛⲉⲥⲛⲏⲩ ⲉⲧϩⲛ̄ⲧⲥⲩⲛⲁⲅⲱⲅⲏ ⲙ̄ⲡⲓⲙⲁ ϩⲁ-

ⲧⲏⲛ ⲃⲱⲕ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩϩⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲥⲩⲛⲁⲅⲱⲅⲏ ⲱⲏⲙ ... ⲟⲩϩⲱⲃ ⲉⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩϥ ⲉⲙⲁⲧⲉ ⲡⲉ ⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲙ̄ⲣ̄ϩⲁϩ ⲛ̄ⲱⲁϫⲉ ϩⲛ̄ⲛⲉϩⲓⲟⲟⲩⲉ (IV 69f.)

6. ⲟⲛⲧⲱⲥ ⲟⲩⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲛ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲉⲣⲱⲁⲛⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉϥⲙⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲭ̄ⲥ̄ ⲙⲓⲱⲉ ⲙ̄ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲡⲛⲁ̄ ⲉⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩϥ ⲉϥⲱⲁⲛⲟⲩⲱⲛϩ̄ ⲛⲁϥ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲉⲱⲁϥ-
ⲙⲉⲣⲓⲧϥ̄ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟϥ ⲛ̄ϩⲟⲩⲟ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛϥ̄ⲣⲁⲱⲉ ⲉϫⲱϥ (III 40)
7. ⲧⲉⲱⲡⲏⲣⲉ ⲧⲏⲣ̄ⲥ̄ ⲡⲉ ⲉⲣⲱⲁⲛⲟⲩⲁ ⲙⲉⲣⲉⲡⲉϥⲥⲟⲛ ⲉⲧⲁ̄ⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲣⲟϥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛϥ̄ⲙⲉⲣⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲉⲧⲉⲛϥ̄ⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲣⲟϥ ⲁⲛ (III 153)
8. (Let no one hit a man in my name...) ⲉⲓⲟⲛϩ̄ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲟⲛ ⲉⲓⲱⲁⲛ-ⲙⲟⲩ (IV 98)
9. ⲉⲣⲱⲁⲛⲧⲙ̄ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲙ̄ⲕⲁϩ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧ ⲉϫⲱϥ ⲙ̄ⲙⲓⲛ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟϥ ⲛ̄ⲁⲱ ⲛ̄ϩⲉ ⲉϥⲛⲁⲗⲩⲡⲉⲓ ⲛ̄ⲕⲉⲟⲩⲁ (A II 41)
10. ⲟⲩⲛ̄ϩⲉⲛϩⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲉⲣⲱⲁⲛⲧⲙ̄ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲣⲏⲧ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲙⲛ̄ⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲉⲣⲟϥ (A II 60)
11. ⲣ̄ⲱⲁⲛⲧⲙ̄ⲡϩⲏⲧ ⲙ̄ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲣⲱ ϫⲱϩⲙ̄ ⲙⲉϥⲣ̄ⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲉⲣⲱⲁⲛ-ⲧⲙ̄ⲧⲉϥⲯⲩⲭⲏ ⲗⲱⲱⲙⲉ ϩⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲕⲁⲑⲁⲣⲥⲓⲁ ⲙⲉϥⲣ̄ⲁⲧⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ (A I 147)
{NB: ⲣ̄ⲱⲁⲛ- = ⲉⲣⲱⲁⲛ-}
12. ⲉϥⲧⲙ̄ⲣⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲙⲛ̄ⲛⲉϩⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲡⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲛⲁⲱⲟⲗϥ̄ (A I 178)

44.2 ϩⲟⲧⲁⲛ ⲉϥⲱⲁⲛⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "As soon as ...", "Immediately when ...", "Only when ..."; "Whenever ..."

1. ϩⲟⲧⲁⲛ ⲇⲉ ⲉⲣⲱⲁⲛⲡⲥⲁⲧⲁⲛⲁⲥ ⲡⲉⲡⲛⲁ̄ ⲛ̄ⲁⲕⲁⲑⲁⲣⲧⲟⲛ ⲃⲛ̄ⲙⲁ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ϥⲛⲁⲙⲁϩϥ̄ ⲛ̄ⲥⲁⲟⲩⲛ ⲛ̄ⲛⲟⲩϫ (Wess. 9 141)
{NB: ⲥⲁⲟⲩⲛ = ⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ, an Akhmimicism in Shenoute's idiom}
2. ϩⲟⲧⲁⲛ ⲉϥⲱⲁⲛⲉⲓ ⲛ̄ⲃⲓⲡⲱⲏⲣⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ... ⲧⲟⲧⲉ ϥⲛⲁϩⲙⲟⲟⲥ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉϫⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲑⲣⲟⲛⲟⲥ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉϥⲉⲟⲟⲩ (III 219)
3. ϩⲟⲧⲁⲛ ⲉⲩⲱⲁⲛⲉⲓⲙⲉ ⲉⲡⲱⲣϫ̄ ⲛ̄ϩⲱⲃ ⲛⲓⲙ ϩⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲱⲣϫ̄ ⲛ̄ⲃⲓⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲁⲩ ⲉⲧϩⲓϫⲱⲟⲩ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲙⲁ ⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ⲉⲩⲛⲁⲥϩⲁⲓⲥⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲥⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲛⲟⲟⲩⲥⲟⲩ ⲛⲁⲛ (IV 159f.)
4. ϩⲟⲧⲁⲛ ⲉⲣⲱⲁⲛⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲙⲉⲣⲉⲡⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲱⲁⲣⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲧⲃⲟⲙ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉϫⲱϥ (Ch. 68)
5. (It is a great perfection that a man should cut himself off from his brother or son or daughter of father or mother for the sake of God) ϩⲟⲧⲁⲛ ⲉⲩⲱⲁⲛⲣ̄ⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲉⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁϥⲧⲁⲙⲓⲟⲟⲩ (IV 128)
6. (The order of solitary prayer or meditation:) ϩⲟⲧⲁⲛ ⲉⲣⲱⲁⲛⲡⲁⲓ ⲉⲓ ⲉⲡⲉⲥϩⲧ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲡⲁⲓ ⲧⲁⲗⲟ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲧⲁϫⲏ (IV 156)

45 ϵϣχϵ- ARGUMENTATIVE TOPICAL "CONDITION": "Granted that ...", "Given/supposing that ...", "If (as we know/as you will no doubt agree) ..."

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STERN par. 629; STEINDORFF par. 485; WILSON p. 98f.

1. ϵϣχϵ-ⲁⲛⲟⲛϩⲉⲛⲉⲥⲟⲟⲩ ⲧⲉⲫⲩⲥⲓⲥ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲥⲟⲟⲩ ⲡⲉ ⲟⲩⲁϩⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲥⲁⲡϣⲱⲥ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ ⲡⲉⲭ̄ⲥ̄ (Ch. 65)
2. ϵϣχⲉⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩϩⲉⲛϣⲏⲣ̀ⲉ ϣⲏⲙ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲩⲕⲱ ⲛ̄ⲥⲱⲟⲩ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲧⲛ̄ϣⲁϫⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲧⲟⲩⲛⲟⲉⲓ ⲣⲱ ⲉⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲧⲛ̄ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲧⲱⲧⲛ̄ ⲉⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲧⲥⲧⲟ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛ̄ⲛⲣⲱⲩⲓ ⲉⲁⲛⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲥⲕⲓⲙ ⲁϣⲁⲓ (IV 96)
3. ϵϣχⲉϣⲁⲣⲉⲡϩⲁⲓⲣⲉⲧⲓⲕⲟⲥ ⲃⲉ ⲙⲛ̄ⲡϩⲉⲗⲗⲏⲛ ⲡⲱⲣⲱ̄ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲩⲃⲓϫ ⲏ ⲛ̄ⲥⲉϥⲓⲧⲟⲩ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ϩⲛ̄ⲑⲩⲡⲟⲕⲣⲓⲥⲓⲥ ϫⲉⲉⲩϣⲗⲏⲗ ⲉⲓⲥ ⲛ̄ϩⲁⲗⲁⲧⲉ ϩⲱⲟⲩ ⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲓ ⲛ̄ϩⲁϩ ⲛⲥⲟⲡ ⲉⲩⲡⲱⲣⲱ̄ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲩⲧⲛ̄ϩ (III 45)
   [OBS. ϫⲉⲉⲩϣⲗⲏⲗ: the Second Present introduced by ϫⲉ- conveys scepticism about the truth of the statement; approx. "allegedly"]
4. ϵϣχⲉⲁⲉⲓϩⲣⲟϣ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉϫⲱⲧⲛ̄ ⲛ̄ⲑⲉ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲉⲧⲡⲱ ⲙ̄ⲡⲣ̄ⲉⲩⲕⲁⲕⲉⲓ ⲛ̄ⲧⲱⲧⲛ̄ ⲛ̄ⲧⲛⲁⲱⲥⲕ̄ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲃⲱⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲓⲧⲉⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ̄ (III 145)
5. ϵϣχⲉⲫⲧⲁⲕⲟ ϩⲓⲧⲛ̄ⲛ̄ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲓⲉ ⲛ̄ⲁϣ ⲛ̄ϩⲉ ⲛⲫⲛⲁⲣⲱⲕϩ̄ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲫϣⲁⲛⲧⲟⲗⲙⲁ ⲉϩⲉⲛⲁⲅⲅⲉⲗⲟⲥ (Ch. 76)
6. ϵϣχⲉⲡⲟⲉⲓⲕ ⲧⲉϩⲣⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲥⲱⲙⲁ ⲫⲧⲁϫⲣⲟ ⲙ̄ⲡϩⲏⲧ ⲙ̄ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲡⲟⲥⲱ ⲙⲁⲗⲗⲟⲛ ⲡⲟⲉⲓⲕ ⲙ̄ⲙⲉ ⲡⲟⲉⲓⲕ ⲙ̄ⲡⲱⲛϩ̄ ⲉⲫⲛⲁⲧⲁϫⲣⲟ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲏⲣ ⲙ̄ⲡϩⲏⲧ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲧⲟⲛϩ̄ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧⲫ̄ (Ch. 119)
7. ϵϣχⲉⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲃⲟⲙ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲥϩⲓⲙⲉ ⲉⲃⲟⲛⲑⲉⲓ ⲉⲡⲉⲥϩⲁⲓ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ ⲙⲛ̄ⲃⲟⲙ ⲙ̄ⲡϩⲁⲓ ⲉⲃⲟⲛⲑⲉⲓ ⲉⲧⲉⲫⲥϩⲓⲙⲉ (Or. 157)
8. ϵϣχⲉⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲕⲡⲓⲥⲧⲓⲥ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲕϩⲉⲗⲡⲓⲥ ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲙⲩⲥⲧⲏⲣⲓⲟⲛ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲙ̄ⲡⲙⲩⲥⲧⲏⲣⲓⲟⲛ (Cat. 43)
9. ϵϣχⲉⲡⲣ̄ⲡⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛⲁⲁⲙⲁϩⲧⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲙ̄ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲣⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲛ̄ⲁⲛⲁϣ ⲟⲛ ⲛⲁⲁⲙⲁϩⲧⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟϥ (III 16f.)

45.1 ϩⲱⲥ ϵϣχⲉ- "As if ..."

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
TILL parr. 368, 459; VERGOTE par. 212(6)

1. ⲁⲛⲣ̄ϩⲉⲛⲛⲟⲃ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲑⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲛⲱⲃⲱ̄ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲛ ϩⲱⲥ ϵϣⲭⲉϩⲛ̄ⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲉ (IV 182)
   {NB: ϩⲛ̄ = ϩⲉⲛ-}

2. ογ ϩωωϥ πε ϩωc ϵϣxϵογκαπ ⲛ̄ⲛογϩ πε (Ch. 30)
3. ται τε θε ϵτϵτⲛ̄ππητ ϵcωογϩ ϵπραν ⲙ̄πνογτε ϩωc ϵϣxϵϵτϵτⲛ̄ππητ ϵπϣa (Ch. 155)
4. ⲛ̄ⲛϵϩοινϵ cωωβϵ ⲛ̄cωn ϩωc ϵϣxϵanonϩϵnmaiϩhy ⲛ̄ϣλοϥ (IV 73)
   {NB: cωωβϵ = cωβϵ}
5. ainay anok ϵογa ϵϣxϵⲛ̄taϥtaϩϵ-ογϩοϥ h ογdρakωn (III 208)
   [OBS. ϵϣxϵ- (without the preposition ϩωc) has itself the rare meaning "as if"]

46. ϵϣωπϵ (... ϵϣωπϵ ...), kan (... kan ...) DISJUNCTION OF ALTERNATIVE CASES: "Whether ... or ...", "Be it ..., be it ..."

In this construction (especially common in instructive and preceptive contexts) ϵϣωπϵ and kan are often combined with the circumstantial conversion.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STERN parr. 626-628; YOUNG, "*Ešôpe*"

1. ϵϣωπϵ ογϩοογτ πϵ h ϵϣωπϵ ογcϩimϵ τϵ h ϵγϣhρϵ ϣhm πϵ h ϵγϣϵϵρϵ ϣhm τϵ (IV 56)
2. ϵϣωπϵ ϵγnoβ πϵ ϵϣωπϵ ογkογi πϵ (III 198)
3. ϵϣωπϵ mⲛ̄ πϣωm πϵ ϵϣωπϵ ⲇϵ τϵπρω τϵ (IV 110)
   {NB: $\overline{\text{mn}}$ = mϵn}
   [OBS. Here, as in several other texts, the alternatives are expressed by the special "impersonal" ("It's ...") Nominal Sentence pattern, in which the theme (πϵ, τϵ) resumes the rheme: see section 3.5]
4. ⲛ̄ογοϵiϣ ⲇϵ on nim ϵγϣannoy ϵβωk ϵcωρ ⲛ̄ⲛ̄cω ϵπ-cωογϩ ϵϣωπϵ· mϵn ϵϣωρⲡ̄ πϵ ϵγnaβωk ϵγ̄ρϣomⲧ̄ ... ϵϣωπϵ ⲇϵ ρογϩϵ πϵ ϵγnaβωk ϵγ̄ρcnay h oγa (IV 60)
5. ϵϣωπϵ mϵn ϵaneiρϵ ⲛ̄ⲛϵτϵϣϣϵ ... ϵiϵ cϵnatmaϵion ϵϣωπϵ ⲇϵ ⲛ̄tanⲣ̄nϵtϵmϵϣϣϵ ϵiϵ cϵnatβaion (IV 3)
6. ϵϣωπϵ ϵγcρovⲧ̄ kaλωc on (IV 109)
7. ϵϣωπϵ ϵnϩipϣⲙ̄mo h ϵnmooϣϵ ϩⲛ̄oγϩih ϵnoγhy ϵβoλ ⲛ̄tcγnaгωгh ⲁγω ⲛ̄tϵoγcoγρϵ toртⲣ̄ ⲛ̄toγϵρhtϵ ⲛ̄oγa h τϵqβix ... (IV 123)
8. kan ογϩοογτ πϵ kan ογcϩimϵ τϵ (IV 154)
9. kan ϵϩϵnⲣ̄mmaο nϵ h ⲛ̄toϥ ϵϩϵnϩhkϵ nϵ (III 222)

10. ⲕⲁⲛ ⲉⲩⲱⲱⲛⲉ ⲏ ⲉⲩⲙⲟⲧⲛ̄ (IV 153)
11. ⲕⲁⲛ ⲉⲁⲩⲥⲉⲟⲩⲏⲣⲡ̄ ⲏ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲫ ⲉⲁⲩⲟⲩⲉⲙⲟⲩⲕⲟⲩⲓ (IV 111)
12. ⲕⲁⲛ ⲉⲡⲉⲍⲙⲉ ⲛ̄ⲍⲟⲟⲩ ⲡⲉ ⲕⲁⲛ ⲉⲡⲛⲟⲃ ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲥⲭⲁ ⲡⲉ (IV 84)

47 REMOTE or HYPOTHETICAL ("unreal") CONDITION: see sections 41.1-3

48 CONCESSIVE CLAUSES: "Even though ...", "Even if ...": ⲕⲁⲛ ⲉⲱⲭⲉ- "Even if (as is usual/apparent) ..."

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STERN par. 628; STEINDORFF par. 496; TILL par. 452

1. ⲛ̄ⲧⲛⲁⲭⲟⲟⲥ ⲁⲛ ⲏ ⲕⲁⲛ ⲉⲧⲭⲟⲟⲥ ⲉⲧⲛⲁⲭⲟⲟⲥ ⲛ̄ⲕⲉⲥⲙⲟⲧ (IV 11)
2. ⲕⲁⲛ ⲁⲩⲱⲣ̄ⲱⲣ̄ⲍⲉⲛⲙⲁ ⲛ̄ⲍⲏⲧⲟⲩ ⲧⲛⲁⲕⲟⲧⲟⲩ (IV 19)
3. ⲍⲉⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛ̄ⲥⲉⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲁⲛ ⲭⲉⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲕ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲕⲁⲛ ⲉⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲩ ⲙ̄ⲡⲕⲟⲥⲙⲟⲥ ⲧⲏⲣⲟ̄ ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲩⲩ ⲅⲁⲣ (III 90)
4. ⲕⲁⲛ ⲉⲩⲛ̄ⲕⲟⲧⲕ̄ (i.e. the people in the house) ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲛ ⲭⲉⲣⲟ ⲍⲙ̄ⲡⲏⲉⲓ ⲱⲁⲩⲕⲧⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲡⲁⲍⲟⲩ (i.e. the thieves) (IV 25f.)
5. ⲕⲁⲛ ⲟⲩⲣⲙ̄ⲛ̄ⲣⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ ... ⲟⲩⲭⲁⲭⲉ ⲡⲉ ⲉⲧⲕⲟⲓⲛⲱⲛⲓⲁ (IV 89)
6. ⲕⲁⲛ ⲁⲛ̄ⲣⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲉⲛⲉⲛⲉⲣⲏⲩ ⲙⲏ ⲛ̄ⲛⲁⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲉⲡⲉⲑⲩⲥⲓⲁⲥⲧⲏⲣⲓⲟⲛ (III 93)
   {NB: ⲛ̄ⲛⲁ- = ⲉⲛⲛⲁ-, Second Future in a rhetorical question}
7. ⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓ ⲛⲁⲛ ⲭⲉⲕⲁⲛ ⲧⲛ̄ⲛⲁⲣⲡⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲛ ⲁⲛ ⲍⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲛⲟⲩⲱⲱ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ ⲍⲛ̄ⲧⲃⲟⲙ ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲅⲅⲉⲗⲟⲥ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ ⲟⲩ ⲙⲟⲛⲟⲛ ⲭⲉⲙ̄ⲡⲛ̄ⲣ̄ⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲥ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛ̄ⲥⲁⲍⲱⲛ ⲟⲛ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛ̄ⲛⲓⲡⲁⲣⲁⲫⲩⲥⲓⲥ (Ch. 79)
8. ϯⲟ ⲛ̄ⲭⲁⲭⲉ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲍⲟⲟⲩ ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲱⲛⲍ̄ ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲭⲟⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲍⲁⲍ ⲛ̄ⲥⲟⲡ ⲕⲁⲛ ⲉⲓⲱⲁⲭⲉ ⲛⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ⲍⲛ̄ⲍⲉⲛⲱⲁⲭⲉ ⲛ̄ⲉⲓⲣⲏⲛⲓⲕⲟⲛ ⲕⲁⲛ ⲉⲓⲟ ⲛ̄ⲑⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲧⲣⲁⲱⲉ ⲛⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ ⲏ ⲉⲧⲥⲙⲟⲩ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ (III 40f.)
9. ⲕⲁⲛ ⲉⲁⲩⲡⲉⲍⲡⲉⲩⲍⲏⲧ ⲙ̄ⲡⲓⲙⲁ ⲉⲧⲙⲙⲁⲩ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲉⲣⲟⲩ (Ch. 198)
10. ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲱⲁⲭⲉ ⲕⲁⲛ ⲛ̄ϯⲟⲩⲉⲱⲭⲟⲟⲩ ⲁⲛ ϯⲛⲁⲭⲟⲟⲩ (Ch. 68)
11. ⲉⲱⲭⲉⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲥⲟⲩⲱⲛⲧ̄ ⲱⲁⲡⲟⲟⲩ ⲁⲓⲥⲟⲩⲱⲛⲉ ⲁⲛⲟⲕ (III 21)
12. ⲉⲱⲭⲉⲍⲁⲍ ⲛⲉ ⲛ̄ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛ̄ⲣⲉⲩⲫⲓⲯⲩⲭⲏ ⲛ̄ⲱⲏⲣⲉ ⲍⲓⲱⲉⲉⲣⲉ ⲍⲓⲥⲟⲛ ⲍⲓⲥⲱⲛⲉ ⲛⲁⲱⲱⲟⲩ ⲟⲛ ⲛ̄ⲃⲓⲛⲉⲧⲣⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲉⲱⲏⲣⲉ ⲍⲓⲱⲉⲉⲣⲉ ⲍⲓⲥⲱⲛⲉ (IV 21)

UNIT (IV): THE INFINITIVE OUTSIDE CONJUGATION
(sections 49-51)

49 The infinitive as noun phrase: determination

50 The infinitive as nexus constituent: actor of a conjugation form, rheme or theme in a Nominal Sentence, topic, focus of a Cleft Sentence

51 The infinitive as object (governed) or complement of a verb

49 THE INFINITIVE AS NOUN PHRASE: DETERMINATION

In addition to the position following all determinators (1.1), the infinitive occurs adverbally after ϵ-, ⲛ̄- (as object or complement, 50) and adnominally, after ⲛ̄- (attributively, 1.2). It is negatived as ⲧⲙ̄- + infinitive.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STERN parr. 456-460, 467-468; STEINDORFF par. 223; TILL par. 348; LAMBDIN par. 13.3; POLOTSKY, "Conjugation System", par. 7

1. ⲡⲉϵ ... ϵⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲛ̄ⲧⲉϩⲓⲙ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡⲟⲩⲱⲱϥ̄ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲃϵ (IV 176)
2. ⲡⲕⲁ̄ⲭ-ⲡⲁⲧ (IV 67)
3. ⲡⲧⲙ̄†ⲃⲱⲛⲧ̄ (A II 233)
4. ⲡⲥⲱ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲉⲩⲙⲁⲧⲓⲕⲟⲛ ⲁⲛⲟⲡϥ̄ ⲉⲩⲥⲱ ⲛ̄ⲥⲱⲙⲁⲧⲓⲕⲟⲛ (IV 86)
5. ⲧⲁⲫⲟⲣⲙⲏ ⲙ̄ⲡ† ⲉⲙⲏⲥⲉ (III 65)
6. ⲡⲁⲱⲁⲓ ⲙ̄ⲡⲣⲱⲕϩ̄ ϩⲛ̄ⲟⲩϩⲕⲟ ⲙⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲉⲓⲃⲉ ϩⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲭⲓⲟⲩⲉ ⲙⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲧⲱⲣⲡ̄ (IV 57)
7. ϩⲉⲛⲙⲉⲗⲉⲧⲁ ⲉⲛⲁⲱⲱⲟⲩ ⲡⲙⲟⲕⲙⲉⲕ ⲉⲧⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩϥ (Wess. 9 172)
8. ϩⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲧⲁⲕⲟ ⲧⲛ̄ⲛⲁⲧⲁⲕⲟ (III 183)
9. ϩⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲭⲡⲓⲟ ⲙⲁⲣⲛ̄ⲭⲡⲓⲟ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲛⲉⲣⲏⲩ (P 130.4 110 552)
10. ⲡⲛⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ⲧⲱⲟⲩⲛ ϩⲛⲟ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲱⲙ ⲡⲙⲁ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲱⲙ ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲧⲙⲓⲛⲉ ⲧⲙⲓⲛⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲱⲱⲛⲉ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲩⲱⲱⲛⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲱⲱ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲛⲉⲓⲟⲧⲉ (IV 53-56)
11. ϩⲉⲛⲧⲟⲡⲟⲥ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲉ ⲛ̄ⲥⲱⲃⲉ ϩⲓⲣ̄ϩⲉⲛϩⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲛ̄ⲥⲱⲃⲉ ϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧⲟⲩ ϩⲓⲥⲕⲟⲡⲧⲉⲓ ϩⲓⲱⲁⲭⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲥⲟⲃ (III 213)
12. ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲡⲛⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ⲕⲁⲡⲭⲟⲓ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲉⲣ̄ϩⲱⲧ ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲡⲛⲁⲩ ⲟⲛ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲛⲉ ⲉⲧⲉⲙⲡⲱ (IV 174)
13. ⲉⲝⲟⲩⲥⲓⲁ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲱⲙ ϩⲓⲥⲱ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲣ̄ϩⲱⲃ (III 94)

[OBS. Note that the negatived infinitive is not coordinated like a zero-article noun, by ϩι- (section 2.1); consider also the difference in determination evident in text 20 between the "affirmative" and negatived infinitives]

14. ⲡⲟⲩⲱⲱ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲩϩⲓⲧ ⲙⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲩⲙ̄ⲧⲟⲛ ⲙ̄ⲙⲓⲛ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ (A I 23)
15. ⲉⲡⲟⲩⲱⲛϩ̄ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ (Ch. 114)
16. ⲉⲕⲉⲙⲁϩⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲡⲱⲛϩ̄ ⲉⲕⲉⲙⲁϩⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲗⲁⲟⲥ ⲉⲡⲱⲛϩ̄ (III 218)
17. ⲉⲕⲛⲁϩⲁⲣⲉϩ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲛ̄ ⲱⲧⲟⲣⲧⲣ̄ ⲛⲓⲙ (218)
18. ⲁⲩⲱⲱⲡⲉ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲉϥⲟⲩⲉϩⲥⲁϩⲛⲉ (A I 32)
19. ⲧⲉⲭⲣⲉⲓⲁ ⲉⲭⲛⲉⲣⲱⲙⲉ (IV 20)
20. ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲥ ⲉϩⲱ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲓϩⲉ (A I 55)
21. ⲱ ⲡⲓⲧⲱⲙ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧ (A I 201)
22. ⲉⲧⲃⲉ̀ⲟⲩⲱⲙ ϩⲓⲥⲱ (A I 205)
    [OBS. The coordination by ϩι- proves this to be true zero determination]
23. ⲡⲥⲁϩⲟⲩ ⲏ ⲡⲱⲓⲡⲉ ⲏ ⲡⲧⲱⲱⲃⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲓⲛⲟⲃ ⲛ̄ⲛⲟⲃⲉ (A I 118)
24. ⲡⲛⲁⲩ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲉⲡϩⲟ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲁⲅⲅⲉⲗⲟⲥ ϩⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲣⲁⲱⲉ (A I 165)
    [OBS. ⲡⲛⲁⲩ ... ⲉ- note that the substantivation of the infinitive by determination does not affect its rection]
25. ⲟⲩⲗⲟⲅⲟⲥ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲃⲱⲕ ⲉⲧⲉⲕⲕⲗⲏⲥⲓⲁ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲱ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛ̄ϩⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲓⲙ ϩⲛ̄ⲑⲟⲧⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ (A I 197)
    {NB: this is a homily superscription or title}
26. ⲣ̄ϩⲟⲧⲉ ⲅⲁⲣ ϩⲏⲧⲟ̄ ⲙ̄ⲡⲣⲓ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲩⲃⲓⲭ (Z 462)
27. ⲥⲟⲛ ⲙⲉⲛ ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲱⲓⲛⲉ ⲧⲁⲣⲛ̄ⲃⲓⲛⲉ· ⲛ̄ⲑⲉ ⲉⲧⲥⲏϩ ⲥⲟⲛ ⲇⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲡⲧⲙ̄ⲱⲓⲛⲉ ⲛ̄ϩⲟⲩⲟ ⲉⲱⲓⲛⲉ (A I 37)

50 THE INFINITIVE AS NEXUS CONSTITUENT: ACTOR or THEME OF A CONJUGATION FORM, THEME or RHEME OF A NOMINAL SENTENCE, FOCUS OF A CLEFT SENTENCE, TOPIC

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STERN par. 453; TILL parr. 336-337; VERGOTE par. 185(4); SHISHA-HALEVY, "Patterns"

1. ⲛⲁ̀ⲛⲟⲩⲃⲱⲕ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲭⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲧⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲫⲭⲟⲥⲉ ... ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲉⲓ ⲟⲛ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ϩⲓⲭⲱϥ ϩⲉ ⲇⲉ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲓⲭⲱϥ ⲛ̄ⲅⲟⲩⲱⲱϥ ⲧⲏⲣ̄ⲕ̄ ⲡⲉⲧϩⲟⲟⲩ (IV 175)
2. ⲉⲱⲭⲉⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲡⲱⲓⲡⲉ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲉⲱⲓⲡⲉ ϩⲙⲧⲟ̄ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲫⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲱⲓⲡⲉ ⲁⲛ ϩⲙⲧⲟ̄ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛ̄ⲁⲕⲁⲑⲁⲣⲧⲟⲥ (Wess. 9 98)

3. ⲁⲡⲱⲓⲡⲉ ϩⲱⲃⲥ̄ ⲉⲭⲙ̄ⲡⲁϩⲟ (III 213)
4. ⲡⲣ̄ⲡⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛⲁⲁⲙⲁϩⲧⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲙ̄ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲣⲛⲟⲃⲉ (III 16)
5. ⲡⲉⲙⲕⲁϩ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧ ⲙ̄ⲡⲧⲁⲕⲟ ⲙⲛ̄ⲡⲱⲱⲗ ⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲁⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ⲑⲓⲛ̄ⲭⲁⲭⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲕⲕⲗⲏⲥⲓⲁ ⲣⲱⲱⲉ ⲉⲕⲟⲗⲁϩⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡϩⲏⲧ ⲛ̄ⲛ̄ⲥⲁⲃⲉⲉⲩ (A I 59)
6. ⲟⲩ ⲉⲣⲟⲓ ⲡⲉ ⲭⲉ-ⲟⲩϩⲱⲃ ⲉⲓⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲩ ⲁⲛ (Wess. 9 171)
   {NB: ⲭⲉ- construct (prenominal) state of ⲭⲱ}
7. ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲓ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲛⲟⲓ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲅⲣⲁⲫⲏ ⲕⲁⲗⲱⲥ (IV 157)
   {NB: ⲛⲟⲓ = ⲛⲟⲉⲓ}
8. ⲧⲕⲟⲓⲛⲱⲛⲓⲁ ⲉⲧⲭⲏⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲡⲉ ⲱⲱⲡⲉ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲓⲱⲱⲱ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲱⲧ (IV 172)
9. ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲡⲉⲩⲟⲩⲱⲱ ⲡⲉ ⲥⲱⲟⲩϩ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲛ̄ϩⲉⲛⲭⲣⲏⲙⲁ ϩⲓⲭⲙ̄ⲡⲕⲁϩ (Ch. 86)
10. ⲧⲉⲫⲩⲥⲓⲥ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲥⲟⲟⲩ ⲡⲉ ⲟⲩⲁϩⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲥⲁⲡⲱⲱⲥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲧⲉⲩⲫⲩⲥⲓⲥ ⲁⲛ ⲧⲉ ⲉⲟⲩⲁϩⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲥⲁⲡⲟⲩⲱⲛⲱ̄ (Ch. 56)
11. ⲙ̄ⲡⲭⲱⲕ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲙⲟⲥ ⲡⲉ ⲧⲙ̄ϩⲱⲧⲃ̄ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲡⲭⲱⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲙⲟⲥ ⲡⲉ ⲧⲙ̄ⲁϩⲉⲣⲁⲧ̄ⲕ̄ ⲟⲩⲃⲉⲡⲡⲉⲑⲟⲟⲩ (III 67)
12. ϩⲉ ⲙⲉⲛ ⲛ̄ⲥⲁⲡⲁϩⲟⲩ ⲡⲉ ⲭⲉϩⲁϩ ⲛ̄ⲥⲟⲡ ⲁⲥⲥⲁϩⲱⲥ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲩ (Ch. 122)
    {NB: ⲭⲉ- construct state of ⲭⲱ}
13. ⲟⲩⲥⲙⲟⲩ ⲙⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲥⲁϩⲟⲩ ⲟⲩⲟⲣⲅⲏ ⲙⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲛⲁ ⲛⲉⲧϩⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲥϩⲟ ⲥⲛⲁⲩ (IV 14)
14. ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲡⲛⲁⲩ ⲛ̄ⲕⲁⲡⲭⲟⲓ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲉ̄ϩⲱⲧ ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲡⲛⲁⲩ ⲟⲛ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲛⲉ ⲉⲧⲉⲙⲣⲱ ⲱⲙⲥ̄ ⲇⲉ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲉⲧϩⲟⲟⲩ (IV 174)
15. ⲉⲱⲭⲉⲱⲓⲡⲉ ⲡⲉ ⲭⲉⲛⲁⲓ ⲱⲓⲡⲉ ⲡⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲓⲉ ⲱⲓⲡⲉ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲏⲣ ⲡⲉ ⲁⲁⲩ (BM Cat. 198)
16. ⲟⲩⲙⲟⲩⲛϩⲱⲟⲩ ⲉⲫⲟⲱ ⲉⲣⲁⲱⲉ ⲡⲉ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲙⲉⲫⲃⲣⲟⲃ (Ch. 183)
17. ⲟⲩϩⲟⲧⲉ ⲡⲉ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲣⲟⲥ ⲉⲥⲧⲟⲕⲙ̄ ⲟⲩⲣⲁⲱⲉ ⲡⲉ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲣⲟⲥ ⲉⲥⲕⲧⲟ ⲙ̄ⲙⲃⲥ ⲉⲡⲉⲥⲕⲱϩ (IV 14)
18. ⲡⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡⲗⲟⲅⲟⲥ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲉⲥⲭⲱⲣ (IV 15)
19. ⲟⲩⲱⲓⲡⲉ ⲛⲁⲓ ⲡⲉ (A I 102)
20. ⲉⲃⲱⲕ ⲙⲉⲛ ⲉⲛⲧⲟⲡⲟⲥ ⲛ̄ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲣⲧⲩⲣⲟⲥ ⲉⲱⲗⲏⲗ ⲉⲱⲱ ⲉⲯⲁⲗⲗⲉⲓ ⲉⲧⲃ̄ⲃⲟⲕ ⲉⲫⲓⲧⲉⲡⲣⲟⲥⲫⲟⲣⲁ ϩⲛ̄ⲑⲟⲧⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲭⲥ̄ ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲫ ... ⲉⲭⲱ ⲇⲉ ⲉⲟⲩⲱⲙ ⲉⲥⲱ ⲉⲥⲱⲃⲉ ⲙⲁⲗⲗⲟⲛ ⲇⲉ ⲉⲡⲟⲣⲛⲉⲩⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉϩⲧⲃ̄ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲛⲧϩⲉ ⲙⲛ̄ⲛ̄ⲥⲡⲁⲧⲁⲗⲁ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛ̄ⲧⲧⲱⲛ ϩⲙ̄ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲁ-ⲑⲏⲧ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲟⲩⲁⲛⲟⲙⲓⲁ ⲧⲉ (A I 119f.)
[OBS. Note the difference between the masculine resumption in ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲫ and the feminine theme in ⲟⲩⲁⲛⲟⲙⲓⲁ ⲧⲉ resuming the feminine rheme in the "impersonal" Nominal Sentence]

51 THE INFINITIVE AS OBJECT (governed) or COMPLEMENT OF A VERB

The infinitive occurs as following a verb clause as direct object or introduced by ϵ- or ⲛ̄- (according to the individual syntax of the governing verb). When in complement (non-governed, adjunct) status, the infinitive is introduced by the preposition ϵ- (cf. "to" in "He came here to see me")

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STERN par. 454; TILL parr. 340-341; VERGOTE parr. 200, 202-204

1. ⲛⲁ̄ⲕⲱ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲛ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲣ̄ ⲛⲁⲓ (Cg. 62)
2. ⲙ̄ⲡⲁ̄ⲉⲱⲃⲙ̄ⲃⲟⲙ ⲉⲟⲩⲱⲱⲃ̄ (Ch. 62)
3. ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲟⲩⲱⲱ ⲉⲥⲁϩⲱⲩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲃⲉ (Ch. 63)
4. ⲙⲛ̄ⲃⲟⲙ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲩ ⲉⲗⲙⲁϩⲧⲉ (Ch. 63)
5. ⲛⲉⲧⲙⲟⲧⲛ̄ ⲉⲗⲁⲩ (Ch. 82)
6. ⲛⲉⲧⲛⲁⲣϩⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲉϩⲁⲣⲉϩ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲗⲁⲩ (IV 204)
7. .. ⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁⲫⲧ ⲛⲁⲛ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲫⲥⲁⲣⲝ̄ ⲉⲟⲩⲟⲙⲥ̄ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡⲉⲫⲥⲛⲟⲩ ⲉⲥⲟⲟⲩ (Ch. 83)
8. ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲕⲣⲓⲛⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲓ ⲛ̄ϩⲟⲩⲟ ⲉⲧⲙ̄ⲕⲁϩⲣⲟⲡ ⲙ̄ⲡⲟⲩⲥⲟⲛ (III 204)
9. ⲙ̄ⲡⲛ̄ⲥⲓ ⲛ̄ϩⲉⲧⲃ̄ⲣⲱⲙⲉ (Ch. 28)
10. ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲧⲣⲉⲛⲁⲣⲭⲉⲓ ⲛ̄ⲥⲱⲣ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ... (Ch. 62)
11. ⲛ̄ⲧⲙ̄ⲡⲱⲁ ⲁⲛ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲉⲣⲟⲓ ϫⲉⲡⲉⲕⲱⲛⲣⲉ ϫⲓⲛⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ (IV 132)
12. ⲫⲱⲁⲧ ⲛ̄ϩⲣⲟⲕ ⲏ ⲙ̄ⲡⲱⲧ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟ (Λ I 41)
13. ⲕⲟⲩⲉⲱ-ⲙⲓⲱⲉ (Ch. 21)
14. ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲩⲉⲱϫⲟⲟⲩ ⲁⲛ (Ch. 68)
15. ⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲣ̄ϫⲁⲓⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲱⲱⲩ (III 214)
16. ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲧⲛⲱⲥⲕ̄ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲛⲑⲓ ϩⲁⲛⲉⲛⲉⲣⲏⲩ ⲛ̄ⲑⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡⲉⲫⲭ̄ⲥ̄ ⲙ̄ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲫⲁⲅⲅⲉⲗⲟⲥ ⲉⲧⲫⲓ ϩⲁⲣⲟⲛ ϫⲓⲛⲧⲁⲣⲭⲏ ⲙ̄ⲡⲥⲱⲛⲧ̄ (Λ I 29)

THIRD PART: ASSORTED UNCLASSIFIED TEXTS

(graded according to difficulty)

THIRD PART:
ASSORTED TEXTS OF ADVANCED SYNTAX
(graded I-III according to difficulty (complexity or extent))

GRADE I

(1) ογⲛ̄ⲟγⲱⲁⲭⲉ ⲕⲁⲛ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟγⲉⲱⲭⲟⲟⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲧⲛⲁⲭⲟⲟⲩ (Ch. 68)

(2) ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲣⲱⲙⲉ ϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧⲛ̄ ⲣ̄ⲁⲛⲁⲱ ⲭⲉⲛ̄ⲧⲛⲁⲛ̄ⲕⲟⲧⲕ̄ ⲉⲃⲗⲟⲃ ⲁⲛ ⲱⲁⲛⲧⲙⲟγ (IV 82)

(3) ⲛ̄ⲥⲉⲥⲟⲟγⲛ ⲁⲛ ⲭⲉⲛⲓⲙ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲫⲉⲓ ⲉⲙⲁγ ⲏ ⲭⲉⲟγ ⲛⲉ ⲛⲉϩⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲫⲉⲓ ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲏⲧⲟγ (Mun. 101)

(4) ⲙⲛ̄ⲁⲅⲁⲡⲏ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧⲟγ ⲉϩⲟγⲛ ⲉⲟγⲁ ⲛ̄ⲟγⲱⲧ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲧⲧⲥⲃⲱ ⲛⲁγ (Wess. 9 162)

(5) ⲟγ ⲡⲉⲱⲁⲣⲉⲡⲥⲁⲉⲓⲛ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲙ̄ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉⲧⲉⲡⲗⲏⲅⲏ ϩⲓⲱⲱϥ (Wess. 9 138)

(6) ⲟγⲟⲓ ⲛⲁⲛ ⲱ ⲛⲁⲱⲏⲣⲉ ⲉⲛⲱⲁⲛⲙⲟγ ϩⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲛⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲧⲛ̄ⲙⲉⲧⲁⲛⲟⲓ (P 131.6 28 8)

(7) ογⲛ̄ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲭⲁⲭⲉ ⲉϥⲣ̄ⲛⲟⲩⲣⲉ ογⲛ̄ⲉⲓⲣⲏⲛⲏ ⲉϥⲣ̄ⲃⲟⲟⲛⲉ (III 195)
[OBS. Note the masculine resumption of the zero-article feminine antecedent]

(8) ⲟγ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲏ ⲁⲱ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲭⲓⲛⲟⲟⲛⲥ̄ ⲉⲛⲧⲁⲓⲭⲓⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ̄ ⲛ̄ⲟⲟⲛⲥ̄ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧϥ̄ ⲛ̄ⲧⲱⲧⲛ̄ ⲛ̄ⲣⲉϥⲕⲣⲙ̄ⲣⲙ̄ ⲛ̄ⲣⲉϥⲃⲛ̄ⲁⲣⲓⲕⲉ (III 144)

(9) ⲁⲡⲟγⲁ ⲙⲟγ ⲁγⲱ ⲁϥⲣ̄ⲕⲁⲕⲉ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϫⲉϥⲙⲟⲟγⲧ ⲁγⲱ ⲟγⲕⲁⲕⲉ ⲡⲉ ⲉⲁⲡⲕⲉⲟγⲁ ⲇⲉ ⲱⲛϩ̄ ⲉϥⲙⲟⲟγⲧ ⲁγⲱ ⲁϥⲣ̄ⲟγⲟⲉⲓⲛ ⲉϥⲟ ⲛ̄ⲕⲁⲕⲉ (Ch. 69)

(10) ⲛⲓⲙ ⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁϥⲧⲁⲙⲓⲉⲡⲣⲏ ⲙ̄ⲛ̄ⲡⲟⲟϩ ⲙ̄ⲛ̄ⲛ̄ⲥⲓⲟγ ⲙⲏ ⲡⲛⲟγⲧⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ (A II 407)
[OBS. The # NOUN – ⲡⲉ # Nominal Sentence "carries on" (resumes) the Cleft Sentence]

(11) ⲛⲁⲱⲉⲛⲉⲧⲛⲁ ⲉϩⲟγⲛ ⲉⲡⲏⲓ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟγⲧⲉ ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲉγϩⲏⲧ ⲥⲃⲏⲣ ⲉⲙⲉγⲡⲣⲟⲥⲉⲭⲉ ⲛ̄ⲟγⲉϩⲥⲁϩⲛⲉ ⲉⲧⲟγϩⲱⲛ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟγ ⲉⲧⲟⲟⲧⲟγ (IV 38)

(12) ⲡϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲥⲟⲟγⲛ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲛⲟγϥ ⲛⲉ ⲛ̄ⲟγⲟⲉⲓⲱ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲁγⲱ ⲙ̄ⲙⲏⲛⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲏⲛⲉ (E 85)

(13) ⲛⲉⲛⲧⲟⲗⲏ ⲙⲡⲛⲟγⲧⲉ ⲛⲁⲓ ⲉⲛⲉγϩⲟⲗⲃ̄ ⲛ̄ⲛⲁϩⲣⲁγ ⲉϩⲟγⲉⲡⲉⲃⲓⲱ ϩⲁⲑⲏ ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲧϥ̄ⲣ̄ⲕⲁⲕⲉ ⲉⲣⲟⲟγ ⲛ̄ⲃⲓⲡⲉγϩⲏⲧ ⲛ̄ⲁⲧⲥⲃⲱ ⲧⲉⲛⲟγ ⲇⲉ ϩⲱⲱϥ ⲁγⲥⲓⲱⲉ ⲛ̄ⲛⲁϩⲣⲁγ (E 84)

(14) ϭγετamon ϩnoγmn̄tme επεntaγnaγ epoq xekac eγεψωπε ϭγcmamaat ϩn̄neγϩbhγε thpoγ aγω n̄ceei ezpai exωoγ n̄6inecmoγ thpoγ etchϩ (III 158)

(15) n̄θε rap m̄πετεm̄πq̄†πεx̄c ϩiωωq enez tai te θε m̄πετxω m̄moc xeqϩiωωτ enq̄ϩiωωq an (A I 395)

(16) πετnaϩapeϩ ezenkoγi nq̄ψωπε eqenϩot epooγ ψaγ†ϩennoб etoot q̄ n̄cetanϩoγt q̄ epooγ (IV 113)

(17) ψωπε n̄tok m̄πistos ekoγaab aγω ekψanbωk ϩaϩthq knanaγ epeooγ m̄πnoγte (IV 189)

(18) neto n̄ψorp̄ aγr̄ϩae etbetmn̄tatcωtm̄ neto n̄ϩae aγr̄ψorp̄ etbetmn̄tcm̄mnt (P 130.2 69 181)

(19) mooψe nhtn̄ ebol n̄tok aγω nentakxoos epooγ xecetb̄bhγ ezenatψaγ ne (E 67)

(20) ϩaϩ rap n̄cop ψarepбepnб wrb̄ ezoγn n̄netq̄meeγe epooγ ebopoγ aγω nq̄πωt ezrai exωoγ ϩn̄teqбom nq̄taϩooγ (III 78)

(21) mn mn̄rωme erψanpeqϩm̄ϩal r̄bl̄le n ntekeϩωb eqo n̄бaie ψωπε m̄moq meqkaaq eei m̄πeqm̄to ebol (Ch. 131)

(22) mn̄rωmenaeimeepetϩm̄πϩnt (Wess. 9 171)

(23) oγπetk̄naaaq (Ch. 24)

(24) aγnaγeboln̄бin̄bl̄leaγr̄bl̄len̄бinetnaγebol (RE II 17)

(25) aqein̄бioγoeiψaγωaγxpoiqnhγn̄бioγoγoeiψaγω†namoγ (A II 449)

(26) aqcoγωnq̄xepxoeicπe (Ch. 69)

(27) eiψanmoγϩωbnimetetn̄oγaψoγaaγ (IV 113)

GRADE II

(1) tn̄ψp̄ϩmot n̄tootoγ n̄necnhγ etψp̄ϩice nm̄man nai etcωtm̄ n̄capenψaxe ϩn̄ϩωb nim eteoγn̄бom m̄mooγ eaaq aγω netm̄ton n̄ϩht nan ϩrai ϩn̄ϩγpotagh nim ég̈r̄ϩωb epeγoγxai ϩn̄oγϩote mn̄oγctωt (IV 115f.)

(2) n̄nen†ψipe nhtn̄ n̄nai alla en†cbw nhtn̄ ϩωccon m̄meρit xekac n̄neγtбaion mn̄pkosmos aγω xekac enēr̄bol epψaxe m̄πepprofhtnc xeeiϩhhte †nabine ex̄m̄peilaos n̄ϩenpeθooγ aγω ex̄m̄pkarpos n̄teγmn̄tatcωtm̄ (IV 117)

(3) anerht n̄ϩaϩ n̄cop er̄pagaθon m̄penaaq katapempψa m̄πenbios m̄pn̄erht er̄nobe aγω anxekϩaϩ m̄peθooγ ebol tn̄caϩoγ men m̄pcatanac tn̄eipe de n̄netq̄oγa-

ϣογ τ̄ncmoy ⲁϵ ϩωωϥ ϵⲡⲛoγτϵ ϩ̄ⲙ̄ⲡⲗⲁc ⲁγω τ̄nϵιρϵ n̄nϵτϥ̄moctϵ m̄mooγ (E 95)

(4) mn̄ρωmϵ ϵoγn̄τc̄nϵcϩioooγϵ n̄bωk ϵϩoγn ϣⲁρooγ xϵcϵcoⲃτϵ nⲁc n̄ϩϵnmⲁ n̄ϣωⲡϵ ϩ̄ⲙ̄ⲡϵγhϵi nⲁρ̀ⲃρωϩ (IV 17)

(5) ϩϵnⲃⲁρⲃⲁρoc ϩϵncoonϵ ϩϵnmⲁtoi ϩϵnρ̄mmⲁo ϩϵnⲡιρⲁcmoc ϵnⲁϣωoγ ⲁⲡⲛoγτϵ nⲁϩmϵ ϵρooγ n̄oγmiнϣϵ ncoⲡ ϩmⲡτρϵϥⲁⲁτϵ nmⲡϣⲁ mⲡϵibioc tϵnoγ ϵtϵnϩητϥ ⲁγω ⲁϥcmoγ ϵρo ϵtm̄τρϵϣωωτ m̄ⲡoϵik ϩiϩoiτϵ ϩiⲗⲗⲁγ n̄n̄ka ϵⲡτнρϥ̄ n̄tϵⲡkⲁϩ ϩitn̄tⲁikⲁiocγnн n̄noγϵioτϵ ϵtoγⲁⲁⲃ (III 205)

(6) oγρωmϵ ⲡϵteoγn̄tⲁϥ m̄mⲁγ n̄ϣнρϵ cnⲁγ ⲁϥϣωωτ m̄ⲡmⲁcϵ ϵtcⲁnⲁϣt̄ poγⲁ mϵn ⲁϥt nⲁϥ n̄ϥtooγ m̄mϵroc ⲡkϵoγⲁ ⲁϥt nⲁϥ n̄oγmϵroc n̄oγωt nim n̄ϩntoγ ⲡϵtc̄ϵ-ρoϥ ϵr̄ⲡϩωⲃ m̄ⲡϵϥϵiωt (Ch. 103)

(7) n̄tok ϵtωϣ n̄tok ϵtcωtm̄ ϵρϵnϵkρm̄ϵiooγϵ cωk ϵxn̄-nϵkoγoⲃϵ ϵtⲃϵnϵntⲁγxooγ tнroγ ϵϩoγn ϵroϥ n̄ⲃi-nϵntⲁtkⲁkiⲁ twm n̄nϵγⲃⲁⲗ mn̄ⲡϵγϩнt ⲁγcoⲛϩϥ̄ гⲁр n̄ⲑϵ n̄oγⲗнcτнc ϵtⲃннτk̄ xϵkⲁc ϩωωk ϵγϣⲁnmork̄ ϵtⲃннτϥ̄ n̄nϵkcкⲁndⲁⲗizϵ (III 104)

(8) m̄ⲡϵϥxooc xϵ†nⲁtⲁmio ⲁnok xϵkⲁc ϵnnϵϥr̄ⲡϣнρϵ n̄ⲗⲗotριoc ϵtmn̄trϵϥtⲁmio oγⲇϵ m̄ⲡϵϥxooc xϵtⲁmio n̄tok xϵkⲁc ϵnnϵϥⲁⲁϥ m̄min m̄moϥ n̄ϣm̄mo ϵⲡϩωⲃ ϵnϣⲁn-noϵi xϵⲡϣнρϵ r̄ϩωⲃ mn̄ⲡϵϥϵiωt ϵⲡρωmϵ tn̄nⲁϵimϵ on xϵϥr̄ϩωⲃ nm̄mⲁϥ ϵtⲡϵ mn̄ⲡkⲁϩ ⲁγω ⲡρн mn̄ⲡooϩ mn̄n̄cioγ mn̄ⲑⲁⲗⲁccⲁ ⲁγω ⲁmⲡnoγϵ n̄m̄ⲡнγϵ mn̄nϵtn̄ϩητoγ tнroγ (Cat. 42)

{NB: ⲁ- in ⲁmⲡnoγϵ — Akhmimicism for the standard Sahidic ϵ- (preposition)}

(9) ϵρϵϣtⲁm ϵρo m̄ⲡρo n̄m̄ⲡнγϵ n̄xnⲁϩ mn̄n̄cⲁtρϵγoγωn m̄moϥ nϵ n̄kϵcoⲡ ϵϥϣotm̄ ϵρo ϵtⲃϵn̄noⲃϵ n̄toγmn̄tko-cmikon ⲁγω ϵρϵoγωn nϵ m̄ⲡρo nⲁmn̄tϵ n̄xnⲁϩ mn̄n̄cⲁ-tρϵγϣotmϵϥ ϵρo n̄kϵcoⲡ ϵtⲃϵϩϵnkoγi m̄ⲡϵtnⲁnoγoγ ϵⲗⲁⲁγ ϩm̄ⲡtρϵρmonⲁxoc ϵⲁxooρoγ ϵⲃoⲗ tϵnoγ ϩn̄-noγϩⲃнγϵ ϵⲑooγ (III 206)

(10) n̄ⲑϵ гⲁр ϵtϵϣⲁγϣooγϵ n̄cϵϣωⲡϵ n̄ⲁtkⲁρⲡoc n̄ⲑiϩϵn-ϣнn ϵγρнt ϩn̄oγxⲁiϵ ϵmmn̄mooγ n̄ϩntϥ̄ tⲁi on tϵ ⲑϵ ϵtϵϣⲁγϣooγϵ n̄cϵϣωⲡϵ n̄ⲁtkⲁρⲡoc n̄nⲁϩr̄m̄ⲡnoγtϵ n̄ⲑiϩϵnρωmϵ n̄ⲁtcωtm̄ ϵγkω n̄ϩtнγ ϵrooγ mⲁγⲁⲁγ ϩntϵγmn̄tcⲁⲃϵ m̄min m̄mooγ (III 176)

(11) ⲡxⲁxϵ borⲃ ϵⲡρωmϵ n̄ϵγkρⲁtнc ϵϥcooγn xϵϵϥϣⲁnⲁ-

ⲡⲁⲧⲁ ⲙⲙⲟⲩ ⲉⲟⲩⲱⲙ ⲏ ⲉⲥⲱ ϩⲛⲟⲩⲕⲣⲟⲩ ⲙⲛⲟⲩⲙⲛⲧⲥⲁⲛⲕⲟⲧⲥ ⲙⲛϩⲉⲛⲃⲟⲗ ⲟⲩⲙⲟⲛⲟⲛ ϫⲉⲫⲛⲁϫⲣⲟ ⲉⲣⲟⲩ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲫⲛⲁⲙⲟⲟⲩⲧⲫ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩϩⲣⲉ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲥ ⲁⲛ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲧⲉⲡⲗⲁⲛⲏ ⲙⲡϩⲏⲧ (IV 166)

(12) ⲉⲓⲟⲩⲉⲱⲟⲩ ⲛⲧⲟⲧⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ ⲛⲥⲁⲧⲣⲉⲧⲛⲧϩⲏⲩ ⲙⲙⲱⲧⲛ ⲏ ⲉⲓⲱⲓⲛⲉ ⲛⲥⲁⲟⲩ ⲛⲥⲁⲧⲣⲉⲡϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲥⲙⲟⲩ ⲉⲣⲱⲧⲛ ⲙⲛⲛⲉⲧⲛ-ⲱⲛⲣⲉ ⲙⲛⲡⲉⲧⲛⲛⲓ ⲧⲏⲣⲫ (A I 207)

(13) ⲥⲱⲧⲙ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲙⲁⲣⲉⲛⲣϩⲟⲧⲉ ϩⲛⲧⲫ ⲙⲡⲉⲧⲙⲟⲩϩ ⲛⲧⲡⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲧⲙⲟⲩϩ ⲙⲡⲕⲁϩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲧⲣϩⲟⲩⲉⲙⲟⲩϩ ⲙⲡⲉⲫⲏⲓ ⲧⲁⲣⲛⲉⲓⲙⲉ ⲁⲛⲟⲛ ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉⲡⲉⲩϫⲏⲧ ⲧⲏⲙ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ϫⲉⲛⲣⲟⲟⲩⲱ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲛⲉⲧⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲛⲉⲓⲛⲟⲃ ⲙⲙⲟⲓϩⲉ ⲛⲧⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲡⲉ ⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲉⲛⲉϩⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲙⲡⲕⲁϩ (A I 234)

(14) ⲫⲁⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉⲩⲱⲏ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲟⲛϩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϫⲉⲧⲛⲙⲧⲟⲛ ⲙⲙⲟⲛ ⲛϩⲏⲧⲥ ⲫⲥⲟⲧⲡ ⲁⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲛⲃⲓⲡⲉϩⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϫⲉϩⲙⲡⲧⲣⲉⲫⲱⲁ ⲛⲃⲓⲡⲣⲏ ⲱⲁⲩⲥⲱⲟⲩϩ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲛⲃⲓⲛⲉⲑⲏⲣⲓⲟⲛ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲛⲧⲥⲱⲱⲉ ⲛⲥⲉⲛ-ⲕⲟⲧⲕ ϩⲛⲛⲉⲩⲃⲏⲃ ⲛⲧⲉⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲓ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲉⲡⲉⲫϩⲱⲃ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲧⲉⲫ-ⲉⲣⲅⲁⲥⲓⲁ ⲱⲁⲡⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲣⲟⲩϩⲉ (IV 176)

(15) ⲟⲩ ⲡⲉⲧⲕⲉⲡⲓⲑⲩⲙⲉⲓ ⲉⲣⲟⲫ ⲛⲧⲛⲟⲩⲱⲙⲙⲱ ⲉⲙⲛⲧⲁⲕⲫ ⲛⲧⲛⲧⲉ-ⲧⲉⲧⲱⲕ ⲧⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲧⲟ ϩⲱⲱⲧⲉ ⲱ ⲧⲉⲥϩⲓⲙⲉ ⲟⲩ ⲡⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉⲱⲓⲛⲉ ⲛⲥⲱϥ ⲛⲧⲛⲟⲩⲱⲙⲙⲟ ⲉⲛϥⲱⲟⲟⲡ ⲛⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲧⲙⲡⲉⲧⲉⲡⲱ ⲡⲉ (Or. 157f.)

(16) ⲁⲛⲁⲩ ⲭⲉϩⲛϩⲁϩ ⲙⲙⲁ ϩⲛⲛⲉⲅⲣⲁⲫⲏ ⲁⲩϩⲱⲛ ⲉⲧⲟⲟⲧⲛ ⲉⲧⲙ-ⲧⲣⲉⲛⲱⲣⲕ ⲛⲗⲗⲁⲩ ⲛⲁⲛⲁⲱ ⲉⲓⲙⲏⲧⲓ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲡⲉⲛⲱⲱⲁⲭⲉ ⲱⲱⲡⲉ ⲙⲙⲁⲧⲉ ⲛⲥⲉ ⲥⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲙⲙⲟⲛ ⲙⲙⲟⲛ (III 182f.)

(17) ⲁⲛⲟⲕ ⲧⲟⲩⲱⲱ ϩⲙⲡⲁϩⲏⲧ ⲧⲏⲣⲫ ⲁⲩⲱ ϩⲛⲧⲁⲃⲟⲙ ⲧⲏⲣⲥ ⲉⲧ-ⲣⲉⲧⲛⲱⲱⲡⲉ ⲧⲏⲣⲧⲛ ⲉⲧⲉⲧⲛⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲙⲡϩⲁⲡ ⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲉⲧⲫⲛⲁⲕⲣⲓⲛⲉ ⲛϩⲏⲧⲫ ⲛⲛⲣⲉⲫⲣⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲛⲧⲟⲓⲕⲟⲩⲙⲉⲛⲏ·ⲧⲏⲣⲥ (III 140)

(18) ⲙⲏ ⲙⲙⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲱⲁⲫⲡⲱⲣⲭ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲙⲡⲉⲫⲱⲃⲏⲣ ⲉⲃⲟⲟⲩ ϩⲙⲡⲧⲣⲉⲫⲇⲟⲕⲓⲙⲁϩⲉ ⲙⲙⲟⲫ ⲛⲫⲣⲱⲃⲏⲣ ⲉⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲧⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲫ (P 131.5 128 vo)

(19) ⲛⲁⲙⲉ ⲛⲑⲉ ⲉⲧⲉⲟⲩⲛϩⲁϩ ⲛϩⲟⲟⲩⲧ ⲉⲱⲁⲩⲱⲱⲡⲉ ⲛⲭⲱⲱⲣⲉ ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲕⲁⲓⲣⲟⲥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲛⲁⲱⲉⲛⲉϩⲓⲟⲙⲉ ⲉⲧⲣⲃⲱⲃ ⲟⲩⲛϩⲁϩ ⲟⲛ ⲛⲥϩⲓⲙⲉ ⲉⲱⲁⲩⲣⲭⲱⲱⲣⲉ ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲕⲁⲓⲣⲟⲥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲥⲉⲭⲣⲟ ⲛⲁ-ⲱⲉⲛϩⲟⲟⲩⲧ ⲟⲛ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲭⲣⲟ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲧⲟ ⲛⲃⲱⲃ (IV 38f.)

(20) ⲛⲧⲟⲕⲡⲉⲧⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛⲡⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉⲡⲉⲓⲱⲧⲛⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲡⲉⲕⲱⲏⲣⲉⲉⲧⲟⲩⲁⲁ-ⲃⲭⲟⲟⲩ (Wess. 9 180)

(21) ⲙⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉⲛⲁⲉⲓⲙⲉⲉⲡⲉⲧϩⲙⲡϩⲏⲧ (Wess. 9 171)

(22) ⲟⲩⲟⲛⲛⲓⲙϩⲣⲁⲓⲛϩⲏⲧⲛⲉⲩⲣⲛⲟⲃⲉⲏⲉⲩⲛⲁⲣⲛⲟⲃⲉϩⲛⲟⲩϩⲱⲡϩⲁϩⲧⲏⲛ-ⲏϩⲁϩⲧⲛⲛⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛⲛⲛⲧⲱⲧⲛⲁⲩⲱⲛⲥⲉⲧⲙⲭⲉⲡⲡⲟⲃⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲁⲁϥ ⲉⲩⲉⲉⲓ-ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓⲉⲭⲱⲟⲩⲛⲃⲓⲛⲉⲓⲥⲁϩⲟⲩⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ (IV 120)

(23) ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲡⲥⲟⲃⲧⲉⲫⲕⲱⲧⲉⲉⲧⲡⲟⲗⲉⲓⲥⲁⲗⲗⲁⲉⲩⲧⲙ̄ⲡⲣⲟⲉⲓⲥϩⲓⲭⲱϥⲥ-
ⲉⲛⲁⲭⲓⲧⲥ̄ⲛ̄ⲃⲓⲛ̄ⲃⲁⲣⲃⲁⲣⲟⲥⲛ̄ⲑⲉⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲧⲉⲙⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲟⲛⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲥ· ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲙ-
ⲉϩⲃⲏⲩⲉⲙ̄ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉⲛⲁϥⲉⲧⲱⲡ̄ϩⲓⲥⲉⲁⲗⲗⲁⲉϥⲧⲙ̄ⲡⲣⲟⲉⲓⲥⲙⲛ̄ⲛⲉ
ϩⲃⲏⲩⲉⲡⲛⲟⲃⲉⲛⲁⲱⲟⲗϥ̄ (IV 24)
[OBS. ⲉⲩⲧⲙ̄-, ⲉϥⲧⲙ̄- are variant forms of the negatived conditional, for the usual ⲉⲩⲱⲁⲛⲧⲙ̄-, ⲉϥⲱⲁⲛⲧⲙ̄-]

GRADE III

(1) ⲕⲁⲗⲱⲥ ⲃⲉ ⲉⲩⲟⲩⲉⲱⲡⲁϥⲉⲛⲉⲃⲓⲱ ⲥⲉ† ⲅⲁⲣ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉϥϩⲓⲥⲉ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲣ
ⲣⲱⲟⲩ ⲙⲛ̄ⲛ̄ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲕⲁⲗⲱⲥ ⲁⲉ ⲉⲩⲙⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲭⲣⲓⲥⲧⲓⲁⲛⲟⲥ ϥⲉⲩⲫ-
ⲣⲁⲛⲉ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲙⲛ̄ⲡⲉϥⲭ̄ⲥ̄ ϩⲛ̄ⲛⲉϥϩⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟ-
ⲥⲩⲛⲏ ⲕⲁⲗⲱⲥ ⲉⲩϥⲓⲣⲟⲟⲩⲱ ϩⲁⲡⲁϥⲉⲛⲉⲃⲓⲱ ϩⲓⲧⲛ̄ⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ
ⲉⲩⲣⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲉⲩⲙⲟⲩⲟⲩⲧ̄ ⲛ̄ⲛ̄ⲕⲉϩⲱⲟⲛ ⲉⲧ†ⲟⲩⲃⲏϥ ⲕⲁⲗⲱⲥ ⲉⲩϥⲓ-
ⲣⲟⲟⲩⲱ ϩⲁⲡⲉⲭⲣⲓⲥⲧⲓⲁⲛⲟⲥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲩⲣⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲉⲣⲟϥ ϩⲓⲧⲛ̄ⲛⲁⲅⲅⲉ-
ⲗⲟⲥ (III 46)

(2) ⲙⲏ ⲉⲛⲉⲥⲱ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟ ⲉⲧⲁⲓ ⲉⲛⲧⲁⲥⲣ̄ⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲙⲧⲟ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ
ⲉⲁϥⲕⲧⲟϥ ⲁϥϥⲓ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲟⲧⲥ̄ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲥⲟⲩⲟ ⲙⲛ̄ⲡⲉⲥⲥⲛⲉϩ ⲙⲛ̄ⲡⲉⲥⲏⲣⲡ̄
ⲙⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲥϩⲟⲓⲧⲉ ⲙⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲥϩⲃⲱⲱⲥ ⲉⲁϥⲧⲁϩⲟⲥ ⲉⲣⲁⲧⲥ̄ ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲛⲉϩⲟⲟⲩ
ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲥⲙⲓⲥⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲛⲉϩⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲛⲧⲁⲥⲉⲓ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲛϩⲏⲧⲟⲩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ
ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲕⲁϩ ⲛ̄ⲕⲏⲙⲉ (P 130.2 6 87)

(3) ⲟⲩⲃⲁⲗ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲙ̄ⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲥ ⲉϥⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲥⲱⲙⲁ ⲙ̄ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛ̄ⲕⲁⲕⲉ
ⲡⲉ ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧ ⲉϥⲓ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲧⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ ϩⲓⲧⲉⲧⲣⲁⲡⲉϩⲁ ⲉⲧⲣⲉϥⲟⲩⲟⲙϥ̄
ⲛϥ̄ⲕⲱ ⲇⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲧⲃⲟϧⲃ̄ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲧϩⲓⲧⲟⲩⲱϥ (IV 88)

(4) ⲉϥⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲛ̄ⲃⲓⲙⲱⲩⲥⲛⲥ ϧⲉⲙ̄ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲁⲣϩⲛⲁϥ ⲁⲛ ⲉ† ⲙ̄ⲡⲉ-
ⲧⲉⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲁϥ ⲁϥⲃⲱⲣⲃ̄ ⲉⲣⲟϥ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲓϩⲉ ⲉϥⲡⲉⲓⲃⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟϥ ⲉⲧⲣⲉϥ†
ⲙ̄ⲡϩⲛⲕⲉ ϧⲉⲛ̄ⲛⲉϥⲙⲟⲩ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲧⲣⲉϥⲥⲉⲕⲡⲉϥϩⲏⲧ ϩⲓⲧⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲫⲟⲣⲙⲏ
ⲙ̄ⲡ† ⲉⲙⲏⲥⲉ ϧⲉⲕⲁⲥ ⲕⲁⲛ ⲉⲱϧⲉⲛⲁ̄ⲛⲁ† ⲁⲛ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲧϩⲕⲁⲉⲓⲧ
ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲧⲉϥⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲧⲛⲁ ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲉϥⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲡⲁⲛⲑⲣⲱⲡⲟⲥ ⲙⲉⲱⲁⲕ ϥⲛⲁ†
ⲛⲁϥ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩϩⲏⲩ (III 65)

(5) ⲉⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲱⲁⲛⲧⲛ̄ⲛⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲁⲛ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲛⲉⲧ†ⲧⲱⲛ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲉϩⲣⲏⲧⲛ̄
ϩⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲩⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲧⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲏ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲃⲉⲗⲁⲁⲩ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲑⲟⲟⲩ ⲧⲛ̄ⲛⲁⲣⲱϣⲉ
ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲡⲉ ⲉⲡⲁⲓⲇⲉⲩⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲛ†ⲥⲃⲱ ⲛⲁⲩ ϩⲛ̄ⲉ-
ⲡⲓⲥⲧⲏⲙⲏ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲑⲉ ⲉⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲉⲛⲉⲧⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ ϩⲁϩ-
ⲧⲏⲛ (P 130.1 135 333)

(6) ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲡⲁⲓ ⲉϣⲭⲉϣϣⲉ ⲉⲧⲣⲁϫⲱ ⲙ̄ⲡⲓⲕⲉϣⲁϫⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲟⲩⲱϣ
ⲙⲉⲛ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ ϩⲟⲙⲱⲥ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲧⲱⲫⲉⲗⲉⲓⲁ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲧⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ †ⲛⲁϫⲟⲟϥ
ⲉⲓⲛⲟⲃⲛⲉⲃ ⲙ̄ⲡϫⲁϫⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ †ⲛⲁ†ϣⲓⲡⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲛⲁϥ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲓⲕⲉϩⲱⲃ
(Ch. 128)

(7) ⲟⲩ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲡⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉⲡϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ϫⲓⲉⲟⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧϥ̄ ⲁⲛ ⲉϥⲡⲁ-
ⲧⲁⲥⲥⲉ ϥϫⲓⲉⲟⲟⲩ ⲉϥⲧⲁⲗⲃⲟ ϥϫⲓⲉⲟⲟⲩ ⲉϥⲧⲁⲛϩⲟ ϥⲟⲩⲱⲛϩ̄

ebol ⲛ̄teqbom eqmoyoyt qoywnⲍ̄ ebol ⲛ̄teqbom qxieooy eqcwoyⲍ ezoyn ⲙ̄mecoyo etaⲡoⲑhkh qoywnⲍ̄ ebol ⲛ̄teqbom eqpwkⲍ̄ ⲙ̄ⲡtwⲍ qxieooy ⲍⲛ̄nentaqaay throy xinⲙ̄ⲡaiwn oynob te teqbom ⲍⲛ̄netⲟ̄naaay throy ⲍⲛ̄tcynteleia (Ch. 115)

(8) tw etⲡw ⲛ̄takaⲑartoc ⲛ̄cynagwgh etⲙ̄may ⲛ̄reqxioya epecr̄ro nex̄c̄ mⲛ̄tekklhcia tenoy ⲛ̄ⲛ̄ⲍeⲑnoc etcmoy eroq ayw et†eooy naq ayw etⲍomologei ⲛ̄tetriac ⲍⲛ̄oytaⲡro ⲛ̄oywt ⲍⲛ̄oyⲍht ⲛ̄oywt ⲍⲛ̄oyme (Ch. 123f.)

(9) ⲍaⲍ men ⲛ̄ⲱaxe ⲉanxooy ayw ancaⲍoy etbepexⲡo ⲙ̄ⲡcwthr ayw teqmⲛ̄tnoyte alla entanxenikekoyei etbenentaywine xeneqⲱoon empatⲟ̄ⲱⲡe ebol ⲍⲙ̄maria oyⲛ̄kemⲛ̄tmⲛ̄tre ecⲛ̄ⲍot ayw eco ⲛ̄nob epeⲍoyo xenⲡxoeic ⲡcwthr qⲱoon mⲛ̄ⲡeqeiwt ⲍaⲑh ⲛ̄naiwn· nim ⲡetxw mmoc ⲛ̄nim xemarⲛ̄tamio ⲛ̄oyrwme katatenzikwn ayw kataⲡeneine mh ⲡeiwt an ⲡetⲱaxe mⲛ̄ⲡeqⲱhre ⲡeqmonogenhc etoyaaⲃ (Cat. 42)

(10) eⲱxenitaeio ⲛ̄tiⲍe ⲱoon nnetⲍⲙ̄ⲡgamoc ⲛ̄ⲍooyt mⲛ̄neⲍiome etⲍarez epma ⲛ̄ⲛ̄kotk̄ eqtⲃ̄ⲃhy· eieoyhr ⲡe ⲡtaeio ayw oymⲛ̄txⲱⲱre ⲛ̄aⲱ ⲛ̄aeihc ne neψyxh ⲛ̄ⲛ̄rwme ero ⲙ̄ⲡarⲑenoc ayw eyoyaaⲃ ⲍⲛ̄oyme eite ⲍooyt eite cⲍime· eⲱxemⲛ̄bom ⲃe ⲙ̄mok erⲡarⲑenoc ⲱ prⲱme ⲛ̄ⲑe ⲙ̄ⲡetⲉoyⲛ̄taq ⲙ̄may ⲙ̄ⲡilⲱron· ayw ⲛ̄to ⲍⲱⲱte ⲱ tecⲍime eⲱxemⲛ̄bom ⲙ̄mo epai ⲛ̄ⲑe ⲛ̄tetr̄ⲍoyo ⲛ̄ⲍhtⲟ̄ eiekan ⲍⲱ erok etekcⲍine kan ⲍⲱ ero epoyⲍai (Or. 164f.)

(11) ⲡexaq ⲛ̄bixoccoroac ⲡkomec xepⲇiaⲃolos cⲱⲱt̄ ⲙ̄mon ayw q†broⲡ nan nⲟ̄kⲱ ⲙ̄mon an erⲛ̄ai ayw qamaⲍte ⲙ̄mon ⲍⲛ̄netenoyq ne aioyⲱⲱⲃ̄ naq xeetⲃeoy akxooc xenetenoyq ⲙ̄ⲡk̄xooc xenoyn nⲙ̄maq ne ebol xerwme nim etr̄ⲡeⲑooy eqxito mⲛ̄ⲡetⲙ̄may maaaon ⲇe oyatⲃom ⲡe etrepⲇiaⲃolos trerwme r̄nobe ⲙ̄ⲡeⲡeqoyⲱⲱ r̄ⲱorⲡ̄ epmeeye ⲙ̄ⲡⲇiaⲃolos h nⲟ̄ⲍⲱtr̄ nⲙ̄maq (Ch. 62f.)

(12) cinoyⲑioc petⲍai ⲛ̄ⲃakanoc mⲛ̄netnⲙ̄maq·ontwc aiopⲟ̄ xeoyponhron ⲡe eiⲱantⲙ̄xw nhtⲛ̄ ⲛ̄tme name †mokⲍ̄ ⲛ̄ⲍht ⲍarwtⲛ̄ epeⲍoyo·etⲃeoy h exⲛ̄oy ⲛ̄†naxooc an· tⲃinei ⲙ̄poya poya eⲍrai enⲃix ⲙ̄ⲡxoeic ⲡnoyte ⲡⲡantokratwr natreqeime xeoy petewⲱe eroq eaaq h etⲙ̄aaq eic ⲡma kh ⲛ̄torgh ⲛ̄ⲑe etchⲍ

ⲉⲱⲱⲡⲉ ϯⲛⲁⲱⲭⲓ ⲏ ⲉⲱⲭⲉⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲟⲟⲙ ⲙ̄ⲙⲱⲧⲛ̄ ⲛ̄ⲧⲱⲧⲛ̄ ⲉⲭⲓ ϩⲁⲣⲟⲥ ⲉⲓⲥ ⲡϩⲁⲡ ⲛⲏⲭ ⲉⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲛ̄ⲑⲉ ⲉⲧⲥⲏϩ (Ch. 94)

(13) ϯⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ ⲭⲉⲁⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲉⲓⲙⲉ ⲭⲉⲉⲓⲟⲩⲱⲛϩ̄ ⲙ̄ⲡⲁϩⲏⲧ ⲉⲣⲱⲧⲛ̄ ϩⲱⲥ-ⲱⲃⲏⲣ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲓⲭⲱ ⲛ̄ⲛⲁⲓ ⲉⲓⲟⲩⲱⲱ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲧⲛ̄ⲣⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲭⲉⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄-ϩⲛ̄ⲧⲙⲏⲧⲉ ⲛ̄ϩⲉⲛⲛⲟϭ ⲙ̄ⲡⲣⲁⲣⲙⲁ ⲉⲩⲟⲱ ⲉⲁϩⲁϩ ⲱⲉ ⲛ̄ϩⲁⲥⲓⲉ ⲛ̄ϩⲏ-ⲧⲟⲩ ⲉⲁⲩⲧⲟⲥⲉ ⲛ̄ⲛ̄ⲱⲁⲉⲛⲉϩ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲛⲁⲡⲣⲟⲥⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲱ· ⲟⲩ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲛⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲛ ⲡⲉⲧⲉⲙⲡⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲧⲁⲁϥ ⲛⲏⲧⲛ̄ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲁⲛⲟⲛ ⲧⲏⲣⲛ̄ ⲛ̄ⲧⲛ̄ⲱⲁⲁⲧ ⲛ̄ⲗⲁⲁⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲓⲙⲏⲧⲓ ⲉⲣ̄ⲡⲉϥⲟⲩⲱⲱ ⲉⲛⲱⲁⲛⲁⲁϥ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲉⲛⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟϥ ⲛⲁⲛ· ⲟⲩ ⲡⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲱⲓⲛⲉ ⲛ̄ⲥⲱϥ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲟⲧⲛ̄ ⲏ ⲟⲩ ⲡⲉⲧⲱⲟⲟⲡ ϫⲉⲛⲟⲩϥ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲉ ⲛⲟⲩϥ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲛⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲏⲩⲉ ⲙⲛ̄ⲡⲕⲁϩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲑⲁⲗⲁⲥⲥⲁ ⲙⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲧⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧⲟⲩ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ (Ch. 97f.)

(14) ⲛ̄ⲥⲙⲟⲧ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲉⲧⲉⲱⲁⲕⲃⲱⲕ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧⲟⲩ ⲱⲁⲛⲉⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩⲕ ⲛⲉ ⲉⲩⲣⲏⲥ ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲟⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲱⲁⲕⲉⲓ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧⲟⲩ ϩⲛ̄ϩⲉⲛⲣⲁⲥⲟⲩ ⲉϫⲛ̄ⲛⲉ-ⲧⲉⲣⲉϩⲧⲏⲩ ⲕⲏ ⲉⲓ̅ⲥ̅· ⲉⲕⲱⲁⲛⲟⲩⲟⲛϩϫ̄ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛ̄ⲑⲉ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲁⲣⲭⲉ-ⲗⲟⲥ ⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩⲕ ⲛⲉ ⲛ̄ⲥⲉⲛⲁⲡⲓⲥⲧⲉⲩⲉ ⲛⲁⲕ ⲁⲛ ⲛ̄ⲥⲉⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲁⲛ ⲛ̄ⲧⲙⲓⲛⲉ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲁⲣⲭⲉⲗⲟⲥ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲡϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲟⲩϩⲣ̄ⲃ ⲛ̄ⲇⲁⲓⲙⲱⲛ ⲡⲉⲧ-ⲟⲩⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲕ ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧⲧ̄ⲏ ⲉⲕⲱⲁⲛⲟⲩⲟⲛϩϫ̄ ⲇⲉ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲕ-ⲥⲙⲟⲧ ⲉⲛⲉⲧⲣⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲟⲩⲃⲏⲕ ⲉⲩⲣⲏⲥ ⲕⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲭⲉⲥⲉⲛⲁⲉⲓⲙⲉ ⲉⲣⲟⲕ· ⲟⲩ ⲡⲉⲧⲕ̄ⲛⲁⲁⲁϥ· ⲱⲁⲕⲭⲓϩⲣ̄ⲃ ϩⲱⲥⲁⲣⲭⲉⲗⲟⲥ ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲛ ⲛ̄ⲛⲁϩⲣⲁⲩ· ⲡⲁⲗⲓⲛ ⲟⲛ ⲥⲉⲧⲁϩⲟ ⲙⲙⲟⲕ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲓ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲙⲉⲕϩⲱⲡ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ (Ch. 23f.)

(15) ⲕⲥⲙⲁⲙⲁⲁⲧ ⲉⲕⲥⲙⲟⲩ ⲉⲕⲛⲁⲥⲙⲟⲩ ⲟⲛ ⲉⲛⲉⲕⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲛ ⲙ̄ⲙⲓⲛⲉ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲕⲧⲣⲉⲩⲱⲱⲡⲉ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ϫⲓⲛⲛ̄ⲱⲟⲣⲡ̄ ⲕⲥⲙⲁⲙⲁⲁⲧ ⲁⲕⲧⲣⲉⲡ-ⲧⲏⲣⲓ̄ ⲱⲱⲡⲉ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲧⲉⲛⲓ̄ⲱⲟⲟⲡ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲕⲕⲟⲥⲙⲉⲓ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲡⲟⲩⲁ ⲡⲟⲩⲁ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲫⲥⲁ ⲧⲡⲉ ⲙⲉⲛ ϩⲛ̄ϩⲉⲛⲣⲉⲫⲣ̄ⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲛ ⲡⲁⲛⲣ ϩⲛ̄ϩⲉⲛϩⲁⲗⲁⲁⲧⲉ ⲉⲩⲱⲱ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲩⲥⲙⲏ ϩⲙ̄ⲙⲁ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲁⲩⲱ ϩⲟⲓⲛⲉ ⲉⲩϩⲏⲗ ϩⲙ̄ⲡϫⲓⲥⲉ ϩⲉⲛⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲉⲩϩⲏⲗ ϩⲓⲡⲉⲥⲏⲧ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡⲕⲁϩ ϩⲛ̄ϩⲉⲛⲱⲓⲏⲛ ⲙ̄ⲙⲓⲛⲉ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲙⲛ̄ⲡⲉⲩⲧⲟⲩⲱ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛ̄ⲧⲃ̄-ⲛⲟⲟⲩⲉ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲩⲱⲓⲃⲉ ⲡⲟⲩⲁ ⲡⲟⲩⲁ ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲡⲉⲫⲉⲓⲛⲉ ⲙⲛ̄ⲡⲉⲫⲭⲡⲟ ⲡⲉⲧⲥⲁⲁⲛⲱ̄ ⲙ̄ⲡⲧⲏⲣⲓ̄ ϩⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲫⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲭⲣⲓⲥⲧⲟⲥ· ⲕⲥⲙⲁⲙⲁⲁⲧ ⲉⲭⲛ̄-ⲛⲉⲕⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲛ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲙⲛ̄ⲛⲉⲕϩⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲛⲁⲛ̄ⲕⲁⲓⲣⲟⲥ ⲛⲁⲛ̄-ⲣⲟⲙⲡⲉ ⲛⲁⲛⲉⲃⲟⲧⲉ ⲙⲛ̄ⲛⲉϩⲟⲟⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲉⲩⲱⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲣⲱ ⲙⲛ̄-ⲛ̄ⲱⲱⲙ ⲛⲁⲡⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲙⲏⲣⲉ ⲉⲧⲉⲟⲩⲙⲟⲓϩⲉ ⲡⲉ ϩⲙ̄ⲡⲕⲁϩ ⲧⲏⲣⲓ̄ ⲛⲕⲏⲙⲉ ⲛⲁⲛϩⲱⲟⲩ ⲙⲛⲛⲉⲓⲱⲧⲉ ⲛⲁⲛⲑⲏⲩ ⲙⲛⲛϫⲁⲙⲏ ⲛⲁⲛⲕⲃⲱ ⲙⲛⲛ̄ϩⲙ̄ⲙⲉ ⲛⲁⲡⲁⲏⲣ ⲉⲧⲣ̄ⲛⲟⲫⲣⲉ ⲛⲁⲛ̄ⲱⲁⲩ ⲉⲧⲁⲩϫⲁⲛⲉ ⲛ̄ⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲛ ⲛⲓⲙ (RE 10 161)

(16) ⲁⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉϯⲛⲁⲛⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲭⲁⲣⲓⲥⲙⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲥⲣ̄ⲫⲉⲉⲧⲣⲉⲛⲣ̄ϩⲱⲃⲉⲛⲉϩⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲛⲱⲛϩ̄ⲉⲟⲩⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲣ̄ⲙⲙⲁⲟⲛⲁⲛ·ⲁⲛⲟⲛⲛⲉⲧⲟⲩⲏϩⲥϩ̄ⲛⲛⲉⲫⲧⲟⲡⲟⲥⲉ-ⲧⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ·ⲁⲛⲉⲣϩⲱⲃⲇⲉϩⲱⲱⲫⲉⲛⲉϩⲃⲏⲩⲉⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲛⲙⲟⲩⲁⲩⲱⲡⲉⲛⲟ-ⲥⲉⲙⲏⲙⲙⲛ̄ⲣⲱⲙⲉⲉϩⲛⲁⲫⲉⲉⲓⲉⲧⲉⲕⲕⲗⲏⲥⲓⲁ ⲉⲛⲋⲃⲛ̄ⲑⲉⲁⲛⲉⲧⲃⲉⲛⲉⲫ-

ϩⲓⲥⲉⲙ̄ⲛ̄ⲛⲉϥⲙ̄ⲛ̄ⲧϩ̄ⲙ̄ϩⲁⲗⲉⲩⲕⲏϩⲉⲡⲉⲛⲙ̄ⲧⲟⲛ·ⲁⲛⲟⲛⲇⲉⲛⲉⲧϩ̄ⲙ̄ⲡⲏⲓ-
̄ⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉⲁⲩⲱⲉⲧⲟⲩⲏϩϩ̄ⲛ̄ⲛⲉϥⲥⲩⲛⲁⲅⲱⲅⲏⲧⲛ̄ⲥⲱⲟⲩϩⲛⲁⲛⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ-
ⲛⲟⲩⲱ ⲱϥϩⲛⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥⲭⲟⲟⲩⲭⲉⲁⲓⲥⲟⲩⲛϩⲁϩⲙⲙⲛⲧⲱⲁϥ-
ⲧⲉⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ̄ (E 94f.)

TABLES

NB: "X-" or "X=" mean: "X is prefixed to the following element (either noun or demonstrative, indefinite, interrogative or number pronoun; or suffix-pronoun, respectively);
"-X" means: "X is suffixed to the preceding element";
"-X-" means: "X is infixed between elements".

Table A: Pronouns; Determinators: Articles, Demonstratives; Personal Pronouns
Table B: Nominal-Sentence Patterns
Table C: the Base ("Tripartite") Conjugation
Table D: the Causative Conjugation
Table E: Existential and Possessive Statements
Table F: the Durative Conjugation
Table G: the Converters
Table H: the Adjective Verbs
Table I: Lexical Verb Morphology: Infinitive/stative Formal Classes

TABLE A

PRONOUNS: DETERMINATORS: ARTICLES, DEMONSTRATIVES, PERSONAL PRONOUNS

A1. ARTICLES:

	DEFINITE ("the")	INDEFINITE ("a", "some")	ZERO (generic, abstract, quality)
singular, masc.	ⲡ-/ⲡⲉ-	ⲟⲩ-	∅-
singular, fem.	ⲧ-/ⲧⲉ-	ⲟⲩ-	
plural, masc. + fem.	ⲛ-/ⲛⲉ-	ϩⲉⲛ-	

A2. DEMONSTRATIVES

	"THIS ONE"	"THIS---"	"THAT ONE"	"THAT---" (emotional)
singular, masc.	ⲡⲁⲓ	ⲡⲉⲓ-	ⲡⲏ	ⲡⲓ-
singular, fem.	ⲧⲁⲓ	ⲧⲉⲓ-	ⲧⲏ	ⲧⲓ-
plural, masc. + fem. ("these", "those")	ⲛⲁⲓ	ⲛⲉⲓ-	ⲛⲏ	ⲛⲓ-

A3. POSSESSIVE ARTICLES

	possessed: *masc.*	possessed: *fem.*	possessed: *plural* (masc. + fem.)
possessor:			
1st sgl. ("my-")	ⲡⲁ-	ⲧⲁ-	ⲛⲁ-
2nd sgl. masc. ("your-")	ⲡⲉⲕ-	ⲧⲉⲕ-	ⲛⲉⲕ-
fem. ("your-")	ⲡⲟⲩ-	ⲧⲟⲩ-	ⲛⲟⲩ-
3rd sgl. masc. ("his-")	ⲡⲉϥ-	ⲧⲉϥ-	ⲛⲉϥ-
fem. ("her-")	ⲡⲉⲥ-	ⲧⲉⲥ-	ⲛⲉⲥ-
1st plur. ("our-")	ⲡⲉⲛ-	ⲧⲉⲛ-	ⲛⲉⲛ-
2nd plur. ("your-")	ⲡⲉⲧⲛ̄-	ⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄-	ⲛⲉⲧⲛ̄-
3rd plur. ("their-")	ⲡⲉⲩ-	ⲧⲉⲩ-	ⲛⲉⲩ-

A4. POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS

possessor:	possessed: *masc.*	possessed: *fem.*	possessed: *plural* (masc. + fem.)
1st sgl. ("mine")	ⲡⲱⲓ	ⲧⲱⲓ	ⲛⲟⲩⲓ
2nd sgl. masc. ("yours")	ⲡⲱⲕ	ⲧⲱⲕ	ⲛⲟⲩⲕ
fem. ("yours")	ⲡⲱ	ⲧⲱ	ⲛⲟⲩ
3rd sgl. masc. ("his")	ⲡⲱⲩ	ⲧⲱⲩ	ⲛⲟⲩⲩ
fem. ("hers")	ⲡⲱⲥ	ⲧⲱⲥ	ⲛⲟⲩⲥ
1st plur. ("ours")	ⲡⲱⲛ	ⲧⲱⲛ	ⲛⲟⲩⲛ
2nd plur. ("yours")	ⲡⲱⲧⲛ̄	ⲧⲱⲧⲛ̄	ⲛⲟⲩⲧⲛ̄
3rd plur. ("theirs")	ⲡⲱⲟⲩ	ⲧⲱⲟⲩ	ⲛⲟⲩ.ⲟⲩ
noun possessor	ⲡⲁ-	ⲧⲁ-	ⲛⲁ-

("he/she/they of"): e.g. ⲡⲁⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ "he of (belonging/pertaining to) God", ⲧⲁⲡⲁⲥⲟⲛ "she of (belonging/pertaining to) my brother", ⲛⲁⲧⲡⲉ "they of (belonging/pertaining to) Heaven".

A5. PERSONAL PRONOUNS

Class (a): "SUFFIX-PRONOUNS"
(pronominal *actor-expression* in base conjugation; pronominal *object* after infinitive; pronoun *following prepositions*; *subject* of Adjective Verbs).

	Singular	Plural
1st person ("I, me"):	-ⲓ(-), -ⲧ*	-ⲛ(-) ("we, us")
2nd person ("you"):	-ⲕ(-) (masc.)	-ⲧⲛ̄(-), -ⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄(-), -ⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ̄*
	-ϩ(-), -ⲉ*-ⲧⲉ* (fem.)	(masc./fem.)
3rd person -ⲩ(-)	(masc.: "he, him")	-ⲟⲩ -ⲩ-
-ⲥ(-)	(fem.: "she, her")	(masc./fem.: "they, them")

* -ⲧ, -ⲉ/-ⲧⲉ follow consonants and ("ⲕⲁⲁⲧ") doubled vowels; -ⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ̄ final ⲧ and the prenominal form of the infinitive as well as some prepositions.

Class (a_1): OBJECTIVE PRONOUNS
(pronominal *possessed* after possession verboid, see Table E; pronominal object after certain irregular infinitives, e.g. ϲϩⲁⲓ "write").

	Singular	Plural
2nd person ("you"):	(masc.) -ⲕ	
	(fem.) -ⲉ	
3rd person:	(masc. "him") -ⲩ	
	(fem. "her") -ⲥ	(masc./fem. "them") -ⲥⲉ, -ⲥⲟⲩ

Class (b): PREFIX PRONOUNS
(pronominal *actor* in the durative conjugation pattern (present, future & modifier predication):

	Singular	Plural
1st person ("I", "we")	ϯ-	ⲧⲛ̄-
2nd person ("you")	ⲕ- (masc.)	
	ⲧⲉ- (fem.)	ⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄- (masc. + fem.)
3rd person	ⲩ- (masc. "he")	
	ⲥ- (fem. "she")	ⲥⲉ- (masc. + fem. "they")

Class (c): SUBJECT PRONOUNS: pronominal "logical subject" (theme) with *nominal predicates*).

	Singular	Plural
1st person ("I am-")	ⲁⲛⲛ̄-	ⲁⲛ(ⲛ̄)-, ⲁⲛⲟⲛ- ("we are-")
2nd person ("you are-")	ⲛ̄ⲧⲕ̄- (masc.)	
	ⲛ̄ⲧⲉ- (fem.)	ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄- (masc. + fem.)
3rd person	-ⲡⲉ (masc. "he is-")	
	-ⲧⲉ (fem. "she is-")	-ⲛⲉ (masc. + fem. "they are-")

Class (d): LEXICAL ("independent") PRONOUNS
(lexemes for "I, you (masculine singular, feminine singular, masc./fem. plural), he, she, we, they"; also as personal-pronoun *predicates* in the delocutive Nominal Sentence).

	Singular	Plural
1st person ("I")	ⲁⲛⲟⲕ	ⲁⲛⲟⲛ ("we")
2nd person ("you")	ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲕ (masc.)	
	ⲛ̄ⲧⲟ (fem.)	ⲛ̄ⲧⲱⲧⲛ̄ (masc. + fem.)
3rd person ("he")	ⲛ̄ⲧⲟϥ (masc.)	
("she")	ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲥ (fem.)	ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲟⲩ (masc. + fem., "they")

Note the morphology of the 1st-person pronouns: ⲁⲛⲟⲕ, ⲁⲛⲟⲛ — different from all others (ⲛ̄ⲧⲟ- + suffix-pronoun).

TABLE B

NOMINAL-SENTENCE PATTERNS

B1. The INTERLOCUTIVE (1st/2nd person) PATTERN

ⲁⲛ̄- ⲡⲉⲕⲥⲙⲥⲁⲗ "I am HIS SERVANT", ⲛ̄ⲧⲕ̄- ⲟⲩⲡⲛ̄ⲁ "You are A SPIRIT"

Pattern: # 1st/2nd person pronominal subject – PREDICATE #
Subject: INTERLOCUTIVE (1st-2nd persons) pronouns (A5, Class c)
Predicate: definite, indefinite noun (not demonstrative, proper name, or zero-determinated noun)
Negation pattern: # (ⲛ̄-) subject – PREDICATE + ⲁⲛ #
Conversion: circumstantial: ⲉ + PATTERN ("I/you being ...")
preterite: ⲛⲉ + PATTERN ("I was .../You were ...")
Topicalized subject: # ⲁⲛⲟⲕ ⲁⲛ̄- Predicate # (etc.)

B2a. The DELOCUTIVE (3rd person) PATTERN

ⲡⲁⲥⲟⲛ ⲡⲉ "He is MY BROTHER", ⲟⲩⲡⲁⲣⲑⲉⲛⲟⲥ ⲧⲉ "She is A VIRGIN", ⲛⲁⲓ ⲛⲉ "It is THESE", ⲁⲛⲟⲕ ⲓⲉ "It is I"

Pattern: # PREDICATE – 3rd person pronominal subject #
Subject: DELOCUTIVE (3rd persons) pronouns (singular ⲡⲉ (m.), ⲧⲉ (f.); plural ⲛⲉ: A5, class c)
Predicate: definite, indefinite, zero-det. noun; Proper Name; personal, demonstrative, interrogative, indefinite pronouns
Negation pattern: # (ⲛ̄-) PREDICATE + ⲁⲓ + subject #
Conversion: circumstantial: ⲉ + PATTERN ("Whereas he/she/they is/are...")
relative: ⲉⲧⲉ + PATTERN ("Who, which is/are...")
preterite: ⲛⲉ + PATTERN ("He/she/they was/were ...")

B2b. The EXPANDED DELOCUTIVE PATTERN

ⲟⲩⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲥ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ "GOOD is (He,) God", ⲟⲩ ⲧⲉ ⲧⲉⲛϩⲉⲗⲡⲓⲥ "WHAT is (it,) our hope?" ⲧⲁⲓ ⲧⲉ ⲑⲉ "THIS is (it,) the manner" ("thus")

Pattern: # PREDICATE – pronominal subject - nominal subject #
This is B2a, expanded: the nominal subject renders the pronominal (formal or "grammatical") one lexically explicit. (Other features are the same as for B2a)

B2c. The Topicalization Delocutive Pattern

ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲟⲩⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲥ ⲛⲉ "(As for) God, He is GOOD", ⲛⲁⲓ ⲥⲉⲛⲣⲉⲙ̄-ⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲛⲉ "(As for) these, they are SINNERS"

Pattern: # noun/pronoun topic PREDICATE – pronominal subject #

The topic presents an element familiar from the preceding text or beyond it as the basis on which the predicate is communicated; the pronominal subject refers back to the topic, and agrees with it in gender and number.

Features as for B2a, except for conversions, which are rare.
NB (*negation pattern*): # topic - (ⲛ̄-) PREDICATE + ⲁⲛ + pronominal subject #

B3. The Copular Pattern

ⲡⲉⲩⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲡⲉ ⲣⲱⲙⲉ "Their god is MAN", ⲡⲉⲙⲣⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲁⲩⲗⲟⲥ "His name is PAUL, ⲁⲛⲟⲕ ⲡⲉ ⲅⲁⲃⲣⲓⲏⲗ "I am GABRIEL.": an equational-identifying predication clause (S = P)

Pattern: # subject - copula – PREDICATE
Subject: definite (very rarely indefinite/zero-determinated) noun, personal or demonstrative pronoun
Predicate: Proper Name, definite/indefinite/zero-determinated noun (especially infinitives)
Copula: ⲡⲉ (ⲧⲉ) (ⲛⲉ) (ⲡⲉ generalized)
Negation pattern: # ⲛ̄- subject + ⲁⲛ + copula – PREDICATE #
Conversion: circumstantial: ⲉ + PATTERN ("S being P")
relative: ⲉⲧⲉ + PATTERN ("Whose S is P")
preterite: ⲛⲉ + PATTERN ("S was P")

PATTERN OVERVIEW (B1-2a): "P" = Predicate, "S" = Subject

subject	SIMPLE	EXPANDED	TOPICALIZED
INTERLOCUTIVE ("I am; we, you are")	"ⲁⲛⲓ̄- P"	—	"ⲁⲛⲟⲕ, ⲁⲛⲓ̄- P"
DELOCUTIVE ("he, she is, they are")	"P ⲡⲉ"	"P ⲡⲉ, S"	"S, P ⲡⲉ"

TABLE C

THE BASE ("TRIPARTITE") CONJUGATION

A verb-clause pattern set, combining *actor* with *verb phrase*.
actor: suffix-pronoun, Proper Name or noun/demonstrative, indefinite, interrogative pronouns
verb: base discontinuously combined with any **infinitive** (here represented by ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "hear")

(I) The main-sentence conjugation
Distinctive properties: (a) all are independent clauses, (b) all are completely or partly convertible, (c) all are negated by SPECIAL NEGATIVE BASES.

C(I)1. THE PERFECT: "ⲁⲫⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄" "ⲙ̄ⲡⲫⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄"

(a) *Affirmative* base:

ⲁ- ⲫ-ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄	"He heard, has heard"
ⲁ-ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄	"The man heard, has heard"

Conversions:
CIRCUMSTANTIAL
ⲉ-ⲁ-...ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "he/the man having heard", "after he/the man had heard", "... and he/the man heard"
RELATIVE
(ⲉⲛⲧ-ⲁ...ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "who heard, has heard", "whom, whose ... he/the man heard, has heard"
SECOND TENSE
(ⲉ)ⲛⲧ-ⲁ...ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "It is ... that he/the man heard, has heard"
PRETERITE
ⲛⲉ-ⲁ...ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "He/the man had heard"

(b) *Negative* base:

ⲙ̄ⲡ- ⲫ̄-ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄	"He did not hear, has not heard"
ⲙ̄ⲡⲉ-ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄	"The man did not hear, has not heard"

Conversions:
CIRCUMSTANTIAL
(ϵ-)ⲙⲡ-/(ϵ-)ⲙⲡⲉ-... ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "unless, if not he/the man heard. has heard", "he/the man not having chosen"
RELATIVE
ⲉⲧⲉⲙ̄ⲡ-/ⲉⲧⲉ-ⲙ̄ⲡⲉ-... ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "who did not hear. has not heard", "whom. whose ... he/the man did not hear, has not heard"
SECOND TENSE (rare)
ⲉⲧⲉ-ⲙ̄ⲡ-/ⲉⲧⲉ-ⲙ̄ⲡⲉ-... ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "It is ... that he/the man did not hear, has not heard"
PRETERITE
ⲛⲉ-ⲙ̄ⲡ-/ⲛⲉ-ⲙ̄ⲡⲉ-... ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "He/the man had not heard"

C(1)2. THE AORIST: "ⲯⲁϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄" "ⲙⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄"

(a) *affirmative* base:
ⲯⲁ-ϥ-ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "He (usually, by nature, by disposition, as consequence) hears"
ⲯⲁⲣⲉ-ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "The man (usually, by nature, by disposition, as consequence hears"

Conversions:
CIRCUMSTANTIAL
ϵ-ⲯⲁ-/ϵ-ⲯⲁⲣⲉ-... ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ (after indefinite/zero det. noun, as relative)
RELATIVE
ⲉⲧⲉ-/ϵ-ⲯⲁ-/ⲯⲁⲣⲉ ... ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "who (usually ...) hears", "whom, whose ... he/the man (usually ...) hears"
SECOND TENSE
ϵ-ⲯⲁ-/ⲯⲁⲣⲉ-... ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "It is ... that he/the man (usually ...) hears"
PRETERITE
ⲛⲉ-ⲯⲁ-/ⲯⲁⲣⲉ-... ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "He/the man used to hear"

(b) *Negative* base:
ⲙⲉ-ϥ-ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "He does not (usually ...) hear, cannot hear"
ⲙⲉⲣⲉ-ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "The man does not (usually ...) hear, cannot hear"

Conversions:
CIRCUMSTANTIAL.
ϵ-ме-/мерϵ- ... сωтм̄ "while he/the man does not (usually ...), cannot hear"
RELATIVE
ϵтϵ-/ϵ-ме-/мерϵ- ... сωтм̄ "who does not (usually ...), cannot hear", "whom, whose ... he/the man does not (usually ...), cannot hear"
PRETERITE
не-ме-/мерϵ- ... сωтм̄ "He/the man could not, used not to hear"

C(I)3. "NOT YET": "м̄пατq̄сωтм̄"

Base:
м̄пат-q̄-сωтм̄ "He has not yet heard"
м̄пατϵ-рωме сωтм̄ "The man has not yet heard"

Conversions:
CIRCUMSTANTIAL:
ϵ-мпат-/ϵ-мпατϵ- ... сωтм̄ "before he/the man has heard" (usually preceded by the adverb ϩαθн "before")
RELATIVE:
ϵтϵ-м̄пат-/ϵтϵ-м̄пατϵ- ... сωтм̄ "who has not yet heard", "whom, whose ... he/the man has not yet heard"
PRETERITE:
не-м̄пат-/не-м̄пατϵ- ... сωтм̄ "He/the man had not yet heard"

C(I)4. THE OPTATIVE ("THIRD FUTURE"): "ϵqϵсωтм̄" "н̄нϵq-сωтм̄"

(a) *Affirmative* base:
ϵ-q-ϵ-сωтм̄ "May he hear" (3rd persons). "Would you hear" (2nd persons)
ерϵ-рωме сωтм̄ "May the man hear"

Conversions: none

Following ⲭⲉ and ⲭⲉⲕⲁ(ⲁ)ⲥ: clauses of purpose or willed result: "... so that he (may) hear"

(b) *Negative* base:

ⲛ̄ⲛⲉ-ⲫ-ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄	"May he not hear", "He shall not hear"
	"I will not hear"
ⲛ̄ⲛⲉ-ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄	"May the man not hear", "The man shall not hear"

Conversions:

CIRCUMSTANTIAL

(ⲉ-)ⲛⲛⲉ-...ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ rare, only after ⲭⲉⲕⲁ(ⲁ)ⲥ in clauses of purpose.

Following ⲭⲉ and ⲭⲉⲕⲁ(ⲁ)ⲥ in clauses of purpose or willed result: "... so that he may not hear"

(II) The dependent-clause conjugation:

Distinctive features: (a) all are dependent clauses, (b) all are non-convertible, (c) all are negated by the NEGATIVE INFIX -ⲧⲙ̄- preceding the infinitive (for a pronominal actor) or the actor (nominal actor).

C(II)1. "UNTIL": "ⲱⲁⲛⲧⲫⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄"

Base:

ⲱⲁⲛⲧ-ⲫ-ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄	"until he hear (heard)"
ⲱⲁⲛⲧⲉ-ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄	"until the man hear (heard)"

C(II)2. THE TEMPORAL: "ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲣⲉⲫⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄"

Base:

ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲣⲉ-ⲫ-/ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲣⲉ-ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄	"after, since he/the man heard"

Negative forms:

ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲣⲉ-ⲫ-ⲧⲙ̄-ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄	"after, since he did not hear"
ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲣⲉ-ⲧⲙ̄-ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄	"after, since the man did not hear"

C(II)3. The Conditional: "ϵqϣaNCωTM̄"

Base:

ϵ- q- ϣaN-CωTM̄	"if (ever), in case, when(ever), (eventually) he hears"
ϵPϣaN-ΠPωMϵ CωTM̄	"if (ever), in case, when(ever) (eventually) the man hears"

negative forms:

ϵ-q- ϣaN-TM̄-CωTM̄	"if (ever) ... he does not hear"
ϵPϣaN-TM̄-ΠPωMϵ CωTM̄	"if (ever) ... the man does not hear"

The Conditional is often preceded by adverb KaN which marks a CONCESSIVE meaning ("even if ..., although")

C(II)4. The Conjunctive: "NQ̄CωTM̄"

Base: with PRONOMINAL actor: N- with special pronominal forms
with NOMINAL actor: N̄Tϵ-

Pronominal forms:

		SINGULAR		PLURAL
1st person		N̄Ta-, Ta-		N̄TN̄-
2nd person	masc.	NR̄-		
	fem.	N̄TC-	masc., fem.	N̄TϵTN̄-
3rd person	masc.	NQ̄-		
	fem.	NC̄-	masc., fem.	N̄CC-

negative forms: PRONOMINAL actor: N- Q̄- T̄M- CωTM̄
NOMINAL actor: N̄Tϵ- TM̄- ΠPωMϵ CωTM̄

The conjunctive: (1) CONTINUES A PRECEDING VERB FORM (normally not present, perfect or imperfect) as a special closely coordinated ("and") verb sequence; (2) occurs after CONJUNCTIONS and ADVERBS of Greek origin, especially ϩωCTϵ "so that", negative MHΠOTϵ, MHΠωC; ϵIMHTI "otherwise", MOTC "hardly".

TABLE D

THE CAUSATIVE CONJUGATION

D1. THE CAUSATIVE INFINITIVE: "ⲧⲣⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄"

In conjugation:

ⲧⲣⲉ-ϥ-ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄

ⲧⲣⲉ-ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "to make (/let) him/the man hear"

After prepositions:

ⲉ-ⲧⲣⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄/ⲉ-ⲧⲣⲉⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "for him/the man to hear", "that he (should) hear" OR "so as to let him/the man hear"

ϩⲙ̄ⲡ-/ⲙ̄ⲛ̄ⲛ̄ⲥⲁ-/ⲁⲛⲧⲓ-/ⲧⲣⲉϥ-/ⲧⲣⲉⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ literally "(in/after/instead ...) that he/the man hear"

D2. THE CAUSATIVE IMPERATIVE ("JUSSIVE", "THIRD-PERSON-IMPERATIVE"): "ⲙⲁⲣⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄"

	SINGULAR	PLURAL
1st person	—	ⲙⲁⲣⲛ̄-ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "let us hear" *negative*: ⲙ̄ⲡⲣ̄-ⲧⲣⲉⲛ-ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "let us not hear"
2nd person	—	—
3rd person masc.	ⲙⲁⲣⲉϥ-ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "let him hear" *negative*: ⲙ̄ⲡⲣ̄-ⲧⲣⲉϥ-ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "let him not hear"	
3rd person fem.	ⲙⲁⲣⲉⲥ-ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "let her hear" *negative*: ⲙ̄ⲡⲣ̄-ⲧⲣⲉⲥ-ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "let her not hear"	masc. + fem. ⲙⲁⲣⲟⲩ-ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "let them hear" masc. + fem. *negative* ⲙ̄ⲡⲣ̄-ⲧⲣⲉⲩ-ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "let them not hear"

D3. THE FUTURE ("CAUSATIVE") CONJUNCTIVE: "ⲧⲁⲣⲉϥ-ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄"

This form expresses the guaranteed result of obeying a command, also general guaranteed (desirable) result. In the *first persons*, it expresses a deliberative question.

	SINGULAR	PLURAL	
1st person	ⲧⲁ-ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄	ⲧⲁⲣⲛ̄-ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄	"shall we hear?"
2nd person masc.	ⲧⲁⲣⲉⲕ-ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄		
	fem. ⲧⲁⲣⲉ-ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄	masc. + fem. ⲧⲁⲣⲉⲧⲛ̄-ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄	
	"... and you shall hear"		
3rd person masc.	ⲧⲁⲣⲉϥ-ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄		
	fem. ⲧⲁⲣⲉⲥ-ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄	masc. + fem. ⲧⲁⲣⲟⲩ-ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄	
	"... and he/she shall hear"	"... and they shall hear"	

TABLE E

EXISTENTIAL AND POSSESSIVE STATEMENTS

E1. The Existential Statements:

ⲟⲩⲛ̄-	"There is" (with indefinite noun/pronoun, number nouns, zero-det. noun or determinated relative (ⲡⲉⲧ-)
ⲙ̄ⲙⲛ̄-, ⲙⲛ̄-	"There is not" (with indefinite noun/pronoun, zero-determinated noun or determinated relative (ⲡⲉⲧ-)

Conversions:

Circumstantial:

ⲉ-ⲟⲩⲛ̄-/ⲉ-(ⲙ̄)ⲙⲛ̄-(ⲙ̄ⲙⲛ-)	"there being/not being"

Relative:

ⲉⲧⲉ-ⲟⲩⲛ̄-/ⲉⲧⲉ-(ⲙ̄)ⲙⲛ̄-	"whose .../... whom there is/is not"

Second Tense (rare):

ⲉ-ⲟⲩⲛ̄-/ⲉⲙⲛ̄-	"It is ... that there is/is not"

Preterite:

ⲛⲉ-ⲟⲩⲛ̄-/ⲛⲉ-(ⲙ̄)ⲙⲛ̄-	"There was/was not"

NB: for the Existential Durative Predication, see Table F.

E1a ⲉⲓⲥ-, ⲉⲓⲥ-ϩⲓⲏⲧⲉ "Here is ...", with nouns and lexical pronouns.

E2. The Possession Verboids: ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲕ "He has"
(ⲙ̄)ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲕ "He does not have"

PRONOMINAL POSSESSOR:

	SINGULAR POSSESSOR	PLURAL POSSESSOR
1st person	ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧ(ⲁ)ⲓ *neg.* (ⲙ̄)ⲙⲛ̄ⲧ(ⲁ)ⲓ	ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲛ *neg.* (ⲙ̄)ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲛ
("I/We have, do not have")		
2nd person, masc.	ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧ(ⲁ)ⲕ *neg.* (ⲙ̄)ⲙⲛ̄ⲧ(ⲁ)ⲕ	
fem.	ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲉ *neg.* (ⲙ̄)ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲉ	
("You have, do not have") masc. + fem.	ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄/(ⲙ̄)ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄	

3rd person masc. ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲩ *neg.* (ⲙ̄)ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲩ
fem. ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲥ *neg.* (ⲙ̄)ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲥ
("He/She has, does not have"),
("They have, do not have") masc. fem. ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲩ/(ⲙ̄)ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲩ

NOMINAL, DEMOSTRATIVE, INDEFINITE-PRONOUN POSSESSOR:
ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲉ- *neg.* (ⲙ̄)ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲉ-ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ "The man has, does not have"
POSSESSED: nouns, demonstrative, indefinite pronouns; personal pronouns (the objective pronouns, TABLE A5 Class a_1)

Conversions:
CIRCUMSTANTIAL:
ⲉ-ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲁ-/ⲉ-ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲉ- *neg.* ⲉ-ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲁ-(ⲙ̄ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲁ-)/ⲉⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲉ-(ⲙ̄ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲉ-)
"he/the man having, not having"
RELATIVE:
ⲉⲧⲉ-ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲁ-/ⲉⲧⲉ-ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲉ- *neg.* ⲉⲧⲉ(ⲙ̄)ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲁ-/ⲉⲧⲉ-(ⲙ̄)ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲉ-
"who has, does not have", "whom he/the man has, does not have"
SECOND TENSE (rare):
ⲉ-ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲁ- *neg.* ⲉ-(ⲙ)ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲁ- "It is ... that he/the man has, does not have"
PRETERITE
ⲛⲉ-ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲁ-/ⲛⲉ-ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲉ- *neg.* ⲛⲉ-(ⲙ̄)ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲁ-/ⲛⲉ-(ⲙ̄)ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲉ- "He/The man had, did not have"

TABLE F

THE DURATIVE CONJUGATION

(THE "BIPARTITE" PATTERN)

Pronominal actor: prefixed pronouns (Table A5 Class b)
Nominal actor: (a) DEFINITE noun, demonstrative pronoun or proper name: (b) *existential* (ⲟⲩⲛ̄-, *negative* (ⲙ̄)ⲙⲛ̄-) + *indefinite, zero* noun or indefinite pronoun
Predicates: the durative infinitive; the stative; stative auxiliary (ⲛⲁ-) + infinitive (future tense); adverb phrase

F1. *Predicate*: DURATIVE INFINITIVE: THE PRESENT TENSE DURATIVE (progressive) ACTION

PRONOMINAL actor:
ⲧⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄, ⲕⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄, ⲧⲉⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ... "I am hearing"; "You are hearing"; "He is hearing" (etc.)
Negatived:
(ⲛ̄)ⲓⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ, ⲛⲧ/ⲕⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ, (ⲛ̄)ⲧⲉⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ, (ⲛ̄)ⲟⲩ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ ...
"I am not hearing", "You are not hearing", "He is not hearing" (etc.)

NOMINAL actor:

ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄	"The man is hearing"
ⲟⲩⲛ̄-ⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄	"A man is hearing" (existential: "There is a man hearing")
ⲟⲩⲛ̄-ⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄	"A man is hearing" (existential: "There is a man hearing")

Negatived:

(ⲙ̄)ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ	"The man is not hearing"
(ⲙ̄)ⲙⲛ̄-ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄	"No man is hearing" (existential: "There is not [a] man hearing")

Conversions:
CIRCUMSTANTIAL:
PRONOMINAL actor:

ⲉ-ⲓⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄, ⲉ-ⲕⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄	"I hearing", "you hearing" (etc.)

Negatived:
ϵ-ⲛ†ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ OR ϵ-ⲓⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ "I not hearing" (etc.)
NOMINAL actor:
ϵⲣϵ-ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "the man hearing"
ϵⲟⲩⲛ̄-ⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "a man hearing" (existential)
Negatived:
ϵ-ⲙⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ OR ϵⲣϵ-ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ "the man not hearing",
(ϵ-) (ⲙ̄)ⲙ̄ⲛ-ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "no man hearing" (existential)

The circumstantial conversion in all forms is also used to expand and describe an indefinite/zero noun or indefinite pronoun: ⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ ϵⲫⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "a man (who is) hearing".

RELATIVE: DEFINITE ANTECEDENT ONLY (incl. definite articles, Proper Names and demonstratives; see CIRCUMSTANTIAL for indefinite antecedents)
(a) antecedent = actor of the conjugation form (ϵⲧ-/ϵⲧϵ-):
ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ϵⲧⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "the man who is hearing", ⲡ-ϵⲧⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "he who is hearing", neg. ⲡ(ⲣⲱⲙⲉ) ϵⲧϵ-ⲛⲫⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ/ϵⲧ-ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ
(b) antecedent = object/complement of the verbal predicate:

PRONOMINAL actor (ϵⲧ-/ϵⲧϵ-):
ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ϵ†-/ϵⲧⲕ̄-/ϵⲧⲫ̄- ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲫ "the man whom I am/you are/he is hearing",
ⲡ-ϵ†-/ϵⲧⲕ̄-/ϵⲧⲫ̄- ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲫ "he whom I am/you are/he is hearing"
Negatived: ⲡ(ⲣⲱⲙⲉ) ϵⲧϵ-ⲛ̄†-/ⲛⲕ̄-/ⲛⲫ̄- ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲫ ⲁⲛ or ⲡ(ⲣⲱⲙⲉ) ϵ†-/ϵⲧⲕ̄-/ϵⲧⲫ̄- ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲫ ⲁⲛ "the man/he whom I am/you are/he is not hearing"

NOMINAL actor (ϵⲧϵ-/ϵⲧϵⲣϵ-):
ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ϵⲧϵⲣϵ-ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧϵ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲫ "the man whom God is hearing", ⲡ-ϵⲧϵⲣϵ-ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧϵ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲫ "he whom God is hearing",
ⲡϩⲱⲃ ϵⲧϵⲟⲩⲛ̄-ⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ ϵⲓⲣϵ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲫ "The work which a man is doing" (existential)
Negatived:
ⲡ(ⲣⲱⲙⲉ) ϵⲧϵ-ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧϵ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲙⲙⲟⲫ ⲁⲛ OR ⲡ(ⲣⲱⲙⲉ) ϵⲧϵⲣϵ-ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧϵ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲫ ⲁⲛ "the man whom God is not hearing".
ⲡϩⲱⲃ ϵⲧϵⲙⲛ̄-ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ϵⲓⲣϵ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲫ "the work which no man is doing" (existential)

SECOND TENSE:
pronominal actor:
ϵ-ICὼTM̄ ... "It is ... that I am hearing" (etc.)
Negatived:
(N̄)(N)ϵ-ICωṭM̄ ⲁN ... "It is not ... that I am hearing" (etc.)
nominal actor:
ϵPϵ-ΠPωMϵ CωTM̄ ... "It is ... that the man is hearing"
Negatived:
(N) ϵPϵ-ΠPωMϵ CωTM̄ ⲁN ... "It is not ... that the man is hearing"

The Second Tense conversion is used to emphasize a constituent of the sentence, most often an adverb phrase.

PRETERITE:
pronominal actor:
Nϵ-ICωTM̄ (Πϵ) "I was hearing" (etc.)
Negatived:
Nϵ-ICωTM̄ ⲁN (Πϵ), (very rare) Nϵ-N̄†CωTM̄ ⲁN (Πϵ) "I was not hearing" (etc.)
nominal actor:
NϵPϵ-ΠPωMϵ CωTM̄ (Πϵ) "The man was hearing"
Negatived:
NϵPϵ-ΠPωMϵ CωTM̄ ⲁN (Πϵ) "The man was not hearing"

F2. *Predicate*: STATIVE: THE PRESENT TENSE – PASSIVE STATE, CONDITION OF STATE OF BEING IN THE COURSE OF ACTION

PRONOMINAL actor: †COTΠ̄, KCOTΠ̄, TϵCOTΠ̄, ϥCOTΠ̄ ... "I am chosen"; "You are not chosen"; "He is not chosen" (etc.)
Negatived: (N̄)†COTΠ̄ ⲁN, NΓ̄-/KCOTΠ̄ ⲁN, (N̄)TϵCOTΠ̄ ⲁN, (N̄)ϥCOTΠ̄ ⲁN ... "I am not chosen"; "You are not chosen"; "He is not chosen" (etc.)

NOMINAL actor:
ΠPωMϵ COTΠ̄ "The man is chosen"
OYN̄-OYPωMϵ COTΠ̄ "A man is chosen" (existential: "There is a man chosen")

Negatived:
(ⲙ̄)ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ ⲁⲛ "The man is not chosen"
(ⲙ̄)ⲙⲛ̄-ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ "No man is chosen" (existential: "There is no man chosen")

Conversions:
CIRCUMSTANTIAL:
PRONOMINAL actor:
ⲉ-ⲓⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄, ⲉ-ⲕⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ ... "I being chosen", "you being chosen" (etc.)
Negatived:
ⲉ-ⲛ†ⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ ⲁⲛ OR ⲉ-ⲓⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ ⲁⲛ "I not being chosen" (etc.)
NOMINAL actor:
ⲉⲣⲉ-ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ "the man being chosen"
ⲉⲟⲩⲛ̄-ⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ "a man being chosen" (existential)
Negatived:
ⲉ-ⲙⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ ⲁⲛ OR ⲉⲣⲉ-ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ ⲁⲛ "the man not being chosen",
(ⲉ-) (ⲙ̄)ⲙⲛ̄-ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ "no man being chosen" (existential)

The circumstantial conversion in all forms is also used to expand and describe an indefinite/zero noun or indefinite pronoun: ⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲭⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ "a man (who is) chosen".

RELATIVE: DEFINITE ANTECEDENT ONLY (incl. definite articles, Proper Names and demonstratives; see CIRCUMSTANTIAL for indef. antecedents)

(a) antecedent = actor of the conjugation form (ⲉⲧ-/ⲉⲧⲉ-): ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲧⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ "the man who is chosen", ⲡ-ⲉⲧⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ "he who is chosen", neg. ⲡ(ⲣⲱⲙⲉ) ⲉⲧⲉ-ⲛⲭⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ ⲁⲛ/ⲉⲧ-ⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ ⲁⲛ
(b) antecedent = complement of the verbal predicate:
PRONOMINAL actor (ⲉⲧ-/ⲉⲧⲉ-):
ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉ†-/ⲉⲧⲕ̄-/ⲉⲧⲭ̄-ⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ (ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲓⲧⲟⲟⲧⲭ̄) "the man (by) whom I am/you are/he is chosen", ⲡ-ⲉ†-/ⲉⲧⲕ̄-/ⲉⲧⲭ̄-ⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ (ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲓⲧⲟⲟⲧⲭ̄) "the man (by) whom I am/you are/he is chosen"
Negatived:
ⲡ(ⲣⲱⲙⲉ) ⲉⲧⲉ-ⲛ̄†-/ⲛⲣ̄-/ⲛⲭ̄-ⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ ⲁⲛ (ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲓⲧⲟⲟⲧⲭ̄) or ⲡ(ⲣⲱⲙⲉ) ⲉ†-/ⲉⲧⲕ̄-/ⲉⲧⲭ̄-ⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ ⲁⲛ (ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲓⲧⲟⲟⲧⲭ̄) "the man/he ... whom I am/you are/he is not chosen"
NOMINAL actor (ⲉⲧⲉ-/ⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉ-):
ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉ-ⲧⲉⲥϩⲓⲙⲉ ⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ (ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲓⲧⲟⲟⲧⲭ̄) "the man (by)

whom the woman is chosen", ⲡ-ⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉ-ⲧⲉⲥϩⲓⲙⲉ ⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ (ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲓⲧⲟⲟⲧϥ̄) "he whom the woman is chosen"
Negatived:
ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲧⲉ-ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲥϩⲓⲙⲉ ⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ ⲁⲛ (ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲓⲧⲟⲟⲧϥ̄) or ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉ-ⲧⲉⲥϩⲓⲙⲉ ⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ ⲁⲛ (ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲓⲧⲟⲟⲧϥ̄) "the man (by) whom the woman is not chosen".

SECOND TENSE:
PRONOMINAL actor:

ⲉ-ⲓⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ ...	"It is ... that I am chosen" (etc.)
Negatived:	
(ⲛ̄)(ⲛ)ⲉ-ⲓⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ ⲁⲛ ...	"It is not ... that I am chosen" (etc.)

NOMINAL actor:

ⲥⲣⲉ-ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ ...	"It is ... that the man is chosen"
Negatived:	
(ⲛ)ⲉⲣⲉ-ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ ⲁⲛ ...	"It is not ... that the man is chosen"

The Second Tense conversion is used to emphasize a constituent of the sentence, most often an adverb phrase.

PRETERITE:
PRONOMINAL actor:

ⲛⲉ-ⲓⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ (ⲡⲉ)	"I was chosen" (etc.)
Negatived:	
ⲛⲉ-ⲓⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ ⲁⲛ (ⲡⲉ)	"I was not chosen" (etc.)
NOMINAL actor:	
ⲛⲉⲣⲉ-ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ (ⲡⲉ)	"The man was chosen"
Negatived:	
ⲛⲉⲣⲉ-ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ ⲁⲛ (ⲡⲉ)	"The man was not chosen"

F3. *Predicate*: STATIVE AUXILIARY + INFINITIVE: PRESENT-BASED (imminent) FUTURE

PRONOMINAL actor:

ϯⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄, ⲕⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄, ⲧⲉⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄, ⲫⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ...	"I'll hear" ("I am going/about to hear"); "You'll hear"; "He'll hear" (etc.)

Negatived:

(ⲛ̄)†ⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ, ⲛⲣ̄-/ⲕⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ, (ⲛ̄)ⲧⲉⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ, (ⲛ)ⲫⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ...	"I'll not hear" ("I am not going to hear"; "You'll not hear"; "He'll not hear" (etc.)
NOMINAL actor:	
ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄	"The man'll hear"
ⲟⲩⲛ̄-ⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄	"A man'll hear" (existential: "There's a man about to hear")
Negatived:	
(ⲙ̄)ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ	"The man'll not hear"
(ⲙ̄)ⲙⲛ̄-ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄	"No man'll hear" (existential: "There isn't a man about to hear")

Conversions:

CIRCUMSTANTIAL:

PRONOMINAL actor:

ⲉ-ⲓⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄	"I going/about to hear" (etc.)

Negatived:

ⲉ-ⲛ†ⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ OR ⲉ-ⲓⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ "I not going to hear" (etc.)

NOMINAL actor:

ⲉⲣⲉ-ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄	"the man going/about to hear"
ⲉⲟⲩⲛ̄-ⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄	"a man going/about to hear"

Negatived:

ⲉ-ⲙⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ OR ⲉⲣⲉ-ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ "the man not going/about to hear"

(ⲉ-)(ⲙ̄)ⲙⲛ̄-ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄	"no man going/about to hear" (existential)

The circumstantial conversion in all forms is also used to expand and describe an indefinite/zero noun or indefinite pronoun: ⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲫⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "a man (who is) about to hear", "a man who will hear".

RELATIVE: DEFINITE ANTECEDENT ONLY (incl. definite articles, Proper Names and demonstratives; see CIRCUMSTANTIAL for indef. antecedents)

(a) antecedent = actor of the conjugation form (ⲉⲧ-/ⲉⲧⲉ-):
ⲡ(ⲣⲱⲙⲉ) ⲉⲧ-ⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ "the man who is going/about to hear, who'll hear", "He who'll hear", neg. ⲡ(ⲣⲱⲙⲉ) ⲉⲧⲉ-ⲛⲫⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ / ⲉⲧⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ

(b) antecedent = object/complement of the verbal predicate:

PRONOMINAL actor (ϵT-/ϵTϵ-):
ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ϵ†-/ϵⲧⲕ̄-/ϵⲧⲫ̄-ⲛⲁⲥⲟⲧⲙⲥⲫ "the man whom I am/you are/he is going/about to hear, will hear", ⲡ-ϵ†-/ϵⲧⲕ̄-/ϵⲧⲫ̄-ⲛⲁⲥⲟⲧⲙⲉⲫ "he whom I am/you are/he is going/about to hear, will hear"
Negatived:
ⲡ(ⲣⲱⲙⲉ) ϵⲧϵ-ⲛ̄†-/ⲛⲣ̄-/ⲛⲫ̄-ⲛⲁⲥⲟⲧⲙⲉⲫ ⲁⲛ or ⲡ(ⲣⲱⲙⲉ) ϵ†-/ϵⲧⲕ̄-/ϵⲧⲫ̄-ⲛⲁⲥⲟⲧⲙⲉⲫ ⲁⲛ "the man/he whom I am/you are/he is not going/about to hear, won't hear"
NOMINAL actor (ϵⲧϵ-/ϵⲧϵⲣϵ-):
ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ϵⲧϵⲣϵ-ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧϵ ⲛⲁⲥⲟⲧⲙⲉⲫ "the man whom God is going/about to hear, will hear", ⲡ-ϵⲧϵⲣϵ-ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧϵ ⲛⲁⲥⲟⲧⲙⲉⲫ "he whom God is going/about to hear, will hear" ⲡϩⲱⲃ ϵⲧϵⲟⲩⲛ̄-ⲟⲩ-ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲁⲁⲁϥ "the work which a man is going/about to do, will do"
(existential)
Negatived:
ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ϵⲧϵ-ⲙ̄ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧϵ ⲛⲁⲥⲟⲧⲙⲉⲫ ⲁⲛ OR ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ϵⲧϵⲣϵ ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧϵ ⲛⲁⲥⲟⲧⲙⲉⲫ ⲁⲛ "the man whom God is not going/about to hear, won't hear"

SECOND TENSE:
PRONOMINAL actor:
ϵ-ⲓⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ... "It is ... that I am going/about to hear, will hear" (etc.)
Negatived:
(ⲙ̄)(ⲛ)ϵⲓⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ ... "It is not ... that I am going/about to hear, will hear" (etc.)
NOMINAL actor:
ϵⲣϵ-ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ... "It is ... that the man is going/about to hear, will hear"
Negatived:
(ⲛ) ϵⲣϵ-ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ ⲁⲛ ... "It is not ... that the man is going/about to hear, will hear"

The Second Tense conversion is used to emphasize a constituent of the sentence, most often an adverb phrase.

PRETERITE:
PRONOMINAL actor:
ⲛϵ-ⲓⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄ (ⲡϵ) "I was going/about to hear", "I would hear, would have heard" (etc.)

Negatived:
NE-INACWTM̄ AN (ΠE) "I was not going/about to hear", "I would not hear, would not have heard" (etc.)
NOMINAL actor:
NEPE-ΠPWME NACWTM̄ (ΠE) "The man was going/about to hear", "The man would hear, would have heard"
Negatived:
NEPE-ΠPWME NACWTM̄ AN (ΠE) "The man was not going/about to hear", "The man would not hear, would not have heard"

F4. *Predicate*: ADVERB-PHRASE PREDICATION PRESENT TENSE

PRONOMINAL actor:
†M̄ΠEIMA, KM̄ΠEIMA, TEM̄ΠEIMA, QM̄ΠEIMA ... "I'm here"; "You're here"; "He's here (etc.)
Negatived:
(N̄) †M̄ΠEIMA AN, NM̄ΠEIMA AN/KM̄ΠEIMA AN, (N̄)TEM̄ΠEIMA AN, (N)QM̄ΠEIMA AN ... "I'm not here"; "You're not here"; "He's not here" (etc.)
NOMINAL actor:
ΠPWME M̄ΠEIMA "The man's here"
OYN̄-OYPWME M̄ΠEIMA "A man's here" (existential: "There's a man here")

Negatived:
(M̄)ΠPWME M̄ΠEIMA AN "The man isn't here"
(M̄)MN̄-PWME M̄ΠEIMA "No man is here" (existential: "There isn't a man here")

Conversions:
CIRCUMSTANTIAL:
PRONOMINAL actor:
E-IM̄ΠEIMA "I being here" (etc.)
Negatived:
E-N†M̄ΠEIMA AN OR E-IM̄ΠEIMA AN "I not being here" (etc.)
NOMINAL actor:
EPE-ΠPWME M̄ΠEIMA "the man being here"
EOYN̄-OYPWME M̄ΠEIMA "a man being here"
Negatived:
E-MΠPWME M̄ΠEIMA AN OR EPE-ΠPWME M̄ΠEIMA AN "the man not being here"

(ϵ) (m̄) мn̄-ρωмє m̄пєima "no man being here" (existential).

The circumstantial conversion in all forms is also used to expand and describe an indefinite/zero noun or indefinite pronoun: оγρωмє ϵqm̄пєima a man being here".

RELATIVE: DEFINITE ANTECEDENT ONLY (incl. definite articles, Proper Names and demonstratives; see CIRCUMSTANTIAL for indef. antecedents)

(a) antecedent = actor of the conjugation form (ϵт-/ϵтϵ):
пρωмє ϵт-m̄пєima "the man who is here" neg. пρωмє ϵтϵ-nq̄mпєima ан/ϵт-m̄пєima ан
(b) antecedent represented (resumed) in the predicate adverb phrase:
PRONOMINAL actor (ϵт-/ϵтϵ-):
пма ϵ†-/ϵтk̄-/ϵтq̄-m̄moq "the place in which I am/you are/he is"
Negatived:
пма ϵтϵ-n̄†-/nr̄-/nq̄-m̄moq ан "the place in which I am/you are/he is not"
NOMINAL actor (ϵтc-/ctϵρϵ-):
пма ϵтϵρϵ-пρωмє m̄moq "the place in which the man is"
пма ϵтϵoγn̄-/ϵтϵρϵ-оγρωмє m̄moq "the place in which a man is" (existential)
Negatived:
пма ϵтc-m̄пρωмϵ m̄moq ан / ϵтϵρϵ-пρωмє m̄moq ан; пма ϵтϵ(m̄)мn̄-оγρωмϵ m̄moq "the place in which the man is not": "the place in which no man is" (existential)

SECOND TENSE:
PRONOMINAL actor:
ϵ-im̄пϵima; ϵ-im̄пϵima ... "It is here that I am/you are/he is"; "It is ... that I am here" (etc.)
Negatived:
ϵ-im̄пєima ан; ϵ-im̄пєima ан... "It is not here that I am/you are/he is"; "It is not ... that I am here" (etc.)
NOMINAL actor:
ϵρϵ-пρωмє m̄пєima (...) "It is here that the man is"; "It is ... that the man is here"
Negatived:
(n)ϵρϵ-пρωмϵ m̄пєima ан (...) "It is not here that the man is"; "It is not ... that the man is here"

The Second Tense conversion is used to emphasize a constituent of the sentence: either the predicate adverb phrase itself or a subsequent adverb phrase.

PRETERITE:

pronominal actor:	
ⲛⲉ-ⲓⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲓⲙⲁ (ⲡⲉ)	"I was here" (etc.)
Negatived:	
ⲛⲉ-ⲓⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲓⲙⲁ ⲁⲛ (ⲡⲉ)	"I wasn't here" (etc.)
nominal actor:	
ⲛⲉⲣⲉ-ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲓⲙⲁ (ⲡⲉ)	"The man was here"
Negatived:	
ⲛⲉⲣⲉ-ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲙ̄ⲡⲉⲓⲙⲁ ⲁⲛ (ⲡⲉ)	"The man wasn't here"

TABLE G

THE CONVERTERS

CONVERTERS(*): circumstantial relative Second Tense preterite

Converted Clause				
Nominal Sentence	ϵ-	ϵτϵ-	—	ne-
Perfect (affirm.)	ϵ-	(ϵ)nt-	(ϵ)nt-	ne-
Perfect (neg.)	(ϵ-)	ϵτϵ-	ϵτϵ-	ne-
Aorist (affirm.)	ϵ-	ϵ-/ϵτϵ-	ϵ-	ne-
Aorist (neg.)	ϵ-		—	ne-
"Not yet"	(ϵ-)	ϵτϵ-	—	ne-
Optative (affirm.)	—	—	—	—
Optative (neg.)	ϵ-	—	—	—
Durative conjugation (present, future, adverb predication) (Table F)	ϵ(ρϵ)-	ϵτ-/ϵτϵ(ρϵ)-	ϵ(ρϵ)-	ne(ρϵ)-
Existential/possessive clauses (Table E)	ϵ-/(ϵ)-	ϵτϵ-	ϵ-	ne-
Adjective Verbs (Table H)	ϵ-	ϵτ-/ϵτϵ-	ϵ-	ne-

The Circumstantial converter (sections 27-30) marks a clause as adjoining a predicate to and thereby modifying another ("main") clause or an indefinite noun/pronoun. (The English gerund ["-ing", as in "I found him writing a letter", "Walking home, I met John" or "Having tried everything, I finally chose on this method"] is often the best and structurally apt translation, but a conjunctional rendering ("while ...", "whereas ...", "since ...") is sometimes inevitable.

The Relative converter (sections 31-33) marks a clause as adnominal and attributive (describing) to a definite noun or pronoun.

(*) The converter forms given are the pronominal (presuffixal) and prenominal ones, attested in the corpus drawn upon for this Chrestomathy.

The SECOND TENSE converter (sections 34-38) marks a conjugation form as of lower predicativity than other, non-verbal constituents of its clause, or, in the absence of other pertinent elements, puts into focus ("emphasizes") its own predicate. (The European Cleft Sentence construction ["It is ... that ...", "C'est ... qui/que ..."] is an apt translation, with the Second Tense the "that ..." constituent.)

The PRETERITE converter (sections 39-41) marks the clause as divergent in time, place or actuality from a mainstream frame of reference.

TABLE H

THE ADJECTIVE VERBS: SYNTHETIC VERBAL CLAUSE-FORMS
(Part One, Unit VI: sections 22-26)

H1. ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩ-ϥ "He is good, fair"
ⲛⲁⲛⲉ-/ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩ-ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ "The man is good, fair"
Conversions(*):
CIRCUMSTANTIAL ⲉ-ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩϥ "He being good, fair"
RELATIVE ⲉⲧ-ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩϥ "who is good, fair", ⲉⲧⲉ-ⲛⲁⲛⲉ-/ⲛⲁ-ⲛⲟⲩ- "whose ... is good, fair"
SECOND TENSE ⲉ-ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩϥ ... "It is ... that he is good, fair"
PRETERITE ⲛⲉ-ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩϥ "He was good, fair"

H2. ⲛⲁϣⲱ-ⲟⲩ "They are numerous"
ⲛⲁϣⲉ-ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ "The water is plentiful"
Conversions(*):
CIRCUMSTANTIAL ⲉ-ⲛⲁϣⲱⲟⲩ "they being numerous"
RELATIVE ⲉⲧ-ⲛⲁϣⲱⲟⲩ "who are numerous", ⲉⲧⲉ-ⲛⲁϣⲉ-/ⲛⲁϣⲱ- "whose ... are numerous"

H3. ⲛⲁⲁ(ⲁ)-ϥ "He is great"
Conversions(*):
CIRCUMSTANTIAL ⲉ-ⲛⲁⲁ(ⲁ)ϥ "he being great"
RELATIVE ⲉⲧ-ⲛⲁⲁ(ⲁ)ϥ "who is great"
SECOND TENSE ⲉ-ⲛⲁⲁ(ⲁ)ϥ ... "It is ... that he is great"

H4. ⲛⲉⲥⲱ-ϥ "He is beautiful", ⲛⲉⲥⲉ-ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ "The man is beautiful"

H5. ⲛⲉⲃⲱ-ϥ "He is ugly"
Conversions(*):
CIRCUMSTANTIAL ⲉ-ⲛⲉⲥⲱϥ "He being beautiful"
RELATIVE ⲉⲧ-ⲛⲉⲥⲱϥ "who is beautiful"

(*) The forms given are those actually attested in the source material; the wanting prenominal forms, converters (and some other Adjective Verbs) do occur outside this corpus

TABLE I.

LEXICAL VERB MORPHOLOGY INFINITIVE/STATIVE FORMAL CLASSES(*)

NOTE the following "principal parts" of the Coptic verb lexeme:

(a) The **absolute** (dictionary entry) form or state of the **infinitive**:

ⲥⲱⲧⲡ̄	"choose"
ⲕⲱⲧ	"build"
ⲡⲱⲧ	"run"
ⲧⲁⲙⲟ	"inform"
ⲥⲟⲗⲥⲗ̄	"comfort"
ϩⲗⲟϭ	"be sweet"
ⲉⲓⲣⲉ	"do, make"
ⲉⲓ	"come, go"

(b) The **(pre)nominal** or **construct** form or state of the **infinitive**, occurring before a nominal, proper-name or demonstrative/indefinite/interrogative-pronoun direct object (marked in the dictionary by -: ⲥⲉⲧⲡ-):

ⲥⲉⲧⲡ-	"choose (a man)"
ⲕⲉⲧ-	"build (a house)"
ⲧⲁⲙⲉ-	"inform (a man)"
ⲥⲗ̄ⲥⲗ̄-	"comfort (a man)"
ⲣ̄-	"do (a work)"

Note the characteristic ⲉ vowel, replaced by superlineation over sonorants.

(c) The **pronominal** form or state of the **infinitive** occurring before a suffix-pronoun direct object (marked in the dictionary by =: ⲥⲟⲧⲡ=):

ⲥⲟⲧⲡ=	"choose (him)"
ⲕⲟⲧ=	"build (it)"
ⲧⲁⲙⲟ=	"inform (him)"
ⲥⲗ̄ⲥⲱⲗ=	"comfort (him)"
ⲁⲁ=	"do (it)"

Note the characteristic ⲟ vowel in regular verbs, corresponding to ⲁ in the environment of original laryngal consonants or ϩ.

(*) as represented in the source material for the Chrestomathy. Note that verbs of Greek origin are invariable and have only the dictionary entry form

OBS.

(1) Forms (a) to (c) are "states" of the infinitive, which has all syntactic properties of a noun (e.g. can be combined with the articles).

(2) Forms (b) and (c) are excluded from the durative present (Table F1) for a definite and indefinite (not zero-determinated) nominal object, form (c) excluded altogether from the durative present (the "Stern-Jernstedt Rule")

(3) Form (a) of intransitive verbs (esp. verbs expressing motion, posture or quality) is excluded from the durative present with the stative (form (d) below) taking its place as predicate.

(d) The **stative** or qualitative, occurring only as predicate in the durative conjugation (Table F), and, properly speaking, not a lexeme at all (**not an "infinitive"**). The stative, marked in the dictionary by a superscript crux (ⲥⲟⲧⲡ†), expresses "being in a PASSIVE STATE (for transitive verbs) or COURSE OF ACTION or CONDITION (for intransitives)"

ⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄	"(is) chosen"
ⲕⲏⲧ	"(is) built"
ⲡⲏⲧ	"(is) running"
ⲧⲁⲙⲏⲩ	"(is) informed"
ⲥⲁ̄ⲥⲱⲗ	"(is) comforted" (also ⲥⲗⲟⲗⲧ̄)
ϩⲟⲗⲟ̄	"(is) sweet" (dur. present)
ⲟ	"(is) done"
ⲛⲏⲩ	"(is) coming, going"

The stative is the distinctive form of the morphological verb class.

(TABLE I)

CLASSIFICATION(*)

Note the following vowel alternations:
ⲱ → ⲟⲩ following the nasal consonants ⲛ and ⲙ
ⲟ → ⲁ immediately preceding the laryngal consonant ϩ and some cases of the "glottal stop" consonant (in which case we usually have ⲉ for ⲏ)

Note also:
(1) ⲟⲩ may be a root consonant;
(2) a root consonant may be realized as zero (i.e. absent in writing);
(3) final ⲉ does not affect the assignment of a root to Classes II and II;
(4) a "broken syllable" (i.e. vowel reduplicated), often with an ⲁ-vowel corresponding to ⲟ elsewhere, is indicative of a "glottal stop" consonant.

Class I: Three-consonant roots

ⲥⲱⲧⲡ̄ "choose" ⲥⲉⲧⲡ- ⲥⲟⲧⲡ - ⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ˈ
ⲟⲩⲱⲛϩ̄ "appear", "show" ⲟⲩⲉⲛϩ- ⲟⲩⲟⲛϩ - ⲟⲩⲟⲛϩ̄ˈ
ⲱⲛϩ̄ "live" ⲟⲛϩ̄ˈ
ⲙⲟⲩⲟⲩⲧ̄ "kill" ⲙⲉⲩⲧ- ⲙⲟⲟⲩⲧ - ⲙⲟⲟⲩⲧ̄ˈ
ⲡⲱϩⲧ̄ "bend, throw down, pour" ⲡⲉϩⲧ- ⲡⲁϩⲧ- ⲡⲁϩⲧ̄ˈ

Class II: Two-consonants roots

ⲕⲱⲧ "build" ⲕⲉⲧ- ⲕⲟⲧ - ⲕⲏⲧˈ
ϩⲱⲡ "hide" ϩⲉⲡ- ϩⲟⲡ - ϩⲏⲡˈ
ⲡⲱⲧ "run" ⲡⲏⲧˈ
ⲙⲟⲩⲣ "bind" ⲙⲉⲣ-(ⲙⲣ̄-) ⲙⲟⲣ - ⲙⲏⲣˈ
ⲙⲟⲩϩ "fill" ⲙⲉϩ- ⲙⲁϩ - ⲙⲉϩˈ
ⲱⲡ "count" ⲉⲡ- ⲟⲡ - ⲏⲡˈ
ⲕⲱ "leave, lay" ⲕⲁ- ⲕⲁⲁ - ⲕⲏˈ
ⲫⲱⲧⲉ "wipe (out)" ⲫⲉⲧ- ⲫⲟⲧ - ⲃⲏⲧˈ

(*) Not in agreement with Stern's eight classes. The correspondence is as follows: our Class I = Stern's Class VI; II = Stern's I; III = Stern's II; IV = Stern's VIII; V = Stern's V; VI = Stern's VII; VII = Stern's III. The infinitives quoted are representative examples, to illustrate the specific morphology of the classes.

CLASS III: medial "broken syllable" (glottal stop) roots

ⲧⲱⲱⲃⲉ	"repay" ⲧⲉⲃⲉ- ⲧⲟⲟⲃ- ⲧⲟⲟⲃⲉ'
ⲡⲱⲱⲛⲉ	"turn, pervert" ⲡⲉⲛⲉ- ⲡⲟⲟⲛⲉ- ⲡⲟⲟⲛⲉ'
ⲧⲱⲱⲙⲉ	"fit, be suitable" ⲧⲟⲟⲙⲉ'
ⲫⲱⲱⲧ	"cut" ⲫⲉⲧ- ⲫⲁⲁⲧ- ⲫⲁⲁⲧ'

CLASS IV: "reduplicated syllable" roots:

ⲥⲟⲗⲥⲗ̄	"comfort" ⲥⲗ̄ⲥⲗ̄- ⲥⲗ̄ⲥⲱⲗ- ⲥⲗⲥⲱⲗ' ⲥⲗⲥⲟⲗⲧ̄'
ⲫⲧⲟⲣⲧⲣ̄	"trouble" ⲫⲧⲣ̄ⲧⲣ̄- ⲫⲧⲣ̄ⲧⲱⲣ- ⲫⲧⲣ̄ⲧⲱⲣ'
ⲥⲕⲟⲣⲕⲣ̄	"roll" ⲥⲕ̄ⲣⲕ̄ⲣ- ⲥⲕ̄ⲣⲕⲱⲣ- ⲥⲕⲣⲕⲱⲣ' ⲥⲕⲣⲕⲟⲣⲧ̄'
ⲛⲟⲃⲛⲉⲃ	"reproach" ⲛⲉⲃⲛⲥⲃ- ⲛⲉⲃⲛⲟⲩⲃ-

CLASS V: ⲧ--ⲟ pattern roots: causative lexemes

ⲧⲁⲙⲟ	"inform" ⲧⲁⲙⲉ- ⲧⲁⲙⲟ- ⲧⲁⲙⲓⲩ'
ⲧⲥⲁⲃⲟ	"teach" ⲧⲥⲁⲃⲉ- ⲧⲥⲁⲃⲟ- ⲧⲥⲁⲃⲏⲩ'
ⲧⲟⲩⲭⲟ	"save, cause to be hale" ⲧⲟⲩⲭⲉ- ⲧⲟⲩⲭⲟ- ⲧⲟⲩⲭⲏⲩ'
ⲭⲡⲟ	"beget, cause to exist" ⲭⲡⲉ- ⲭⲡⲟ-
ⲕⲧⲟ	"return, cause to turn" ⲕⲧⲉ- ⲕⲧⲟ- ⲕⲧⲏⲩ'

CLASS VI: "ϩⲗⲟϭ" — quality, state or condition (physical or psychological)

ϩⲗⲟϭ	"be sweet" ϩⲟⲗϭ̄'
ⲛ̄ⲫⲟⲧ	"be hard, severe" ⲛⲁⲫⲧ̄'
ⲙ̄ⲧⲟⲛ	"rest (oneself)" ⲙⲟⲧⲛ̄'
ⲙ̄ⲕⲁϩ	"be hurt, ache" ⲙⲟⲕϩ̄'

CLASS VII: "ⲭⲓⲥⲉ" "*j*-absolute" roots, with final ⲉ alternating with final -ⲧ in pronominal state:

ⲭⲓⲥⲉ	"raise" ⲭⲉⲥ- ⲭⲉⲥⲧ- ⲭⲁⲥⲧ- ⲭⲟⲥⲉ'
ⲣⲓⲕⲉ	"bend" ⲣⲉⲕ- ⲣⲉⲕⲧ- ⲣⲟⲕⲉ' ⲣⲁⲕⲉ'
ⲉⲓⲛⲉ	"bring" ⲛ̄- ⲛ̄ⲧ-

IRREGULAR CLASS (selection):

ⲥⲓⲣⲉ	"do, make" ⲣ̄- ⲁⲁ- ⲟ'
ϯ	"give" ϯ ⲧⲁⲁ- ⲧⲟ'
ⲭⲓ	"take" ⲭⲓ- ⲭⲓⲧ-
ⲥϩⲁⲓ	"write" ⲥϩⲁⲓ- ⲥⲉϩ- ⲥⲁϩ- ⲥⲏϩ'

ⲉⲓⲙⲉ	"know"
ⲱⲙ̄ⲱⲉ	"serve" ⲱⲙ̄ⲱⲉ- ⲱⲙ̄ⲱⲏⲧ-
ⲃⲱⲕ	"go" ⲛⲁ!
ⲉⲓ	"come, go" ⲛⲏⲩ!
ⲃⲉⲡⲏ	"hurry"
ϩⲙⲟⲟⲥ	"sit"
ⲁϩⲉⲣⲁⲧ-	"stand"
ⲙⲟⲩ	"die"
ⲁⲙⲁϩⲧⲉ	"hold"
ⲱⲟⲩⲱⲟⲩ	"pride (oneself)"

GLOSSARY

A. GLOSSARY OF MORPHEMES (GRAMMATICAL ELEMENTS)

This glossary includes elements of both native and Greek origin, bound morphemes (e.g. articles, conjugation bases, converters, prepositions, prefix and suffix pronouns, enclitic and proclitic pronouns, auxiliary verbs, derivational prefixes, negativers, etc.); personal, indefinite, demonstrative and interrogative pronouns; particles, conjuctions, adverbs; Adjective Verbs; existential and possession statements, and more. Numbers refer to pages of Crum's Coptic Dictionary. The arrangement is alphabetical, by consonants and then vowels (as in Crum's *Dictionary*)

NB: (-) following a morpheme means "**prefixed** to a noun or pronoun"; (=), "attached to a suffix-pronoun".

ⲁ-	affirmative perfect base
ⲁ-	prefix of affirmative imperative (for certain verbs)
ⲁ-	"about ..." (with numbers or quantities)
ⲁ-	rare variant of preposition ϵ-
ⲁⲗⲗⲁ	(adv.) but
ⲁⲗⲗⲟ ... ⲁⲗⲗⲟ ...	"there is a difference between ... and ..."
... ⲁⲛ, ⲛ̄- ... ⲁⲛ	negativer of nexus in non-verbal clauses
ⲁⲛ-, ⲁⲛⲛ̄-	"We are...", proclitic subject pronoun in Nominal Sentence, 1st plur.
ⲁⲛⲛ̄-	"I am ...": proclitic subject pronoun in Nominal Sentence, 1st sgl.
ⲁⲛⲟⲕ	personal pronoun, 1st sgl. "I"
... ⲁⲛⲟⲕ	reinforcer: "... for my part" (French *(quant) à moi*)
ⲁⲛⲟⲛ	personal pronoun, 1st plur. "we"
... ⲁⲛⲟⲛ	reinforcer: "... for our part" (French *(quant) à nous*)
ⲁⲛⲧⲓ	(prep.) against, instead of
ⲁⲣⲁ	part. introducing rhetorical question: "Is it the case that ...?
ⲁⲣⲉ-	2nd sgl. fem. variant of perfect base

ⲁⲧ-	privative prefix: "-less", "un-" (18b)
ⲁⲩⲱ	(adv.) and, additionally (19b)
ⲁϣ	(interr. pronoun) which? what? (22a)
	ⲛ̄ⲁϣ ⲛ̄ϩⲉ how?
ⲁⲭⲛ̄-, ⲉⲭⲛ̄-	(prep.) without; presuffixal ⲁⲭⲛ̄ⲧ- (25b)
ⲁⲭⲛ̄ⲧ-	see ⲁⲭⲛ̄-
...ⲅⲁⲣ	causal-explicative clause-connecting particle ("for ...")
...ⲇⲉ	faintly adversative clause-connecting particle ("and, but")
ⲉ-	circumstantial converter
ⲉ-	Second Tense converter
ⲉ-	(prep.) to, against; marking object of verbs of perception; introducing infinitive; presuffixal ⲉⲣⲟ-
ⲉ-...ⲉ-	affirmative optative base
ⲉ-...ⲧⲙ̄-	negative Contitional base (rare)
ⲉ-...ϣⲁⲛ-	Conditional base
ⲉⲃⲟⲗ	(adv.) out
ⲉⲓⲙⲏⲧⲓ	(conj.) unless
ⲉⲛⲉ-	remote condition marker ("If I had ...")
ⲉⲛⲉ-	interrogation marker
ⲉⲛⲧ(ⲁ-), ⲛ̄ⲧ(ⲁ-)	relative converter with affirmative perfect
ⲉⲛⲧ(ⲁ-), ⲛ̄ⲧ(ⲁ-)	Second Tense converter with affirmative perfect
ⲉⲛϩⲟⲥⲟⲛ, ⲛ̄ϩⲟⲥⲟⲛ	(conj, adv.) as long as ...
ⲉⲣⲉ-	form before noun, 2nd sgl. fem., indef., interrog. and demonstrative pronouns of (1) affirmative Optative, (2) circumstantial present, (3) Second Present
ⲉⲣⲁⲧ-	(prep.) to ... (person, with movement)
ⲉⲣⲟ-	see ⲉ- (prep.)
ⲉⲣϣⲁⲛ-	Conditional base before nominal, 2nd sgl. fem., inter., indef. and demonstrative pronoun actor
ⲉⲧ-, ⲉⲧⲉ-	relative converter
ⲉⲧⲉ-	Second Tense converter (with negative perfect)
ⲉⲧⲃⲉ-	(prep.) about, because of (61a); presuffixal ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲏⲧ-; ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ why?

ⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉ-	relative converter in the present and future. before nominal, 2nd sgl. fem., interrog., indef. and demonstrative pronoun actor
ⲉⲧⲛ̄-	(prep.) to (the hands of) (477a); presuffixal ⲉⲧⲟⲟⲧ-
ⲉⲱ-	to be able to (with inf.); ⲱ- after vowel
ⲉⲱⲱⲡⲉ	introducing conditional clause: "Should it be the case that ...", "Be it ..., be it ..."
ⲉⲱⲭⲉ-	assumptive "conditional" prefix: "If (as we know) ...", "Granted that ...", "Given that ...", "Even though ..."
	ϩⲱⲥ ⲉⲱⲭⲉ- as if
ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ	(adv.) in, inside
ⲉϩⲣⲛ̄-	(prep.) in the face of ... (649a); presuffixal ⲉϩⲣⲁ-
ⲉϩⲛⲁ-/ⲉϩⲛⲉ-	see ϩⲛⲁ
ⲥϩⲣⲁⲓ	(adv.) up (to), down (to)
ⲥⲭⲛ̄-	(prep.) on, onto (757a); presuffixal ⲉⲭⲱ-
ⲉⲭⲛ̄-, ⲁⲭⲛ̄-	(prep.) without (25b); presuffixal ⲉⲭⲛ̄ⲧ-, ⲁⲭⲛ̄ⲧ-
ⲉⲭⲛ̄ⲧ-	see ⲉⲭⲛ̄- (prep.) without
ⲏ, ⲏⲉ	(conj.) disjunctive: or
ⲏ	introducing subsequent rhetorical question: "Or is it the case that ...?"
ⲑⲥ (ϯ-ϩⲉ)	ⲛ̄ⲑⲉ, ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲑⲉ as ..., like ... ("in/according to the manner of .../that ...") (638b)
-ⲓ-, -ⲉⲓ-, -ⲓ, -ⲥⲓ	1st sgl. suffix pronoun "I", "me"
ⲉⲓⲉ-	"then ..." (introducing main clause after ⲉⲱⲭⲉ-)
ⲉⲓⲥ-, ⲉⲓⲥϩⲏⲏⲧⲉ	"Here is ...", presentative (85a)
ⲉⲓⲧⲉ ... ⲉⲓⲧⲉ ...	(conj.) disjunctive: either ... or ...
ⲕ-	2nd sgl. masc. prefix pronoun: "you" (in durative pattern)
-ⲕ- -ⲕ	2nd sgl. masc. suffix pronoun "you"
ⲕⲉ, ⲃⲉ-	(an)other, ... too; plur. ⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ (90b)
	-ⲣ̄ⲡⲕⲉ- see ⲣ̄-
ⲕⲁⲓⲣⲁⲣ	particle "for indeed"
ⲕⲁⲛ	(adv., conj.) even-though;-at least (with imperative and jussive)

	ⲕⲁⲛ ... ⲕⲁⲛ ... "Be it ..., be it ..."
ⲕⲁⲧⲁ-	(prep.) according to; presuffixal ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲣⲟ-
ⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ	see ⲕⲉ-
ⲗⲁⲁⲩ	anything, something (146a)
ⲙⲁ-	imperative prefix of causative verbs ("ⲙⲁⲧⲁ-ⲙⲟⲓ") tell me!
ⲙⲏ, ⲙⲏⲧⲓ	introducing rhetorical question ("Is it not the case that?")
ⲙⲉ-	negative aorist base, presuffixal
... ⲙ̄ⲙⲓⲛ ⲙ̄ⲙⲟ-	reinforcer: "... (him)self"
ⲙ̄ⲙⲛ̄-, ⲙⲛ̄-	"There is not ...", "There does not exist ...": statement of non-existence
ⲙⲛ̄-	(prep.) with; presuffixal ⲛⲙ̄ⲙⲁ-, 2nd sgl. fem. ⲛⲙ̄ⲙⲉ (169b)
	between nouns, coordinating: "... and ..."
... ⲙⲉⲛ, ⲙⲛ̄	particle, approx. "on the other hand, ..."
ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲛ	sentence-word: "No" (168a)
ⲙⲛ̄ⲛ̄ⲥⲁ-	(prep.) after, "following" (of time) (314b); presuffixal ⲙⲛ̄ⲛ̄ⲥⲱ-
ⲙⲛ̄ⲧ-	(with noun or infinitive) prefix deriving abstract nouns ("-ness", "-ship", "-dom") (176a)
(ⲙ̄)ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲁ-/(ⲙ̄)ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲉ-	"(He/the man) has not: statement of negative possession (167b)
ⲙ̄ⲡⲉ-	negative perfect base (presuffixal)
	negative perfect base, before nominal, 2nd sgl. fem., indef., interrog. and demonstrative pronoun actor
ⲙⲏⲡⲟⲧⲉ	(adv., conj.) lest
ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲧ-	"not yet" base, presuffixal
ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲧⲉ-	"not yet" base, before nominal, 2nd sgl. fem., indef., interrog. and demonstrative pronoun actor
ⲙ̄ⲡⲣ̄-	negative imperative prefix, with infinitive ("Do not ...")
ⲙ̄ⲡⲣ̄ⲧⲣⲉ-	negative causative imperative (jussive) prefix, with infinitive ("let him not ..."); 1st sgl. ⲙⲡⲣ̄ⲧⲣⲁ-
ⲙⲁⲣⲉ-	causative imperative (jussive) prefix ("Let him ...")

ⲙⲉⲣⲉ-	negative aorist base, before nominal, 2nd sgl. fem., indef., interrog. and demonstrative pronoun actor
ⲙⲉⲱⲁ-/ⲙⲉⲱⲉ-	"(He/the man) does not know" (201b) ⲙⲉⲱⲁⲕ sentence-word: "perhaps"
ⲙⲉⲱⲱⲉ	"It is not right", negative of ⲱⲱⲉ
...ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁ-	reinforcer: "...(he) alone", "...(he) by himself"
ⲛ̄- (ⲙ̄-)	"*nota relationis*" interrelating two nouns: "of"
ⲛ̄- (ⲙ̄-)	(prep.) as (predicative: "be as...", "make...into" presuffixal ⲙ̄ⲙⲟ-
ⲛ̄- (ⲙ̄!)	(prep.) by, in (215a); presuffixal ⲙ̄ⲙⲟ-
ⲛ̄- (ⲙ̄-)	(prep.), direct object; presuffixal ⲙ̄ⲙⲟ-
ⲛ̄- (ⲙ̄-)	(prep.) to (person) (216a); presuffixal ⲛⲁ-, ⲛⲏ-, 2nd sgl. fem. ⲛⲏ, ⲛⲉ
ⲛ̄- (ⲙ̄-) (ⲛⲉ-)	definite article, plural ("the...")
ⲛ̄-	base of conjunctive, before a pronoun
ⲛ̄-...ⲁⲛ, ...ⲁⲛ	negativer of nexus in non-verbal clauses
-ⲛ̄- -ⲛ̄	1st plur. suffix pronoun, "we", "us"
ⲛⲁ-	possessive article, 1st sgl. possessor, plural possessed "my..." (French *mes...*)
ⲛⲁ-	possessive pronoun, plural "they of..."
ⲛⲁ-	see ⲛ̄- (prep.) to.
-ⲛⲁ-	infix or auxiliary of future tense
ⲛⲁⲁ(ⲁ)-	Adjective Verb "(He/the man) is great" (218b)
ⲛⲉ-	preterite converter
ⲛⲉ-	possessive article, plural possessed: ⲛⲉⲕ- ⲛⲉϥ- ⲛⲉⲥ- ⲛⲉⲛ- ⲛⲉⲧⲛ̄- ⲛⲉⲩ- "your (masc.), his, her, our, your (plur.), their" (French *tes, ses, nos, vos, leurs*)
ⲛⲁⲓ	demonstrative pronoun, plural "these (ones)"
ⲛⲉⲓ-	demonstrative article, plural "these..."
...ⲛⲉ	"They are", plural enclitic subject in Nominal Sentence
ⲛⲏ	"to you", 2nd sgl. fem. form of prep. ⲛ̄-/ⲛⲁ-
ⲛⲏ	demonstrative pronoun, plural "those (ones)"
ⲛⲓ-	demonstrative article, plural "those..." (emotional)
ⲛⲟⲩ-	possessive article, 2nd sgl. fem. possessor: "your" (French *tes*, fem.)

NOY-	possessive pronoun, plural possessed: "mine, yours, his, ours, yours, theirs" (French *les miens, les tiens, les siens, les nôtres, les vôtres, les leurs*)
N̄BA̅A-	(prep.) except, beside (35a)
NIM	interrogative pronoun: who? (225b); indefinite "so-and-so"
...NIM	determinator and distributive quantifier: all ..., every ...
NM̄MA-	see (prep.) MN̄-
NANOY-/NANE-	Adjective Verb: "(He/the man) is good, fair" (227a)
N̄NA-	1st sgl., negative Optative base
N̄NE-	negative Optative base
NEPE-	preterite converter before nominal, 2nd sgl. fem., indef., interrog. and demonstrative pronoun actor
NECW-/NECE-	Adjective Verb: "(He/the man) is beautiful" (228b)
N̄CA-	(prep.) after (314a); presuffixal N̄CW-
NAIAT-	sentence-word: "Blessed is ..." (74a)
N̄T(A-), ENT(A-)	Second Tense converter before affirmative perfect
N̄T(A-), ENT(A-)	relative converter before affirmative perfect
N̄TA-, TA-	1st sgl. of conjunctive
N̄TE-	conjunctive base before nominal, 2nd sgl. fem., indef., interrog. and demonstrative pronoun actor
N̄TE-	(prep.) of, with (possession and appurtenance); presuffixal N̄TA-
N̄TE-	"you (fem.) are", proclitic subject pronoun in Nominal Sentence, 2nd sgl. fem.
N̄TO	personal pronoun, 2nd sgl. fem. "you"
...N̄TO-	reinforcer: "... for (his part" (French *"(quant) à lui"*)
N̄TOK	personal pronoun, 2nd sgl. masc. "you"
N̄TK̄-	"You (masc.) are", proclitic subject pronoun in Nominal Sentence, 2nd sgl. masc.
N̄TN̄-	(prep.) in the hands of ...; presuffixal N̄TOOT-, N̄TOT-; before 2nd plur. pronoun
N̄TEPE-	base of Temporal, prenominal & presuffixal
N̄TOC	personal pronoun, 3rd sgl. fem. "she"

ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄-	"You (plur.) are ...", proclitic subject pronoun in Nominal Sentence, 2nd plural.
ⲛ̄ⲧⲱⲧⲛ̄	personal pronoun, 2nd plural "you"
ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲟⲩ	personal pronoun, 3rd plural "they"
ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲥ	personal pronoun, 3rd singular masculine "he"
...ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲥ	adversative particle: approx. "on the other hand"
ⲛⲁϣⲱ-/ⲛⲁϣⲉ-	Adjective Verb: "(They/the people) are numerous"
(ⲙ̄)ⲛⲁϩⲣⲛ̄-	(prep.) before, in the presence of: presuffixal (ⲛ̄)ⲛⲁϩⲣⲁ-
ⲙ̄ϩⲟⲥⲟⲛ, ⲉⲛϩⲟⲥⲟⲛ	(conj.) as long as ...
ⲛ̄ϩⲏⲧ-	presuffixal of ϩⲛ̄- (prep.) in
ⲛⲉⲃⲱ-	Adjective Verb: "(He) is ugly"
ⲛ̄ⲃⲓ-	introducing nominal specification of 3rd person pronominal actor: "namely ..."
ⲟⲛ	(adv.) again, still
ⲡ- (ⲡⲉ-)	definite article, sgl. masculine, "the" ⲡ with relative: "the one who ..."
ⲡⲁ-	possessive pronoun, sgl. masc., "he of ..."
...ⲡⲉ	"He is ...", "It is ...", sgl. masc. enclitic subject in Nominal Sentence
...ⲡⲥ	element accompanying the preterite converter; often "the background situation is, that ..."
ⲡⲉ-	possessive article, sgl. masc. possessed: ⲡⲉⲕ- (ⲡⲕ̄-) ⲡⲉϥ- ⲡⲉⲥ- ⲡⲉⲛ- ⲡⲉⲧⲛ̄- ⲡⲉⲩ- "your (masc., her, her, our, your (plur.), their" (French *ton, son, nôtre, vôtre, leur*)
ⲡⲁ-	possessive article, 1st sgl. possessor, masc. sgl. possessed: "my ..." (French *mon*)
ⲡⲁⲓ	demonstrative pronoun, sgl. masc., "this (one)"
ⲡⲉⲓ-	demonstrative article, sgl. masc., "this ..."
ⲡⲏ	demonstrative pronoun: sgl. masc.: "that (one)"
ⲡⲓ-	demonstrative art., sgl. masc. "that ..." (emotional) ⲡⲓ-...ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲱⲧ "the very same ..."
ⲡⲟⲩ-	possessive article, 2nd sgl. fem. possessor, sgl. masc. possessed: "your ..." (French *ton*, fem.)

ⲡⲱ-	possessive pronoun, sgl. masc. possessed: "mine, yours, his, hers, ours, yours, theirs" (French *le mien, le tien, le sien, le nôtre, le vôtre, le leur*)
ⲡⲁⲣⲁ-	(prep.) beside, alongside, against
ⲡⲣⲟⲥ-	(prep.) for (a period of time)
ⲡⲉϫⲁ-/ⲡⲉϫⲉ-	"(He/the man) said (285a)
ⲣ̄-	with noun: auxiliary, deriving verbs from nouns: "do ...", "make ...", "be, act as ..." (prenom. of ⲉⲓⲣⲉ)
-ⲣ̄ⲡⲕⲉ- "to (do) also ..."	with infinitive or stative
-ⲣ̄ⲱⲣ̄ⲡ(ⲛ̄)- "to (do) first ..."	with infinitive or stative
-ⲣ̄ϩⲟⲩⲉ- "to (do) rather ..."	with infinitive or stative
ⲣⲱ	particle: "at all", "really", "... indeed"; often marking the preceding element as focal
ⲣⲙ̄-, ⲣⲙ̄ⲛ̄-	"man of ...". With placenames: prefix forming local nouns. With nouns: deriving nouns from nouns (295a)
ⲣⲉⲫ-	"man who ...". With infinitives: prefix forming agent nouns from verb (cf. English *-er, -or*). (295a)
ⲥ-	3rd sgl. fem. prefix pronoun: "she", "it" (in the durative pattern)
-ⲥ	3rd sgl. fem. suffix pronoun: "she", "it"
ⲥⲉ	sentence-word: "yes" (316a)
ⲥⲉ-	3rd plural prefix pronoun: "they" (in the durative pattern)
-ⲥⲉ	3rd plural objective pronoun: "them"
-ⲥⲟⲩ	3rd plural objective pronoun: "them"
ⲥⲁ(ⲛ-)	"man of ...", "maker/seller of ...", deriving prefix (316a)
ⲧ-(ⲧⲉ-)	definite article, sgl. fem.: "the"
-ⲧ	1st sgl. suffix pronoun (as object, following consonants and doubled vowels)
ⲧⲁ-	possessive article, 1st sgl. possessor, sgl. fem. possessed: "my ..." (French *ma*)
ⲧⲁ-	possessive pronoun, sgl. fem. "she of ..."
ⲧⲁ-, ⲛ̄ⲧⲁ-	1st sgl. form of conjunctive
...ⲧⲉ	"She is ...", "It is ...", sgl. fem. enclitic subject in Nominal Sentence

ⲧⲉ-	2nd sgl. fem. prefix pronoun: "you" (in durative pattern)
ⲧⲉ-	possessive article, sgl. fem. possessed: ⲧⲉⲕ- ⲧⲉⲩ- ⲧⲉⲥ- ⲧⲉⲛ- ⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄- ⲧⲉⲩ- "your (masc.), his, her, our, your (plur.), their ..." (French *ta, sa, nôtre, vôtre, leur*)
ⲧⲁⲓ	demonstrative pronoun, sgl. fem.: "this (one)"
ⲧⲉⲓ-	demonstrative article, sgl. fem., "this ..."
ⲧⲏ	demonstrative pronoun, sgl. fem., "that (one)"
ⲫ-, ⲧⲓ-	demonstrative article, sgl. fem., "that ..." (emotional)
ⲓ-	1st sgl. prefix pronoun: "I" (in durative pattern)
ⲓ-	with noun: auxiliary, deriving verbs from nouns: "give", "cause", "make to ..."
ⲧⲟⲩ-	possessive article, 2nd sgl. fem. possessor, sgl. fem. possessed: "your ..." (French *ta*, fem.)
ⲧⲱ-	possessive pronoun, sgl. fem. possessed: "mine, yours, his, hers, ours, yours, theirs" (French *la mienne, la tienne, la sienne, la nôtre, la vôtre, la leur*)
ⲧⲙ̄-, -ⲧⲙ̄-	negativer; (1) of infinitive (prefixed), (2) of dependent clause base conjugation (infixed)
ⲧⲛ̄-	1st plur. prefix pronoun: "we" (in durative pattern)
-ⲧⲛ̄, -ⲧⲛ̄-	2nd plur. suffix pronoun: "you"
ⲧⲁⲣⲉ- ⲧⲁⲣⲉ-/ⲧⲁⲣ-	future conjunctive base
... ⲧⲏⲣ-	reinforcer: "all (of) ...", "the whole (of) ..."
ⲧⲣⲁ-	1st sgl. form of causative infinitive
ⲧⲣⲉ-	causative infinitive: "to cause him to ...", "to let him ..."
-ⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ̄	2nd plur. pronoun (esp. as object of verb and after prepositions ending in consonant)
ⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄-	2nd plur. prefix pronoun: "you" (in durative pattern)
-ⲧⲉⲧⲛ̄-	2nd plur. suffix pronoun (esp. infixed, following short conjugation bases)
ⲟⲩ	interrogative pronoun: "what?" (467b)
ⲟⲩ-	indefinite article, masc. & fem.: "a ..."
-ⲟⲩ, -ⲩ-	3rd plur. suffix pronoun: "they"
ⲟⲩⲁ	one (masc.) (469a)
ⲟⲩⲉⲓ	one (fem.) (469a)

ⲟⲩⲃⲉ-	(prep.) against (476a); presuffixal ⲟⲩⲃⲏ-
ⲟⲩⲇⲉ	(conj.) neither, nor
ⲟⲩⲕⲟⲩⲛ	particle: doubtlessly; therefore
ⲟⲩⲙⲟⲛⲟⲛ	(adv.) not only
ⲟⲩⲛ̄-	"There is", "There exists", statement of existence (481a)
ⲟⲩⲟⲛ	some(one), any(one); something, anything (482a)
ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲁ-/ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲉ-	"(He/the man) has", verboid of possession (481a)
ⲟⲩⲏⲣ	interrogative pronoun: "how much?" "how many?" "how great?" (488b)
ⲟⲩⲱⲧ	single, in ⲡⲓ- ... ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲱⲧ "the very same ..."
ⲟⲩⲧⲉ	(conj.) neither, nor
ⲟⲩⲧⲉ-	(prep.) between (494b); presuffixal ⲟⲩⲧⲱ-
ⲱ	interjection: O! (esp. in address)
ϣ-, ⲉϣ-	to be able to (with infinitive)
ϣⲁ-	affirmative aorist base
ϣⲁ-	(prep.) (up) to, toward, until (541b); presuffixal ϣⲁⲣⲟ-
-ϣⲁⲛ-	part of conditional base (ⲉ ... ϣⲁⲛ-)
ϣⲁⲛⲧ-	"until ..." base, presuffixal
ϣⲁⲛⲧⲉ-	"until ..." base, before nominal, 2nd sgl. fem., indef., interrog. and demonstrative pronoun actor
ϣⲁⲣⲉ-	affirmative aorist base, before nominal, 2nd sgl. fem., interr. & indef. pronominal actors
-ϣⲣ̄ⲡ(ⲛ̄)-	in -ⲣϣⲣ̄ⲡ(ⲛ̄)-: see ⲣ̄-
ϣϣⲉ	"It is right, befitting"
ⲭⲱⲣⲓⲥ-	(prep.) without
ⲫ-	3rd sgl. masc. prefix pronoun: "he" (in durative pattern)
-ⲫ, -ⲫ-	3rd sgl. masc. suffix pronoun: "he"
ϩⲁ-	(prep.) under for (632a); presuffixal ϩⲁⲣⲟ-
ϩⲓ	(prep.) (up)on, from upon; with (643b); presuffixal ϩⲓⲱⲱ- between zero-determinated nouns, coordinating "... and ..."

...ϩωω-	reinforcer: "... for (his) part", "... (he) too": 1st sgl. ϩω, ϩωωτ, 2nd sgl. fem. ϩωωτϵ, 2nd plur. ϩωττηytn̄
ϩλmoi	interjection: "Would that ...!"
ϩϵn-, ϩn̄-	indefinite article, plural: "some ..."
ϩn̄- (ϩm̄-)	(prep.) in, at (683a); presuffixal n̄ϩητ-
ϩn̄- (ϩm̄-)	(prep.) into, against (685a)
ϩnλ-/ϩnϵ-, ϵϩnλ-/ϵϩnϵ-	"(He/the man) is willing" (690a)
ϩoinϵ, ϩoϵinϵ	indefinite pronoun: some, several, a few
ϩωc-	(prep.) as
ϩωcτϵ	(conj.) so as (to)
ϩητ-	(prep.) of (e.g. in "afraid of ...", "wait for ...") (640b)
ϩhitϵ	see ϵic
ϩitn̄-	(prep.) by (agency of), from (428b); presuffixal ϩitoot-; 2nd plur. ϩitϵ-thytn̄
ϩotan	(conj.) when(ever), as soon as ...
ϩoyϵ-	in -p̄ϩoyϵ-: see p̄-
...ϩωωq	particle: but, on the other hand; at all
ϩaϩ	quantifying pronoun: many
ϩaϩtn̄-	(prep.) with (717a); presuffixal ϩaϩth- ϩath-
ϩixn̄-	(prep.) upon (758b); presuffixal ϩixω-
xϵ-	(conj.) that, so that, saying that
xckaac, xϵkac	(conj.) in order to, so that
xin(n̄)-	(prep.) since (772a)
	xinta- (with the perfect tense)
xn̄-	(conj.) or
...ϭϵ	particle: approx. "then", "therefore" (cf. French *donc*, Greek *oun*) (802a)
ϭϵ-	see kϵ
ϭin-	(with infinitive) deriving abstract action nouns from verbs

B. LEXICAL GLOSSARY

(1) The words in the lexeme glossary are entered after each letter, in the following order: NATIVE WORDS, (2) WORDS OF GREEK ORIGIN, (3) PROPER NAMES. An independent MORPHEME GLOSSARY follows. The native words in the lexeme glossary are arranged by their consonant skeleton (with subarrangement by vowels), according to Crum's method (Coptic Dictionary, Oxford, 1939; also Westendorf, *Koptisches Handwoerterbuch*, Heidelberg 1965-1977, with some minor changes); all other entries (Greek words, Proper Names) are arranged in the Western alphabetic order (initial ϩ not counting as a letter; ⲣ before ⲣ or ⲕ = ⲛ).
Numbers in parentheses following the English equivalents refer to Crum's dictionary, where the full information concerning the lexical item may be found.

(2) The forms and meanings given are those attested in the Chrestomathy, not "in Coptic"; for a comprehensive presentation of forms and semantic synthesis the student is referred to Crum's or Westendorf's dictionaries.

(3) Gender (masc./fem.) is indicated for a noun only when it is either evident in our Coptic text or unambiguously attested elsewhere; the absence of such indication means (a) either gender or (b) ambiguous evidence.

(4) Prenominal and presuffixal forms of verbs and prepositions are marked in the conventional manner, by - and = respectively.

Note the following abbreviations:

adv.	adverb	part.	particle
art.	article	plur.	plural
fem.	feminine	poss.	possessive
imp.	imperative	prep.	preposition
indef.	indefinite	pron.	pronoun
interj.	interjection	sgl.	singular
interr.	interrogative	top.	toponym (placename)
masc.	masculine		

ⲁ-	about ..., approximately (with quantity or number) (1a)
ⲁⲁ-	see ⲉⲓⲣⲉ
ⲁⲃⲱ	fisherman's net (fem.) (2a)
ⲁⲃⲱⲕ	crow; plural ⲁⲃⲟⲟⲕⲉ (2b)
ⲁⲗⲟ-	"Cease!", imper. of ⲗⲟ
ⲁⲗⲟⲩ	youth (masc.) (5a)
ⲁⲙⲁϩⲧⲉ	to hold, have power over (9a)
	(with art.) power, rule (9a)
ⲁⲙⲟⲩ	"Come/go!", imper. of ⲉⲓ
ⲁⲛⲁⲓ	to be pleasing (11a)
	ⲣ-ⲁⲛⲁⲓ be pleasing; imp. ⲁⲣⲓ-ⲁⲛⲁⲓ
	(with art.) beauty (11a)
ⲁⲛⲁⲩ	"See!", imper. of ⲛⲁⲩ
ⲁⲛⲁϣ	oath (masc.) (12b)
	ⲣ-ⲁⲛⲁϣ take an oath
ⲁⲡⲁ	Father (title) (13a)
ⲁⲡⲉ	head (fem.) (13b)
ⲁⲣⲓ-	"Do/make!", imper. of ⲉⲓⲣⲉ
ⲁⲣⲓⲕⲉ	blame (15a)
	ⲟⲛ̄-ⲁⲣⲓⲕⲉ to blame
ⲁⲣⲟⲟⲩⲉ	thistle, thorn (16a)
ⲁⲥⲓⲏⲥ	great size or quantity (fem.) (2a) (ⲁⲓⲁⲓ, to increase, be great)
ⲁⲥⲟⲩ	price, value (fem.)
ⲁⲩⲁⲛ	colour (masc.) (20b)
ⲁϣⲁϩⲟⲙ	to sigh (ⲱϣ) (24b)
ⲁϣⲁⲓ	to be, become numerous, multiply (22b); stative ⲟϣ "(is) numerous, plentiful"
	(with art.) large amount or number
ⲁϣⲏ	multitude, great number (fem.) (22b)
ⲁϥ	meat (masc.) (23a)
ⲁϥ	fly (masc.) (23b)
	ⲁϥⲉⲛⲉⲃⲓⲱ honeybee
ⲁϩⲉ	lifetime, life limit (masc.) (24a)
ⲁϩⲉ(ⲣⲁⲧ-)	see ⲱϩⲉ
ⲁϩⲟ	treasure (masc.) (24b)
ⲁϩⲱⲙ	eagle (masc.) (25b)
ⲁϩⲉⲣⲁⲧ-	to stand (up) (ⲱϩⲉ)
ⲁϩⲏⲩ	see ⲕⲱⲕ ⲁϩⲏⲩ

ΑΒΡΗΝ	childless, sterile person (26b)
ΑΧΙC	"Say (it)!", imp. of ΧΩ

ΑΗΡ, ΑΕΡ	air, sky (masc.)
ΑΓΑΘΟΝ	(the) good, goods (property) (masc.)
ΑΓΑΘΟC/ΟΝ	good
ΑΓΑΠΗ	love, charity (fem.)
ΑΓΙΟΤΑΤΟC	most holy
ΑΓΩΝ	combat (masc.)
ΑΓΡΙΟC/ΟΝ	wild
ΑΙΡΕCIC	heresy (fem.)
ΖΑΙΡΕΤΙΚΟC	heretic
ΑΙCΘΑΝΕΙ	to feel, perceive
ΑΙΤΗΜΑ	request (masc.)
ΑΙΧΜΑΛΩΤΟC	captive, prisoner
ΑΙΩΝ	age, era (masc.)
ΑΚΑΘΑΡCIA	impurity (fem.)
ΑΚΑΘΑΡΤΟC/ΟΝ	impure
ΑΚΡΟΒΥCΤΙΑ	foreskin (fem.)
ΑΛΗΘΩC	truly (adv.)
ΑΛΛΟΤΡΙΟC	alien, foreign
ΑΜΕΛΕΙ	to be indifferent, careless, neglectful
ΑΝΑΓΝΩCΤΗC	reader
ΑΓΓΕΛΟC	angel (masc.)
ΑΝΑΓΚΑΖΕ	to force
ΑΝΑΓΚΑΙΟC/ΟΝ	necessary, important
ΑΝΑΓΚΗ	distress, necessity (fem.)
ΑΝΑΧΩΡΕΙ	to leave, go off
ΑΝΕΧΕ	to bear, suffer with patience
ΑΝΟΜΙΑ	lawlessness (fem.)
ΑΝΟΜΟC/ΟΝ	lawless
ΑΝΟΧΗ	forbearance (fem.)
ΑΝΤΙ	(prep.) against, instead of
ΑΞΙΟΥ	to demand, expect, require
ΑΠΑΝΘΡΩΠΟC	inhuman
ΑΠΑΝΤΑ	to encounter
ΑΠΑΤΑ	to err, mislead
ΑΠΑΤΗ	error (fem.)
ΑΠΕΙΛΗ	promise, threat (fem.)
ΑΠΙCΤΟC	unbelieving, infidel

ϩⲁⲡⲗⲱⲥ	(adv.) simply
ⲁⲡⲟⲇⲉⲓⲝⲓⲥ	argument, proof (fem.)
ⲁⲡⲟⲑⲏⲕⲏ	storehouse, barn (fem.)
ⲁⲡⲟⲗⲟⲅⲓⲁ	excuse, explanation (fem.)
ⲁⲡⲟⲥⲧⲟⲗⲟⲥ	apostle (masc.)
ⲁⲡⲟⲧⲁⲥⲥⲉ	to renounce, give up
ⲁⲣⲅⲟⲥ	idle, slothful
ⲁⲣⲉ̀ⲧⲏ	virtue (fem.)
ⲁⲣⲓⲥⲧⲟⲛ	breakfast (masc.)
ⲁⲣⲛⲁ	to deny
ⲁⲣⲭⲁⲅⲅⲉⲗⲟⲥ	archangel
ⲁⲣⲭⲁⲓⲟⲥ/ⲟⲛ	of old
ⲁⲣⲭⲏ	office, authority (fem.)
ⲁⲣⲭⲏ	beginning, origin (fem.)
ⲁⲣⲭⲉⲓ	to rule
ⲁⲣⲭⲉⲓ	to begin (ⲛ̄- to)
ⲁⲣⲭⲓⲉⲡⲓⲥⲕⲟⲡⲟⲥ	archbishop (masc.)
ⲁⲣⲭⲓⲉⲣⲉⲩⲥ	archpriest (masc.)
ⲁⲣⲭⲱⲛ	magistrate, office-holder, archon (masc.)
ⲁⲥⲉⲃⲏⲥ	impious person
ⲁⲥⲡⲁⲍⲉ	to greet, salute
ⲁⲩⲅⲟⲩⲥⲧⲁⲗⲓⲟⲥ	prefect, *augustalis* (masc.)
ⲁⲩⲝⲁⲛⲉ	to grow, increase
ⲁⲫⲟⲣⲙⲏ	incitement (fem.)

PROPER NAMES:

ⲁⲃⲉⲗ	Abel
ⲁⲃⲣⲁϩⲁⲙ	Abraham
ⲁⲇⲁⲙ	Adam
ⲁⲍⲁⲣⲓⲁⲥ	Azarias
ⲁⲛⲁⲛⲓⲁⲥ	Ananias
ⲁⲛⲇⲣⲉⲁⲥ	Andrew
ⲁⲑⲁⲛⲁⲥⲓⲟⲥ	Athanasius
ⲁⲝⲉⲝⲁⲛⲇⲣⲟⲥ	Alexander
ⲁⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲉ	Amenti, the Underworld, Hades (masc. top.)
ⲁⲛⲛⲁ	Ann
ⲁⲡⲁ	Father (title)
ⲁⲡⲟⲗⲗⲱⲛ	Apollo

ⲃ (BETA)

ⲃⲱ	tree (fem.) (28a)
ⲃⲏⲃ	den. cave (masc.) (28b)
ⲃⲁⲗⲃⲉ	to be insipid (28b)
ⲃⲱⲕ	to go (29a)
ⲃⲉⲕⲉ	wages (masc.) (30b)
ⲃⲁⲗ	eye (masc.) (31b)
ⲃⲟⲗ	outer part (masc.) (33b)
	ⲉⲃⲟⲗ (adv.) out; ϩⲓⲃⲟⲗ (adv.) outside
	ⲣ̄-ⲃⲟⲗ to escape
	ⲕⲁ-ⲃⲟⲗ to vomit
	ⲛ̄ⲧⲃ̄ⲗⲁ- beside (prep.)
	ⲃⲁⲗ-ϩⲏⲧ simple, frank (715a)
ⲃⲱⲗ	to loosen; to interpret (32b)
	(with art.) interpretation
ⲃ̄ⲃⲓⲗⲉ	grain (fem.) (37b)
ⲃ̄ⲗⲉ	blind person (38a)
	ⲃ̄ⲗⲏ (fem.)
ⲃⲁⲙⲡⲉ	goat (39a)
ⲃⲟⲟⲛⲉ	evil (39b)
	ⲣ̄-ⲃⲟⲟⲛⲉ to be evil, damaging
ⲃ̄ⲛ̄ⲧ	see ⲫ̄ⲛ̄ⲧ
ⲃ̄ⲣⲣⲉ	new, young (43a)
ⲃⲁⲣⲱⲧ	brass (43b)
ⲃⲟⲧⲉ	abomination (fem.) (45b)
ⲃⲁϣⲟⲣ	fox (fem.) (47b)
ⲃⲱϩ	to bend (47b); prenominal ⲃⲉϩ-

ⲃⲁⲡⲧⲓⲥⲙⲁ	baptism (masc.)
ⲃⲁⲣⲃⲁⲣⲟⲥ	barbarian
ⲃⲁⲥⲁⲛⲓⲍⲉ	to torture
ⲃⲁⲥⲁⲛⲟⲥ	torture (masc.)
ⲃⲏⲙⲁ	judgement-seat (masc.)
ⲃⲓⲟⲥ	life, way of life (masc.)
ⲃⲗⲁⲡⲧⲉⲓ	to harm, damage
ⲃⲟⲏⲑⲉⲓ	to aid
ⲃⲟⲏⲑⲉⲓⲁ	aid (fem.)

PROPER NAMES:

ⲃⲁⲃⲩⲗⲱⲛ	Babylon (top.)
ⲃⲁⲕⲁⲛⲟⲥ	Bacanos
ⲃⲁⲣⲁⲭⲓⲁⲥ	Barachias
ⲃⲉⲉⲗⲍⲉⲃⲟⲩⲗ	Belzebub
ⲃⲓⲗⲁⲙⲱⲛ	Belamon, Baal-Hamon (top.)

ⲅ (GAMMA) (no Egyptian lexemes)

ⲅⲁⲙⲟⲥ	wedlock (masc.)
ⲅⲉⲛⲉⲁ	generation (fem.)
ⲅⲉⲛⲟⲓⲧⲟ	"May it come about", "let it be!"
	ⲙⲏ ⲅⲉⲛⲟⲓⲧⲟ "God forbid!"
ⲅⲉⲛⲟⲥ	kind (masc.)
ⲅⲓⲅⲁⲥ	giant
ⲅⲣⲁⲙⲙⲁⲧⲉⲩⲥ	scribe
ⲛⲉ-/ⲧⲉ-ⲅⲣⲁⲫⲏ	the Scripture(s) (fem./plur.)
ⲅⲩⲙⲛⲁⲍⲉ	to examine, dispute

PROPER NAMES:

ⲧ-ⲅⲁⲗⲓⲗⲁⲓⲁ	the Galilee (top.)
ⲧ-ⲅⲉϩⲉⲛⲛⲁ	Hell, Gehenna (fem. top.)
ⲅⲓⲉⲍⲓ	Gehazi
ⲅⲟⲙⲟⲣⲣⲁ	Gomorra (top.)

ⲇ (DELTA) (no Egyptian lexemes)

ⲇⲁⲓⲙⲟⲛⲓⲟⲛ	demon, evil spirit (masc.)
ⲇⲁⲓⲙⲱⲛ	demon (masc.)
ⲇⲉⲓⲡⲛⲟⲛ, ⲇⲓⲡⲛⲟⲛ	dinner (masc.)
ⲡ-ⲇⲓⲁⲃⲟⲗⲟⲥ	the Devil
ⲇⲓⲁⲑⲏⲕⲏ	testament (fem.)
ⲇⲓⲁⲕⲟⲛⲉⲓ	to serve, minister
ⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲛ	the right, just (masc.)
ⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲥ	righteous
ⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲥⲩⲛⲏ	righteousness (fem.)
ⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲱⲙⲁ	act of justice, righteousness; ordinance (masc.)
ⲇⲓⲕⲁⲥⲧⲏⲣⲓⲟⲛ	court of justice (masc.)

ⲁⲓⲕⲁⲥⲧⲏⲥ judge (masc.)
ⲁⲓⲱⲣⲙⲟⲥ persecution (masc.)
ⲁⲟⲕⲓⲙⲁⲍⲉ to put to the test
ⲁⲣⲁⲕⲱⲛ python, serpent (masc.)
ⲁⲣⲁⲡⲉⲧⲏⲥ runaway slave (masc.)
ⲁⲱⲣⲉⲁ gift (fem.)
ⲁⲱⲣⲟⲛ gift (masc.)

ⲉ (EPSILON)

ⲉⲃⲓⲏⲛ poor, wretched person (53a)
ⲉⲃⲟⲧ month (masc.) (53b); plur. ⲉⲃⲟⲧⲉ
ⲉⲃ$\overline{ϣ}$- see ⲱⲃ$\overline{ϣ}$
ⲉⲕⲓⲃⲉ, ⲕⲓⲃⲉ breast (fem.) (54a)
ⲉⲗⲕⲱ sycomore fruit (54b)
ⲉⲙⲏⲣⲉ inundation (fem.) (56a)
ⲉⲙⲁⲧⲉ (adv.) greatly, much (190a)
ⲉⲙⲁⲩ thither (197a); see ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ
ⲉⲛⲧⲏϭ, ⲛ̄ⲧⲏϭ plant (masc.) (233a)
ⲉⲛⲉϩ eternity (57a)
ϣⲁⲉⲛⲉϩ eternally, for ever
ⲉⲣ- = ⲣ̄-; see ⲉⲓⲣⲉ
ⲉⲣϩⲧ to pledge, vow (58a)
ⲉⲣϩⲩ (in possessed plur. ⲛⲉⲛⲉⲣϩⲩ) fellow companions, (we) and others, each other, mutually (59a)
ⲉⲥϩⲧ ground, bottom (masc.) (60a)
(adv.) ⲉⲡⲉⲥϩⲧ, ϩⲓⲡⲉⲥϩⲧ down(wards)
ⲉⲥⲟⲟⲩ sheep (masc.)
ⲉⲧⲡⲱ weight, burden (fem.) (352b)
ⲉⲟⲟⲩ glory, honour (masc.) (62a)
ϫⲓ-ⲉⲟⲟⲩ to be glorified
ⲉϣ- see ϣ-
ⲉϩⲉ ox, cow, cattle (64a); plur. ⲉϩⲟⲟⲩ
ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ (adv.) in(to), towards (686a); see ϩⲟⲩⲛ
ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ (adv.) up/down (698b, 700a); see ϩⲣⲁⲓ

ⲉⲣⲕⲁⲕⲉⲓ to lose heart
ϩⲉⲑⲛⲟⲥ people; (plur.) gentiles

ⲉⲓⲇⲟⲥ	sort, kind, class (masc.)
ⲉⲕⲕⲗⲏⲥⲓⲁ	church (fem.)
ⲉⲗⲁⲭⲓⲥⲧⲟⲥ/ⲟⲛ	least
ϩⲉⲗⲗⲏⲛ	Hellenic, pagan, non-Christian
ϩⲉⲗⲡⲓⲍⲉ	to hope
ϩⲉⲗⲡⲓⲥ	hope (fem.)
ⲉⲅⲕⲣⲁⲧⲉⲩⲉ	to abstain, be continent
ⲉⲅⲕⲣⲁⲧⲏⲥ	continent
ⲉⲛϩⲟⲥⲟⲛ, ⲛ̄ϩⲟⲥⲟⲛ	(adv., conj.) as long as
ⲉⲛⲧⲟⲗⲏ	commandment (fem.)
ⲉϫⲟⲩⲥⲓⲁ	authority (fem.)
	ϯ- ⲉϫⲟⲩⲥⲓⲁ to authourize
ⲉⲡⲁⲓⲛⲟⲩ	to praise, commend
ⲉⲡⲓⲃⲟⲩⲗⲏ	counsel (fem.)
ⲉⲡⲓⲑⲩⲙⲉⲓ	to desire
ⲉⲡⲓⲑⲩⲙⲓⲁ	desire (fem.)
ⲉⲡⲓⲕⲁⲗⲉⲓ	to call upon, turn to
ⲉⲡⲓⲥⲕⲟⲡⲟⲥ	bishop (masc.)
ⲉⲡⲓⲥⲧⲏⲙⲏ	understanding, skill (fem.)
ⲉⲣⲅⲁⲥⲓⲁ	work, function, activity (fem.)
ⲉⲩⲁⲅⲅⲉⲗⲓⲟⲛ	Gospel (masc.)
ⲉⲩⲥⲉⲃⲏⲥ	pious person
ⲉⲩⲫⲣⲁⲛⲉ	to gladden, delight
ⲉⲩⲫⲣⲟⲥⲩⲛⲏ	joy (fem.)

PROPER NAMES:

ⲉⲛⲱⲭ	Enoch
ⲉⲡⲏⲡ	Epep, name of eleventh month
ⲉⲩϩⲁ	Eve

z (ZETA) (no Egyptian lexemes)

ⲍⲱⲙⲓⲛ	soup, broth
ⲍⲱⲟⲛ	animal (masc.)

PROPER NAMES:

ⲍⲁⲭⲁⲣⲓⲁⲥ	Zacharias

н (ETA)

нı	house (masc.) (66a)
нп	stative of ωп
нпє	number (fem.) (527b)
нр̄п̄	wine (masc.) (66b)

ϩнгємωн	governor, hegemon (masc.)
нλн	(adv.) already
ϩнλонн	sensual pleasure (fem.)
ϩнλıкıλ	age, adult state (fem.)

PROPER NAMES:

нсλγ	Esau
нфλıстос	Hephaestus

ϴ (THETA)

ϴє	in ñϴє, кλтλϴє see ϩє
ϴλв	leaven, moisture (457a)
ϴв̄вıо	to humiliate (457b); stative ϴв̄вıнγ "(is) humble, lowly"
	(with art.) humbleness, humility

ϴλλλссλ	the Sea
ϴєофıλєстλтос	most God-loving
ϴєωрıλ	observation (fem.)
ϴнрıон	wild beast (masc.)
ϴлıвє	to oppress, trouble
ϴлıψıс	tribulation (fem.)
ϴронос	throne (masc.)
ϴγсıλстнрıон	altar (masc.)

PROPER NAMES:

ϴıλнм	(i.e. т-ϩıєроγсλλнм) Jerusalem (top.)
ϴнвλıс	the Thebaid (top.)

ϵι, ι (IOTA)

ϲι	to come, go (70a); stative ⲛⲏϥ "(is) going, coming"; imperative ⲁⲙⲟϥ
ϵⲓⲁ	valley (masc.) (73a)
ϵⲓⲁ	ϵⲓⲁⲧ- (possessed) eye (73)
	ⲧϲⲁⲃϵ-ϵⲓⲁⲧ- to enlighten, instruct
ϵⲓⲱ	to wash (75a)
ϵⲓⲱ	ass (75b)
ϵⲓⲃϵ	to thirst (76a); stative ⲟⲃϵ "(is) thirsty"
ϵⲓⲙϵ	to know (77b)
ϵⲓⲛϵ	to bring (78b); prenominal ⲛ̄-, presuffixal ⲛⲧ-
ϵⲓⲛϵ	to resemble (80b)
	(with art.) likeness, resemblence, aspect
ϵⲓⲟⲡϵ	work, task, craft, occupation (fem.) (81a)
ϵⲓⲣϵ	to do, make (83b); prenominal ⲣ̄-, presuffixal ⲁⲁ-, stative ⲟ "(is) made"
	ⲣ̄- auxiliary, deriving verbs from nouns; ⲟ ⲛ̄- "(is) in state/circumstance of", "be as"
ϵⲓⲱⲧ	father (masc.) (86b); plur. ϵⲓⲟⲧϵ
ϲⲓⲱⲧ	barley (masc.) (87a)
ϵⲓⲱⲧϵ	dew (fem.)
(ϵ)ⲓⲟⲩⲇⲁⲓ	Jew

ϵⲓⲇⲱⲗⲟⲛ	idol (masc.)
ϩϵⲓⲕⲱⲛ	picture, icon (fem.)
ϵⲓⲙⲏⲧⲓ	(adv.) unless
(ϵ)ⲓⲣⲏⲛⲏ, ⲓⲣⲏⲛⲏ	peace (fem.)
ϵⲓⲣⲏⲛⲓⲕⲟⲥ	peaceful

PROPER NAMES:

ⲓⲁⲕⲱⲃ	Jacob
ⲓⲁⲫⲉⲧ	Japheth
ⲓ̄ⲥ̄ = ⲓⲏⲥⲟⲩⲥ	Jesus
ⲓⲥⲁⲁⲕ	Isaac
ⲓⲥⲁⲓⲁⲥ	Jesaias
ⲓⲥⲙⲁⲏⲗ	Ishmael
ⲓⲟⲩⲇⲁⲥ	Judas
ⲓⲱⲃ	Job
ⲓⲱϩⲁⲛⲛⲏⲥ	John
ⲓⲱⲥⲏⲫ	Joseph

ⲕ (KAPPA)

ⲕⲉ-	(an)other: plur. ⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ
ⲕⲟⲩⲓ	small, little (92b)
ⲕⲱ	to lay, set down (ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ); let, allow (94b); prenominal ⲕⲁ-, presuffixal ⲕⲁⲁ-, stative ⲕⲏ "(is) put, set"
ⲕⲓⲃⲉ	see ⲉⲕⲓⲃⲉ
ⲕⲃⲁ	revenge (masc.) (99b) ϫⲓ-ⲕⲃⲁ to take revenge
ⲕⲃⲟ	to chill, refresh (100a); prenominal ⲕⲃⲉ- (with art.) coolness, chill
ⲕⲁⲕ	in ⲁⲱⲕⲁⲕ: see ⲱⲕⲁⲕ
ⲕⲁⲕⲉ	darkness (masc.)
ⲕⲱⲕ ⲁϩⲏⲩ	to strip (101a); stative ⲕⲏⲕ ⲁϩⲏⲩ (is) stripped, nude
ⲕⲗⲟⲟⲗⲉ	cloud (104a)
ⲕⲗⲟⲙ	crown (masc.) (104b)
ⲕⲁ̄ⲯ	blow (105b) †-ⲕⲁ̄ⲯ to strike
ⲕⲱⲗϩ̄	to knock (106b)
ⲕⲱⲗⲁ̄ⲭ	to bend (107b); prenominal ⲕⲉⲗⲁⲭ- ⲕⲁ̄ⲭ-
ⲕⲓⲙ	to move, shake (108a)
ⲕⲙⲟⲙ	to be, become black (109b)
ⲕⲱⲙⲱ̄	to sneer, mock (with ⲛ̄ⲥⲁ-) (110a)
ⲕⲛ̄ⲛⲉ	to be fat, juicy (111b); stative ⲕⲓⲱⲟⲩ "(is) fat, juicy"
ⲕⲱⲛⲥ̄	to pierce, slay (112a)
ⲕⲛⲟⲥ	to be, become putrid; to stink (112b)
ⲕⲁⲡ	string, thread (masc.) (113a)
ⲕⲣⲙ̄ⲣⲙ̄	to grumble, complain (116a)
ⲕⲣⲟⲙⲣⲙ̄	to be dark (116b)
ⲕⲣⲟϥ	guile (masc.) (118b)
ⲕⲁⲥ	bone (masc.) (120a); plur. ⲕⲉⲉⲥ
ⲕⲱⲧ	to build (122a); prenominal ⲕⲉⲧ-, presuffixal ⲕⲟⲧ-, stative ⲕⲏⲧ "(is) built"
ⲕⲱⲧⲉ	to turn, return (often reflexive); to encircle (ⲉ-) (124a); prenominal ⲕⲉⲧ-, presuffixal ⲕⲟⲧ-
ⲕⲟⲧⲥ̄	crookedness, guile (127a), in ⲙⲛ̄ⲧ-ⲥⲁⲛⲕⲟⲧⲥ̄
ⲕⲧⲟ	to turn, return; cause to turn, return (127b); stative ⲕⲧⲏⲩ "(is) turned"

ⲕⲓⲱⲟⲩ	see ⲕⲁⲛⲉ
ⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ	see ⲕⲉ
ⲕⲁϩ	land, earth, country (masc.) (131a)
ⲕⲱϩ	point (masc.) (132a); plur. ⲕⲟⲟϩ
ⲕⲱϩ	to be envious, begrudge (132b); stative ⲕⲏϩ "(is) envious"
	(with art.) envy, rivalry
ⲕⲟⲉⲓϩ	sheath (masc.) (132b)
ⲕⲱϩⲧ̄	fire (masc.) (133b)

ⲕⲁⲑⲏⲅⲏⲥⲓⲥ, ⲕⲁⲑⲏⲕⲏⲥⲓⲥ	exposition, explanation (fem.)
ⲕⲁⲑⲏⲕⲉⲓ	to join, be fitting, belong
ⲧ-ⲕⲁⲑⲟⲗⲓⲕⲏ ⲉⲕⲕⲗⲏⲥⲓⲁ	the Catholic Church
ⲧ-ⲕⲁⲓⲛⲏ ⲇⲓⲁⲑⲏⲕⲏ	the New Testament
ⲕⲁⲓⲣⲟⲥ	season, occasion, opportunity (masc.)
ⲕⲁⲕⲓⲁ	badness, vice (fem.)
ⲕⲁⲗⲱⲥ	(adv.) well
ⲕⲁⲛⲱⲛ	rule, canon (masc.)
ⲕⲁⲣⲡⲟⲥ	fruit (masc.)
ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲗⲁⲗⲉⲓ	to calumniate
ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲫⲣⲟⲛⲉⲓ	to disdain
ⲕⲏⲡⲟⲥ	garden (masc.)
ⲕⲉⲗⲉⲩⲉ	to command, enjoin
ⲕⲉⲣⲁⲩⲛⲟⲥ	thunder (masc.)
ⲕⲏⲣⲓⲁⲕⲏ, ⲕⲩⲣⲓⲁⲕⲏ	Sunday (fem.)
ⲕⲉⲫⲁⲗⲁⲓⲟⲥ/ⲟⲛ	(the) main, most important; capital
ⲕⲓⲛⲇⲩⲛⲉⲩⲉ	to be in danger
ⲕⲓⲑⲁⲣⲱⲇⲟⲥ	lyre-player, harper
ⲕⲗⲁⲧⲟⲥ, ⲕⲗⲁⲇⲟⲥ	branch (masc.)
ⲕⲗⲏⲣⲟⲛⲟⲙⲉⲓ	to inherit
ⲕⲟⲓⲛⲱⲛⲉⲓ	to commune
ⲕⲟⲓⲛⲱⲛⲓⲁ	community (fem.)
ⲕⲟⲗⲁⲍⲉ	to punish, chastise
ⲕⲟ̀ⲗⲁⲥⲓⲥ	punishment, chastisement (fem.)
ⲕⲟⲙⲉⲥ	*comes*, office-holder
ⲕⲟⲥⲙⲉⲓ	to adorn
ⲕⲟⲥⲙⲏⲥⲓⲥ	adornment (fem.)
ⲕⲟⲥⲙⲓⲕⲟⲥ/ⲟⲛ	worldly
ⲕⲟⲥⲙⲟⲥ	world, universe (masc.)
ⲕⲣⲓⲙⲁ	judgement, sentence (masc.)

ⲕⲣⲓⲛⲉ	to judge
ⲕⲣⲓⲧⲏⲥ	judge (masc.)
ⲕⲧⲓⲥⲓⲥ, ⲕⲑⲏⲥⲓⲥ	creation (fem.)

PROPER NAMES:

ⲕⲁⲉⲓⲛ	Cain
ⲕⲁⲓⲥⲁⲣⲓⲟⲥ	Caesarius
ⲕⲁⲣⲭⲁⲣⲓⲥ	Carcharis (top.)
ⲕⲏⲙⲉ	Egypt (masc. top.)
	ⲣⲙ̄ⲛ̄ⲕⲏⲙⲉ Egyptian
ⲧ-ⲕⲏⲣⲓⲁⲕⲏ	Sunday
ⲕⲣⲟⲛⲟⲥ	Kronos
ⲕⲩⲣⲓⲗⲗⲟⲥ	Cyril

ⲗ (LAMBDA)

ⲗⲟ	to cease (ϩⲁ-) (135a); imp. ⲗⲗⲟ-
ⲗⲓⲃⲉ	to be, become mad (136b); stative ⲗⲟⲃⲉ "(is) mad"
ⲗⲁⲕⲙ̄	piece (139a)
ⲗⲱⲱⲙⲉ	to wither; to be filthy (142b)
ⲗⲁⲥ	tongue (masc.) (144b)
ⲗⲁⲁⲩ	any(thing), some(thing) (146a)
ⲗⲱⲭϩ̄	to crush; to be crushed (151a)
ⲗⲁⲃ, ⲗⲟⲃ	impudent person (151a)
ⲗⲟⲓⲃⲉ	excuse (fem.) (151b)

ⲗⲁⲙⲡⲁⲥ	lamp, light
ⲗⲁⲟⲥ	people (masc.)
ⲗⲏⲥⲧⲏⲥ	robber
ⲗⲩⲡⲉⲓ	to feel pain, sorrow; to cause pain
ⲗⲩⲡⲏ	pain, sorrow (fem.)
ⲗⲟⲅⲟⲥ	speech, word, account (masc.)
	ϯ-ⲗⲟⲅⲟⲥ (ϩⲁ-) to account for
ⲗⲟⲓⲙⲟⲥ	pestilence

PROPER NAMES:

ⲗⲁⲍⲁⲣⲟⲥ	Lazarus
ⲗⲁⲙⲉⲭ	Lamech
ⲗⲟⲩⲕⲁⲥ	Luke
ⲗⲱⲧ	Lot

ⲙ (MI)

ⲙⲁ	place (masc.) (153a)
ⲙⲁ-	imp. of ⲧ to give; imp. prefix with causatives ("ⲙⲁⲧⲁⲙⲟⲓ")
ⲙⲉ	truth (fem.) (156b)
ⲙⲉ	to love (156a); prenominal ⲙⲉⲣⲉ-, presuffixal ⲙⲉⲣⲓⲧ-; ⲙⲁⲓ- "-loving", agent noun with object; ⲙⲉⲣⲓⲧ beloved person, plur. ⲙⲉⲣⲁⲧⲉ
ⲙⲟⲩ	to die (159a)
ⲙⲁⲓ-	see ⲙⲉ "to love"
ⲙⲟⲩⲓ	lion (160b)
ⲙⲟⲕⲙⲉⲕ	to reflect, deliberate (162a); presuffixal ⲙⲉⲕ-ⲙⲟⲩⲕ- (with art.) reflection
ⲙⲁⲕ̄	neck (masc.) (162b)
ⲙ̄ⲕⲁⲕ	to be in pain, grieve, feel pain (163a); stative ⲙⲟⲕ̄ "(is) in pain, (is) grieved" (with art.) ⲙ̄ⲕⲁⲕ ⲛ̄ⲭⲏⲧ grief
ⲙⲟⲕⲕ̄	suffering, pain (fem.) (164a)
ⲙⲟⲩⲗ̄	to salt (165a); presuffixal ⲙⲟⲗⲕ-
ⲙ̄ⲙⲛ̄-, ⲙⲛ̄-	"there does not exist", statement of non-existence
(ⲙ̄)ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲁ-	"(He) has not", negative possession verboid; prenominal (ⲙ̄)ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲉ-
ⲙ̄ⲙⲟⲛ	"no" (168a)
ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲧⲉ	(adv.) only, alone (190a)
ⲙ̄ⲙⲁⲩ	there (196b)
ⲙⲏⲛⲉ	in ⲙ̄ⲙⲏⲛⲉ: daily (172a)
ⲙⲓⲛⲉ	quality, type, sort (172a)
ⲙⲟⲟⲛⲉ	to pasture, feed (173a) (with art.) pasture, feeding
ⲙⲟⲟⲛⲉ	to bring into port (173b)
ⲙⲛ̄ⲛ̄ⲥⲁ-	(prep.) after, following (in time) (314b) presuffixal ⲙⲛ̄ⲛ̄ⲥⲱ-
ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲣⲉ	witness (177a) ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲣⲉ testimony
ⲙ̄ⲡⲱⲁ	to be worthy (179a) (with art.) worth

ⲙⲟⲩⲣ	to bind, tie (180a); presuffixal ⲙⲟⲣ-
ⲙⲉⲣⲓⲧ; plur. ⲙⲉⲣⲁⲧⲉ	see ⲙⲉ "to love"
ⲙ̄ⲣⲱ	harbour, landing stage (fem.) (183a)
ⲙⲁⲥⲉ	calf (186a) (masc.)
ⲙⲓⲥⲉ	to give birth (184a)
	(with art.) birth
ⲙⲏⲥⲉ	interest on loan (fem.) (186a)
	† ⲉⲙⲏⲥⲉ to take interest, lend on interest
ⲙⲟⲥⲧⲉ	to hate (187a); prenominal ⲙⲉⲥⲧⲉ-, presuffixal ⲙⲉⲥⲧⲱ-
	ⲙⲁⲥⲧ- "-hating", agent noun with object
	(with art.) hatred
ⲙⲏⲧ	ten (187b)
ⲙⲁⲧⲉ	to obtain (189a)
ⲙⲁⲧⲟⲓ, ⲙⲁⲧⲟⲉⲓ	soldier (masc.) (190b)
ⲙⲁⲧⲟⲩ	poison (fem.) (196a)
ⲙⲏⲧⲉ	middle (fem.) (190b)
ⲙⲟⲩⲧⲉ	to call, name (191b)
ⲙ̄ⲧⲟ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ	(with possessive art.) (someone's) presence (193a)
ⲙ̄ⲧⲟⲛ	to rest (also reflexive): to be comfortable, well (193b) stative ⲙⲟⲧⲛ̄ "(is) rested, comfortable"; "(is) easy (to do)"
	(with art.) rest, repose, well-being, comfort
ⲙⲁⲁⲩ	mother (fem.) (197a)
ⲙⲟⲟⲩ	water (masc.) (197b)
ⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ	to think, have in mind (201a)
	(with art.) thought
	ⲣ̄- ⲡⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ (ⲛ̄-), ⲣ̄- ⲡⲉϥⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ have in mind, recall
ⲙⲟⲩⲟⲩⲧ̄	to kill (201a); prenominal ⲙⲉⲩⲧ-, presuffixal ⲙⲟⲟⲩⲧ-, stative ⲙⲟⲟⲩⲧ "(is) dead"
ⲙⲁϣⲉ	scales, balance (fem.) (201a)
ⲙⲉϣⲁⲕ	maybe, perhaps, "you do not know" (201b)
ⲙⲓϣⲉ	to fight, do battle (202b)
	(with art.) battle
ⲙⲏⲏϣⲉ	crowd, multitude (masc.)
ⲙⲟⲟϣⲉ	to walk, go (203b)
ⲙⲟⲩϣⲧ̄	to search out, examine (206b); prenominal ⲙⲉϣⲧ-, presuffixal ⲙⲟϣⲧ-
ⲙⲉϣϣⲉ	"it is not befitting" (negation of ϣ̄ϣⲉ) (608a)

ⲙⲟⲩϩ	to fill (208a); prenominal ⲙⲉϩ-, presuffixal ⲙⲁϩ-, stative ⲙⲉϩ "(is) full"
ⲙⲟⲩϩ	to look (201b)
ⲙⲟⲓϩⲉ, ⲙⲟⲉⲓϩⲉ	marvel, wonder (fem.) (211b)
ⲙⲁⲁϫⲉ	car (masc.) 212b)
ⲙⲁⲣⲓⲁ	magic (fem.)
ⲙⲁⲑⲏⲧⲏⲥ	disciple
ⲙⲁⲕⲁⲣⲓⲍⲉ	to consider happy, blessed
ⲙⲁⲕⲁⲣⲓⲟⲥ	happy, blessed
ⲙⲁⲗⲗⲁⲕⲟⲥ	effeminate
ⲙⲁⲗⲗⲟⲛ, ⲙⲁⲗⲗⲱⲛ	(adv.) "not to mention", especially, rather
ⲙⲁⲙⲙⲱⲛⲁⲥ	ⲡ-ⲙⲁⲙⲙⲱⲛⲁⲥ Mammon
ⲙⲁⲛⲓⲭⲁⲓⲟⲥ	Manichee
ⲙⲁⲣⲧⲩⲣⲟⲥ	martyr
ⲙⲁⲥⲧⲓⲅⲟⲩ	to whip
ⲙⲉⲗⲉⲧⲁ	to meditate, practise
ⲙⲉⲗⲉⲧⲏ	meditation, religious practice (fem.)
ⲙⲉⲗⲟⲥ	member, limb of body (masc.)
ⲙⲉⲣⲓⲥ	allotted share (fem.)
ⲙⲉⲣⲟⲥ	part (masc.)
ⲙⲉⲧⲁⲛⲟⲉⲓ, ⲙⲉⲧⲁⲛⲟⲓ	to repent
ⲙⲉⲧⲉⲭⲉ	to share, take part
ⲙⲟⲗⲓⲥ	(adv.) hardly
ⲙⲟⲛⲁⲭⲟⲥ	monk
ⲙⲟⲛⲟⲅⲉⲛⲏⲥ	only-begotten
ⲙⲟⲛⲟⲛ	(adv.) only, but
ⲙⲟⲣⲫⲏ	form (fem.)
ⲙⲩⲥⲧⲏⲣⲓⲟⲛ	ⲡⲙⲩⲥⲧⲏⲣⲓⲟⲛ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ the Holy Sacrament

PROPER NAMES:

ⲙⲁⲑⲑⲁⲓⲟⲥ	Matthew
ⲡ-ⲙⲁⲙⲙⲱⲛⲁⲥ	Mammon
ⲙⲁⲛⲏⲥ	Mani
ⲙⲁⲣⲓⲁ	Mark
ⲙⲁⲣⲕⲟⲥ	Mary
ⲧ-ⲙⲉⲥⲟⲡⲟⲧⲁⲙⲓⲁ	Mesopotamia (top.)
ⲙⲓϩⲁⲏⲗ	Mishael
ⲙⲱⲩⲥⲏⲥ	Moses

ⲛ (NI)

ⲛ̄-	see ⲉⲓⲛⲉ "to bring"
ⲛⲁ	to pity, have mercy (216b)
	ⲣ̄-ⲛⲁ to do charity
	ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲛⲁ act of charity, mercy
ⲛⲁ	stative of ⲱⲉ and ⲛⲟⲩ "to be about to", "to go"
ⲛⲟⲩ	to be about to ... (219a); stative ⲛⲁ "(is) about to ..."
ⲛⲟⲩⲃ	gold (masc.) (221b)
ⲛⲟⲃⲉ	sin (masc.) (222a)
ⲛⲁϩⲧ	merciful person
ⲛⲁⲓⲁⲧ-	"is blessed" (74b); see ⲉⲓⲁ, ⲉⲓⲁⲧ-
ⲛⲟⲉⲓⲕ	adulterous person (222b)
	ⲣ̄-ⲛⲟⲉⲓⲕ to commit adultery, fornicate
ⲛ̄ⲕⲁ	thing (223a)
ⲛ̄ⲕⲟⲧⲕ̄	to lie down, sleep (224a)
	ⲙⲁ ⲛ̄ⲛ̄ⲕⲟⲧⲕ̄ bed
ⲛⲁⲙⲉ	(adv.) truly (157a)
ⲛⲟⲩⲛⲉ	root (fem.) (227b)
ⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ	god (230b)
	ⲡ-ⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ God
ⲛ̄ⲧ-	see ⲉⲓⲛⲉ "to bring"
ⲛⲁⲩ	to see (233b); ⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ to be able to see, have eyesight
	(with art.) sight, view
ⲛⲁⲩ	time, hour (masc.) (243b)
ⲛϩⲩ	stative of ⲉⲓ "to come"
ⲛ̄ⲱⲟⲧ	to be hard, severe (237a); stative ⲛⲁⲱⲧ̄ "(is) harsh, severe"
	(with art.) hardness, severity
	ⲛⲁⲱⲧ- "hard of ..." in compounds: ⲛⲁⲱⲧϩⲏⲧ obdurate
ⲛⲓⲫⲉ	to blow, breathe (238b); presuffixal ⲛⲁⲫⲧ-
ⲛⲟⲫⲣⲉ	advantage, benefit (fem.) (239b)
	ⲣ̄-ⲛⲟⲫⲣⲉ to be of advantage, beneficial
ⲛⲉϩ	oil (masc.) (240b)
ⲛⲟⲩϩ	rope (masc.) (241a)
ⲛⲁϩⲃ̄	shoulders, upper back, neck (fem.) (243a)

ⲛⲁϩⲧⲉ	to trust, entrust, believe (264a); stative ⲉⲛϩⲟⲧ "(is) trustworthy"
ⲛⲟⲩⲭ	false, lying (246b)
ⲛⲁⲁⲭⲉ	see ⲛⲁⲭϩⲉ
ⲛⲟⲩⲭⲉ	to throw (ⲉⲃⲟⲗ out) (247a); prenominal ⲛⲉⲭ-, presuffixal ⲛⲟⲭ-, stative ⲛⲏⲭ (ⲉ-) "(is) thrown upon, relying on"
ⲛⲁⲭϩⲉ, ⲛⲁⲁⲭⲉ	tooth (fem.) (249b)
ⲛⲟⲃ	big, great (250a)
ⲛⲟⲃⲛⲉⲃ	to mock, reproach (252b)
	(with art.) reproach
ⲛⲟⲩⲃ̄ⲥ	to be angry, annoyed with (252b)
	ϯ-ⲛⲟⲩⲃ̄ⲥ to give cause for anger

ⲛⲏⲥⲟⲥ	island (fem.)
ⲛⲏⲥⲧⲉⲓⲁ	fast (fem.)
ⲛⲏⲥⲧⲉⲩⲉ	to fast
ⲛⲟⲉⲓ, ⲛⲟⲓ	to grasp, understand
ⲛⲟⲙⲟⲥ	law; ⲡ-ⲛⲟⲙⲟⲥ the Law
ⲛⲩⲙⲫⲓⲟⲥ	bridegroom (masc.)
ⲛ̄ϩⲟⲥⲟⲛ, ⲉⲛϩⲟⲥⲟⲛ	(adv., conj.) as long as

PROPER NAMES:

ⲛⲁⲃⲟⲩⲭⲟⲇⲟⲛⲟⲥⲟⲣ	Nebuchadnezzar
ⲛⲁⲍⲁⲣⲉⲑ	Nazareth (top.)
ⲛⲱϩⲉ	Noah

ⲝ (XI)

ⲟ (OU)

ⲟ	stative of ⲉⲓⲣⲉ to do
ⲟⲃⲉ	see ⲉⲓⲃⲉ
ⲟⲃϩ̄	tooth (fem.) (254a)
ⲟⲉⲓⲕ	bread (masc.) (254a)
ⲟⲙⲉ	clay (masc.) (254b)
ⲟⲛϩ̄	stative of ⲱⲛϩ̄ to live
ⲟⲥⲉ	damage, loss, fine (masc.) (256b)
	ϯ-ⲟⲥⲉ to suffer damage, be fined

ⲟⲉⲓⲱ	cry, proclamation (257b), in ⲧⲁⲱⲉ-ⲟⲉⲓⲱ to cry, proclaim
ⲟⲱ	see ⲁⲱⲁⲓ
ⲟⲟϩ	moon (masc.) (257b)
ⲟϩⲉ	sheepfold (masc.) (258a)
ϩⲟⲃⲟⲗⲟⲥ	obol (currency of small denomination) (masc.)
ⲟⲓⲕⲟⲇⲟⲙⲏ	construction, building (fem.)
ⲧ-ⲟⲓⲕⲟⲩⲙⲉⲛⲏ	the inhabited world (fem.)
ϩⲟⲗⲱⲥ	(adv.) at all
ϩⲟⲙⲉⲗⲉⲓ, ϩⲟⲙⲓⲗⲉⲓ	to preach, communicate
ϩⲟⲙⲟⲗⲟⲅⲉⲓ	to confess
ϩⲟⲙⲱⲥ	(adv.) nevertheless
ϩⲟⲙⲟⲟⲩⲥⲓⲟⲥ/ⲟⲛ	of the same essence, substance
ⲟⲛⲟⲙⲁϩⲉ	to call by name, mention
ⲟⲛⲧⲱⲥ	(adv.) in fact, in reality, truly
ⲟⲣⲅⲏ	rage, fury (fem.)

ⲡ (P1)

ⲡⲉ	sky, heaven (fem.) (259a); plur. ⲡⲏⲩⲉ
	ⲧⲡⲉ upper part; ⲛ̄ⲥⲁⲧⲡⲉ up (adv.)
ⲡⲱⲱⲛⲉ	to overturn, change (263b); stative ⲡⲟⲟⲛⲉ "(is) overturned"
ⲡⲣⲱ	winter (fem.)
ⲡⲓⲣⲉ, ⲡⲉⲓⲣⲉ	to come out (of sun), shine (266b)
ⲡⲱⲱⲣⲉ	to dream (268a)
	ⲡⲉⲣⲉ-ⲣⲁⲥⲟⲩ to foretell the future by dreams
ⲡⲱⲣⲕ̄, ⲡⲱⲣⲉⲕ	to pluck, root out (268b)
ⲡⲱⲣⲫ̄	to spread (with ⲉⲃⲟⲗ) (269a)
ⲡⲣⲏⲫ	mat, spread (271a)
ⲡⲱⲣϫ̄	to separate; to be separated (with ⲉⲃⲟⲗ) (271b); stative ⲡⲟⲣϫ̄ "(is) distinct from (ⲉ-)"
	(with art.) separation
ⲡⲁⲧ	foot, leg, knee (fem.) (273b)
ⲡⲱⲧ	to run (274a); with ⲛ̄ⲥⲁ- to pursue; stative ⲡⲏⲧ "(is) running"
ⲡⲟⲟⲩ	today (731); see ϩⲟⲟⲩ
ⲡⲁⲫ	trap, snare (masc.) (277a)

ⲡⲱⲱ	to divide, split (277a)
ⲡⲱⲱⲥ̄	to be stupefied, amazed (279b)
	(with art.) amazement
ⲡⲱϩ	to tear, break (280a); prenominal ⲡⲉϩ-, presuffixal ⲡⲁϩ-
ⲡⲁϩⲣⲉ	drug, medicament, cure (fem.) (282b)
	ϯ-ⲡⲁϩⲣⲉ to threat medically, cure
	ⲭⲓ-ⲡⲁϩⲣⲉ be treated medically, be cured
ⲡⲱϩⲧ̄	to bend, throw down (also reflexive); (with ⲉⲃⲟⲗ) to pour, shed (283a); presuffixal ⲡⲁϩⲧ-
ⲡⲁϩⲟⲩ	back, hind part (284b)
	ϩⲓⲡⲁϩⲟⲩ behind
ⲡⲟⲃⲉ	piece (fem.) (286a)
ⲡⲁⲃⲥⲉ	spittle (fem.) (286b)
	ⲛⲉⲭ-ⲡⲁⲃⲥⲉ to spit

ⲡⲁⲑⲟⲥ	passion (masc.)
ⲡⲁⲓⲇⲉⲩⲉ	to chastize, educate
ⲧ-ⲡⲁⲗⲁⲓⲁ (ⲇⲓⲁⲑⲏⲕⲏ)	the Old Testament
ⲡⲁⲗⲓⲛ	(adv.) again (usually with ⲟⲛ)
ⲡ-ⲡⲁⲛⲧⲟⲕⲣⲁⲧⲱⲣ	the Almighty
ⲡⲁⲛⲧⲱⲥ	(adv.) certainly, by all means
ⲡⲁⲣⲁⲃⲁ	to transgress
ⲡⲁⲣⲁⲅⲉ	to pass
ⲡⲁⲣⲁⲓⲧⲉⲓ, ⲡⲁⲣⲁⲓⲧⲓ	to entreat, beg
ⲡⲁⲣⲁⲕⲁⲗⲉⲓ	to invoke, call upon
ⲡ-ⲡⲁⲣⲁⲕⲗⲏⲧⲟⲥ	the Intercessor, Paraclete
ⲡⲁⲣⲁⲛⲟⲙⲟⲥ	lawbreaker, wrongdoer
ⲡⲁⲣⲁⲡⲧⲱⲙⲁ	false step, transgression
ⲡⲁⲣⲁⲫⲩⲥⲓⲥ	perversion (fem.)
ⲡⲁⲣⲑⲉⲛⲟⲥ	virgin
ⲡⲁⲣϩⲓⲥⲧⲁ	to stand by, assist
ⲡⲁⲣⲣⲏⲥⲓⲁ	freedom, openness of speech
ⲡⲁⲧⲁⲥⲥⲉ	to strike, smite
ⲡⲉⲓⲑⲉ	to persuade; to be persuaded, comply
ⲡⲉⲓⲣⲁⲥⲙⲟⲥ, ⲡⲓⲣⲁⲥⲙⲟⲥ	trial, temptation (masc.)
ⲡⲉⲓⲣⲁϩⲉ, ⲡⲓⲣⲁϩⲉ	to test, try
ⲡⲉⲗⲁⲅⲟⲥ	high sea (masc.)
ⲡⲉⲧⲣⲁ	rock (fem.)
ⲡⲉⲭ̄ⲥ̄	see ⲭⲣⲓⲥⲧⲟⲥ
ⲡⲏⲅⲏ	fountain, spring (fem.)

ⲡⲓⲥⲧⲉⲩⲉ	to believe, have faith
ⲡⲓⲥⲧⲓⲥ	faith (fem.)
ⲡⲓⲥⲧⲟⲥ	faithful
ⲡⲗⲁⲛⲁ	to lead astray
ⲡⲗⲁⲛⲏ	error, going astray (fem.)
ⲡⲗⲁⲥⲥⲉ	to shape, form
ⲧⲉ-ⲡⲗⲁⲧⲱⲛⲓⲕⲏ ⲇⲓⲇⲁⲥⲕⲁⲗⲓⲁ	the Platonic Teaching
ⲡⲗⲏⲅⲉ	to strike, wound
ⲡⲗⲏⲅⲏ	blow, wound (fem.)
ⲡ̄ⲛ̄ⲁ	see ⲡⲛⲉⲩⲙⲁ
ⲡⲛⲉⲩⲙⲁ, ⲡ̄ⲛ̄ⲁ	spirit (masc.)
	ⲡⲉⲡ̄ⲛ̄ⲁ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ the Holy Ghost
ⲡⲛⲉⲩⲙⲁⲧⲓⲕⲟⲥ/ⲟⲛ	spiritual
ⲡⲛⲟⲏ	breath (fem.)
ⲡⲟⲗⲉⲙⲟⲥ	war, quarrel (masc.)
	ⲣ̄- ⲡⲟⲗⲉⲙⲟⲥ to fight
ⲡⲟⲗⲓⲥ	city, town (fem.)
ⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲓⲁ	wickedness (fem.)
ⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲥ/ⲟⲛ	wicked
ⲡⲟⲣⲛⲉⲩⲉ	to fornicate
ⲡⲟⲣⲛⲏ	prostitute (fem.)
ⲡⲟⲣⲛⲟⲥ	prostitute (masc.)
ⲡⲟⲥⲱ ⲙⲁⲗⲗⲟⲛ	(adv.) how much more
ⲡⲣⲁⲅⲙⲁ	affair, work (masc.)
ⲡⲣⲁⲍⲓⲥ	deed, act (fem.)
ⲡⲣⲉⲥⲃⲉⲩⲧⲏⲥ	elder
ⲡⲣⲉⲥⲃⲩⲧⲉⲣⲟⲥ	elder, presbyter
ⲡⲣⲟⲛⲟⲓⲁ	providence (fem.)
ⲡⲣⲟⲥⲉⲭⲉ	to pay attention, mind
ⲡⲣⲟⲥⲧⲁⲅⲙⲁ	ordainment (masc.)
ⲡⲣⲟⲥⲫⲟⲣⲁ	offering (fem.)
ⲡⲣⲟⲫⲏⲧⲏⲥ	prophet
ⲡⲩⲗⲏ	gate (fem.)
ⲡⲩⲣⲅⲟⲥ	tower (masc.)

PROPER NAMES:

ⲧ-ⲡⲁⲛⲟⲥ	in ⲧⲡⲟⲗⲓⲥ ⲧⲡⲁⲛⲟⲥ Panopolis (Akhmim) (top.)
ⲡ-ⲡⲁⲥⲭⲁ	Easter
	ⲡⲛⲟⲃ ⲙ̄ⲡⲁⲥⲭⲁ Easter Sunday

ⲡⲁⲩⲗⲟⲥ	Paul
ⲡⲉⲧⲃⲉ	Petbe (Egyptian deity)
ⲡⲉⲧⲣⲟⲥ	Peter
ⲡϣⲟⲓ	Pshoi
ⲡⲧⲁϩ	Ptah (Egyptian deity)

ⲣ (RO)

ⲣⲏ	ⲡⲣⲏ the sun (masc.) (287a)
ⲣⲟ	door, mouth (masc.) (288a); possessed ⲣⲱ- (mouth) ⲕⲁ-ⲣⲱ- to be silent, refrain from talking
ⲣⲱ-	see ⲣⲟ
ⲣⲓⲕⲉ	to bend, turn (291a) (with art.) turning, inclination; difference
ⲣⲱⲕϩ̄	to burn (293a); presuffixal ⲣⲟⲕϩ-, stative ⲣⲟⲕϩ̄ "(is) burning" (with art.) burning, extreme heat
ⲣⲓⲙⲉ	to weep (294a) (with art.) weeping
ⲣⲙ̄ⲉⲓⲏ	tear (fem.) (294b); plur. ⲣⲙ̄ⲉⲓⲟⲟⲩⲉ
ⲣⲱⲙⲉ	man, person; someone, anyone (with zero art.) (294b) ⲣⲙ̄(ⲛ̄)- "man of-" (with noun or placename) ⲣⲉϥ- "-er" (agent noun, with verb)
ⲣ̄ⲙⲙⲁⲟ	rich person (296a)
ⲣⲟⲙⲡⲉ	year (fem.) (296b) ⲧⲣ̄ⲣⲟⲙⲡⲉ (adv.) yearly
ⲣⲙ̄ϩⲉ	free person (297a)
ⲣⲁⲛ	name (masc.) (297b); possessed ⲣⲛ̄ⲧ-
ⲣⲓⲣ	swine, pork (masc.) (299a)
ⲣ̄ⲣⲟ	king (299a); plur. ⲣ̄ⲣⲱⲟⲩ fem. ⲣ̄ⲣⲱ queen ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲣⲟ kingdom
ⲣⲏⲥ	south (masc.) (299b)
ⲣⲟⲉⲓⲥ	to be awake, be vigilant (300b); stative ⲣⲏⲥ "(is) vigilant"
ⲣⲁⲥⲟⲩ	dream (fem.) (302b)
ⲣⲁⲧ-	foot (possessed form) (302b)

ⲉⲣⲁⲧ- (prep.) to (person, with verbs of motion)
ϩⲁⲣⲁⲧ- (prep.) under foot of underneath

ⲣⲱⲧ to grow, sprout (303b); stative ⲣⲏⲧ "(is) in growth"
ⲣⲟⲟⲩⲉ stalk of corn (fem.) (306b)
ⲣⲟⲟⲩⲧ see ⲟⲩⲣⲟⲧ
ⲣⲟⲟⲩⲱ care (masc.) (306b)
ϥⲓ-ⲣⲟⲟⲩⲱ (ϩⲁ-) care for
ⲣⲁⲱ mild, gentle in ⲣⲙ̄ⲣⲁⲱ mild, gentle person (308a)
ⲣⲁⲱⲉ to rejoice (308b)
(with art.) joy
ⲣⲱⲱⲉ to suffice; to be authorized, responsible
ⲣⲟⲩϩⲉ evening (310b)
ⲣⲱϩⲧ to strike; to be struck, fall (311a); presuffixal ⲣⲁϩⲧ-

PROPER NAMES:

ⲣⲁⲕⲟⲧⲉ Alexandria (top.)
ϩⲣⲉⲃⲃⲉⲕⲁ Rebecca

ⲥ (SIMMA)

ⲥⲁ side (masc.) (313a)
ⲥⲁ to be beautiful (315a)
(with art.) comeliness, beauty
ⲥⲉ "yes" (316a)
ⲥⲉ sixty (368b)
ⲥⲓ, ⲥⲉⲓ to be sated, have enough (316b)
(with art.) satiety
ⲥⲟ in ϯ-ⲥⲟ to spare, refrain (with ⲉ-) (317a)
ⲥⲟ six (368b)
ⲥⲱ to drink (318a); prenominal ⲥⲉ-, presuffixal ⲥⲟⲟ-
(with art.) drink
ⲥⲱ reed mat (318a)
ⲥⲁⲃⲉ wise, clever person (319a); plur. ⲥⲁⲃⲉⲉⲩ, ⲥⲁⲃⲉⲟⲩ
ⲥⲁⲃⲏ wise, clever woman

ⲥⲱⲃⲉ	to laugh, mock (320b) (with art.) laughter, mockery
ⲥⲃⲱ	teaching, wisdom (fem.) (319b); plur. ⲥⲃⲟⲟⲩⲉ ϯ- ⲥⲃⲱ to teach ⲁⲓ- ⲥⲃⲱ to be taught
ⲥⲃ̄ⲃⲉ	to circumcise (321b) (with art.) circumcision ⲁⲧⲥⲃ̄ⲃⲉ uncircumcised
ⲥⲃⲟⲕ	to be small (322a); stative ⲥⲟⲃⲕ̄ "(is) small"
ⲥⲟⲃⲧ̄	wall (masc.) (323a)
ⲥⲟⲃⲧⲉ	to prepare (323a); stative ⲥⲃ̄ⲧⲱⲧ "(is) prepared"
ⲥⲱⲃϩ̄	to be, become leprous (324a)
ⲥⲱⲕ	to draw; to flow (325a); prenominal ⲥⲉⲕ-, presuffixal ⲥⲟⲕ-
ⲥⲓⲕⲉ	to grind, mill (328a) ⲱⲛⲉ ⲛ̄ⲥⲓⲕⲉ millstone
ⲥⲕⲁⲓ	to plough (328b)
ⲥⲕⲓⲙ	grey hair (328b)
ⲥⲕⲟⲣⲕⲣ̄	to roll (329a); stative ⲥⲕⲣ̄ⲕⲟⲣⲧ̄ "(is) rolled, curled up"
ⲥⲟⲗⲥⲗ̄	to comfort, encourage (332a)
ⲥⲙⲏ	voice (fem.) (334b)
ⲥⲙⲟⲩ	to bless (with ⲉ-); stative ⲥⲙⲁⲙⲁⲁⲧ "(is) blessed" (with art.) blessing
ⲥⲙⲓⲛⲉ	to establish, set right (337a); stative ⲥⲙⲟⲛⲧ̄ "(is) established, set right"
ⲥⲙⲟⲛⲧ̄	stative of ⲥⲙⲓⲛⲉ
ⲥⲙⲟⲧ	form, character (340b)
ⲥⲁⲉⲓⲛ	doctor (masc.) (342b)
ⲥⲁⲛⲕⲟⲧⲥ̄	see ⲕⲟⲧⲥ̄
ⲥⲟⲛ	brother (masc.) (342b), male companion; plur. ⲥⲛⲏⲩ brethren
ⲥⲱⲛⲉ	sister, female companion (fem., *ibid.*)
ⲥⲟⲟⲛⲉ	robber (masc.) (344b)
ⲥⲟⲩⲛⲧ-	price, value (possessed) (369b)
ⲥⲱⲛⲧ̄	to create (345a); prenominal ⲥⲛ̄ⲧ- (with art.) creation
ⲥⲓ̄ⲧⲉ	two (fem.) (346b)
ⲥⲛⲁⲩ	two (346b)
ⲥⲛⲟⲟⲩⲥ	two, in compound ⲙⲛ̄ⲧⲥⲛⲟⲟⲩⲥ twelve (347a)

ⲥⲁⲁⲛⲱ̄	to nourish (347b); prenominal ⲥⲁⲁⲛⲱ-, ⲥⲁⲛⲱ-; presuffixal ⲥⲁⲛⲟⲩⲱ-, stative ⲥⲁⲛⲁⲱⲧ̄ "(is) nourished, well-fed"
ⲥⲛⲟⲩ	blood (masc.) (348a)
ⲥⲱⲛϩ̄	to bind, put in fetters (348b); presuffixal ⲥⲟⲛϩ-
ⲥⲟⲡ	occasion, time (masc.) (349b)
ⲥⲟⲡⲥⲡ̄	to entreat (352b); presuffixal ⲥⲡ̄ⲥⲱⲡ-
ⲥⲡⲟⲧⲟⲩ	lips, shore, edge (353a)
ⲥⲱⲣ	to spread, scatter (353b)
ⲥⲟⲩⲣⲉ	thorn (Fem.) (354a)
ⲥⲣⲟⲃⲧ̄	stative of ⲥⲣ̄ϥⲉ
ⲥⲣⲟⲙⲣⲙ̄	to daze, confuse, obscure (356a); presuffixal ⲥⲣⲙ̄ⲣⲱⲙ-
ⲥⲣ̄ϥⲉ	to be at leisure (357a); stative ⲥⲣⲟⲃⲧ̄, ⲥⲣⲟϥⲧ̄ "(is) at leisure"
ⲥⲟⲉⲓⲧ	fame, reputation (masc.) (359a) ⲧ-ⲥⲟⲉⲓⲧ to be famous
ⲥⲧⲱϩⲉ	see ⲥⲱⲧ
ⲥⲱⲧ	repeat (with ⲉ-) (360a)
ⲥⲱⲧ	a measure of land (360a) in ⲥⲧⲱϩⲉ a small measure of tilled land (fem.) (89b)
ⲥⲱⲧⲉ	to save, redeem (362a); presuffixal ⲥⲟⲟⲧ- ⲥⲟⲧ-
ⲥⲟⲧⲃⲉϥ	tool, weapon (363b) ⲥⲟⲧⲃⲉϥ ⲙ̄ⲙⲓⲱⲉ weapon
ⲥⲱⲧⲙ̄	to hear, listen (with ⲥ-), obey (with ⲛ̄ⲥⲁ-) (363b); presuffixal ⲥⲟⲧⲙ-
ⲥⲧⲟ	see ⲧⲥⲧⲟ
ⲥⲧ̄ⲙⲏⲧ	obedient
ⲥⲱⲧⲡ̄	to choose, prefer (365a); stative ⲥⲟⲧⲡ̄ "(is) preferable"
ⲥⲧⲱⲧ	to tremble (366b) (with art.) trembling
ⲥⲧⲏⲩ	stative of ⲧⲥⲧⲟ, ⲥⲧⲟ
ⲥⲏⲩ	time (masc.) (367b)
ⲥⲓⲟⲩ	star (masc.) (368a)
ⲥⲟⲟⲩ	six (368b)
ⲥⲟⲩⲟ	corn, wheat (masc.) (369a)
ⲥⲓⲟⲟⲩⲛⲉ	bath (369b)
ⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ, ⲥⲁⲟⲩⲛ	to know (369b); prenominal ⲥⲟⲩⲛ̃-, presuffixal ⲥⲟⲩⲱⲛ-

ⲥⲟⲩⲛⲧ-	price (possessed) (369h)
ⲥⲓⲟⲩⲣ	eunuch (371a)
ⲥⲟⲟⲩⲧⲛ̄	to stretch, straighten, uphold (371a); presuffixal ⲥⲟⲩⲧⲱⲛ-, stative ⲥⲟⲩⲧⲱⲛ "(is) upright, established"
ⲥⲱⲟⲩϩ	to gather, assemble (with ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ) (372a): stative ⲥⲟⲟⲩϩ "(is) assembled" (with art.) gathering, assembly
ⲥⲱⲱ	to despise (375a); presuffixal ⲥⲟⲱ- stative ⲥⲏⲱ "(is) despised, despicable"
ⲥⲓⲱⲉ	to be, become bitter (376b); stative ⲥⲁⲱⲉ "(is) bitter" (with art.) bitterness
ⲥⲱⲱⲉ	to creep, crawl (376b)
ⲥⲱⲱⲉ	field (fem.) (377a)
ⲥⲱⲱⲧ̄	to stop, impede (377b)
ⲥⲁⲱϥ̄	seven (378a)
ⲥⲱⲱϥ̄	to despise (376a); presuffixal ⲥⲟⲱϥ-
ⲥⲁϥ	yesterday (378b) (adv.) ⲛ̄ⲥⲁϥ yesterday
ⲥⲱⲱϥ	to defile, be impure (378b); stative ⲥⲟⲟϥ "(is) defiled, impure"
ⲥⲏϥⲉ	sword (fem.) (379a)
ⲥⲱϩ	deaf person (379b)
ⲥⲟⲟϩⲉ	to remove (380a), reflexive; prenominal ⲥⲁϩⲉ-, presuffixal ⲥⲁϩⲱ-
ⲥϩⲁⲓ	to write (381b); presuffixal ⲥⲁϩ-, ⲥϩⲁⲓ- stative ⲥⲓϩ "(is) written"
ⲥⲁϩⲛⲉ	provision, management (masc.) (385b) ⲟⲩⲉϩ-ⲥⲁϩⲛⲉ to bid, instruct (with art.) instruction
ⲥϩⲟⲩⲟⲣⲧ̄	stative of ⲥⲁϩⲟⲩ
ⲥⲁϩⲟⲩ	to curse (387a); prenominal ⲥϩⲟⲩⲣ̄-, ⲥϩⲟⲩⲉⲣ-. presuffixal ⲥϩⲟⲩⲱⲣ- stative ⲥϩⲟⲩⲟⲣⲧ̄ "(is) cursed"
ⲥϩⲓⲙⲉ	woman, wife (385a); plur. ϩⲓⲟⲙⲉ
ⲥⲟⲃ	fool (388a)
ⲥⲃⲏⲣ	to sail, wander (388b)
ⲥⲃⲣⲁϩⲧ̄	to rest oneself (389b)

ⲥⲁⲃⲃⲁⲧⲟⲛ	Sabbath (masc.)
ⲥⲁⲣⲁⲫⲓⲛ	Seraphim
ⲥⲁⲣⲕⲓⲕⲟⲥ/ⲟⲛ	of the flesh
ⲥⲁⲣⲝ	flesh (fem.)
ⲡ-ⲥⲁⲧⲁⲛⲁⲥ	Satan
ⲥⲕⲁⲛⲇⲁⲗⲓⲍⲉ	to cause to stumble, give offence
ⲥⲕⲁⲛⲇⲁⲗⲟⲛ	offence (masc.)
ⲥⲕⲱⲡⲧⲉ, ⲥⲕⲟⲡⲧⲉ	to joke
ⲥⲱⲙⲁ	body (masc.)
ⲥⲱⲙⲁⲧⲓⲕⲟⲥ/ⲟⲛ	bodily, of flesh, physical
ⲡ-ⲥⲱⲧⲏⲣ	the Saviour
ⲥⲟⲫⲓⲁ	wisdom (fem.)
ⲥⲟⲫⲟⲥ	wise
ⲥⲡⲁⲧⲁⲗⲁ	to lead a wanton life, live lewedly
ⲥⲡⲟⲩⲇⲁⲍⲉ	to be eager, busy, earnest
ⲥⲡⲟⲩⲇⲏ	zeal, earnest, eagerness (fem.)
ⲥⲧⲁⲩⲣⲟⲥ	cross (masc.)
ⲥⲩⲗⲁ	to strip bare, plunder
ⲥⲩⲛⲁⲅⲱⲅⲏ	assembly, synagogue (fem.)
ⲥⲩⲛⲏⲑⲉⲓⲁ	custom, habit (fem.)
ⲥⲩⲛⲭⲓⲥⲧⲁ	to present oneself
ⲥⲩⲛⲧⲉⲗⲉⲓⲁ	consummation, end (fem.)
ⲥⲩⲙⲫⲱⲛⲉⲓ	to be in agreement
ⲥⲫⲣⲁⲅⲓⲥ	seal (fem.)
ⲥⲭⲏⲙⲁ	monk's habit (masc.)

PROPER NAMES:

ⲥⲁⲃⲃⲁⲧⲟⲛ	Sabbath
ⲥⲁⲣⲉⲡⲧⲁ	Sarepta, Zarephath (top.)
ⲥⲁⲣⲣⲁ	Sarah
ⲡ-ⲥⲁⲧⲁⲛⲁⲥ	Satan
ⲥⲉⲣⲕⲓⲟⲥ	Sergios
ⲥⲏⲑ	Seth
ⲥⲏⲙ	Shem
ⲥⲓⲙⲱⲛ	Simon
ⲥⲓⲛⲟⲩⲑⲓⲟⲥ	Shenoute
ⲥⲟⲇⲟⲙⲁ	Sodom (top.)
ⲥⲡⲟⲩⲇⲁⲓⲟⲥ	Spudaios

ⲧ (TAU)

ϯ	to give, cause (392a); prenominal ϯ- presuffixal ⲧⲁⲁ-, stative ⲧⲟ "(is) given"; imperative ⲙⲁ. ϯ ϯ- active deriving auxiliary
ⲧⲟ	share, part (fem.) (396a)
	ⲭⲓ-ⲧⲟ to share
ⲧⲱ ⲉⲧⲱ	"How can you compare ...?" (396b)
ⲧⲁⲓⲃⲉ	chest (fem.) (397a)
ⲧⲏⲏⲃⲉ	finger (masc.) (397b)
ⲧⲱⲱⲃⲉ	to repay, requite (398b)
	(with art.) requital, revenge
ⲧⲃⲁ	ten thousand (399a)
ⲧⲃ̄ⲃⲟ	to purify, hallow (399b); prenominal ⲧⲃ̄ⲃⲉ-, presuffixal ⲧⲃ̄ⲃⲟ- stative ⲧⲃ̄ⲃⲏⲩ "(is) pure"
	(with art.) purity
ⲧⲃ̄ⲛⲏ	beast, cattle (400b); plur. ⲧⲃ̄ⲛⲟⲟⲩⲉ
ⲧⲃ̄ⲧ	fish (401b)
ⲧⲱⲃϩ̄	to entreat, pray (402a)
ⲧⲁⲓⲟ, ⲧⲁⲉⲓⲟ	to honour, glorify (390b); prenominal ⲧⲁⲓⲉ-, stative ⲧⲁⲓⲏⲟⲩ "(is) honoured"
ⲧⲱⲕ	to be firm, strong (403a)
	ⲧⲱⲕ ⲛ̄ϩⲓⲏⲧ to take courage
ⲧⲁⲕⲟ	to destroy; to perish (405a)
ⲧⲱⲕⲙ̄	do draw (sword) (406a); stative ⲧⲟⲕⲙ̄ "(is) drawn"
ⲧⲕⲁⲥ	pain, disease (masc.) (407a)
ⲧⲁⲗⲟ	to mount, ascend (408a)
ⲧⲱⲗⲙ̄	to defile (410b); stative ⲧⲟⲗⲙ̄ "(is) defiled"
ⲧⲁ̄ϯⲗⲉ	drop (411b)
ⲧⲁⲗⲱⲟ	to heal (411b)
ⲧⲱⲙ	to shut (up); to be shut (up) (412b); stative ⲧⲏⲙ "(he) shup up"
	(with art.) obtuseness
ϯⲙⲉ	town, village (414a) (masc.)
ⲧⲁⲙⲓⲟ	to create (413a); prenominal ⲧⲁⲙⲓⲉ-; stative ⲧⲁⲙⲓⲏⲩ "(is) created"
	(with art.) creation
ⲧⲁⲙⲟ	to inform, tell (413b); prenominal ⲧⲁⲙⲉ-, presuffixal ⲧⲁⲙⲟ-

ⲧⲙⲁⲓⲟ	to justify (415b); stative ⲧⲙⲁⲓⲏⲩ "(is) justified"
ⲧⲙ̄ⲙⲟ	to feed, nourish (416a)
ⲧⲱⲱⲙⲉ	to be fitting, appropriate (414b); stative ⲧⲟⲟⲙⲉ "(is) appropriate"
ⲧⲱⲙⲥ̄	to bury (416a); presuffixal ⲧⲟⲙⲥ-
-ⲧⲛ̄-	see ⲧⲱⲣⲉ
ⲧⲱⲛ	quarrel, dispute (418a) ϯ- ⲧⲱⲛ to quarrel, dispute
ⲧⲱⲛ	(adv.) where? Whence? (417b)
ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ	(adv.) now (485a)
ⲧⲟⲛⲧⲛ̄	to be like, resemble (420a); stative ⲧⲛ̄ⲧⲱⲛ "(is) like"
ⲧⲛ̄ⲛⲟⲟⲩ	to send (419b)
ⲧⲛ̄ϩ	wing (masc.) (421a)
ⲧⲁⲛϩⲟ	to keep alive, nourish (421a); prenominal ⲧⲁⲛϩⲉ- presuffixal ⲧⲁⲛϩⲟ-
ⲧⲁⲛϩⲟⲩⲧ	to trust, entrust (421b); presuffixal ⲧⲁⲛϩⲟⲩⲧ-
ⲧⲟⲡ	fold, lap (masc.) (422a)
ϯⲡⲉ	taste (fem.) (423a) ϫⲓ- ϯⲡⲉ to get a taste
ⲧⲱⲡⲉ	to taste (423a); prenominal ⲧⲉⲡ-
ⲧⲁⲡⲣⲟ	mouth (fem.) (423b)
ⲧⲏⲣ-	all of..., the whole of... (424a) ⲡⲧⲏⲣⲡ̄ the All, the Universe (adv.) ⲉⲡⲧⲏⲣⲡ̄ at all
ⲧⲱⲣⲉ	hand (fem.) (425a); possessed ⲧⲛ̄-/ⲧⲟⲟⲧ- ⲉⲧⲛ̄-/ⲉⲧⲟⲟⲧ- (prep.) "to (the hand of...)" ⲛ̄ⲧⲛ̄-/ⲛ̄ⲧⲟⲟⲧ- (prep.) "in the hands of..." ϩⲓⲧⲛ̄-/ϩⲓⲧⲟⲟⲧ- (prep.) "by (the hand of...)"
ⲧⲱⲣⲡ̄	to seize, rob, plunder (430b) (with art.) plunder
ⲧⲣⲓⲣ	oven (fem.) (431b)
ⲧⲣ̄ⲣⲉ	to tremble (431b)
ⲧⲣ̄ⲣⲟⲙⲡⲉ	see ⲣⲟⲙⲡⲉ
ⲧⲟⲣⲧⲣ̄	to pierce (432b)
ⲧⲥⲟ	to let drink (434a)
ⲧⲥⲓⲟ	to satisfy (also reflexive) (434a)
ⲧⲥⲁⲃⲟ	to teach, enlighten (434b) ⲧⲥⲁⲃⲉ-ⲉⲓⲁⲧ- to enlighten

ⲧⲥⲧⲟ, ⲥⲧⲟ	to reject, repulse, turn out (436a); presuffixal ⲧⲥⲧⲟ-; stative (ⲧ)ⲥⲧⲏⲩ "(is) rejected"
ⲧⲱⲧ	to agree, be content (437b)
ⲧⲟⲟⲧ-	see ⲧⲱⲣⲉ
ⲧⲧⲟ	to cause to give; prenominal ⲧⲧⲉ-
ⲧⲏⲩ	wind (masc.) (439b)
ⲧⲁⲓⲟⲩ	fifty (440b)
ϯⲟⲩ	five (440b)
ⲧⲟⲟⲩ	hill (masc.) (440b)
ⲧⲁⲩⲟ	to send, put forth; to tell (441b)
ⲧⲟⲟⲩⲉ	shoe (masc.) (443b)
ⲧⲟⲩⲱ-	bosom (possessed) (444b)
	ⲡⲉⲧϩⲓⲧⲟⲩⲱ- (one's) neighbour
ⲧⲱⲟⲩⲛ	to arise, stand up (445a)
ⲧⲟⲩⲛⲟⲥ	to raise, set up (446b); prenominal ⲧⲟⲩⲛⲉⲥ-
ⲧⲁϣⲟ	to increase, multiply (452b)
ⲧⲟⲩⲭⲟ	to save (448b); prenominal ⲧⲟⲩⲭⲉ-, presuffixal ⲧⲟⲩⲭⲟ-
ⲧⲁⲭⲣⲟ	to strengthen, make firm (462b)
ⲧⲱϣ	to appoint, determine, ordain (449b)
	(with art.) vocation, ordainment
ⲧⲱϩ	chaff (masc.) (453b)
ⲧⲱϩ	to mingle, meddle, disturb (453b); presuffixal ⲧⲁϩ-
ⲧⲁϩⲟ	to meet, happen; to make to stand (with ⲉⲣⲁⲧ-) (455a)
ϯϩⲉ	to be, become drunk (456b); stative ⲧⲁϩⲉ "(is) drunk"
ⲑⲟ	to be spoiled, become bad (457a)
ⲧⲱϩⲙ̄	to call, summon (458b)
ⲧⲱⲃⲉ	to fix, plant (464a)
ⲧⲃⲁⲓⲟ	to disgrace, condemn (465b); prenominal ⲧⲃⲁⲓⲉ-, presuffixal ⲧⲃⲁⲓⲟ-, stative (ⲧ)ⲃⲁⲓⲏⲩ "(is) disgraced, condemned"

ⲧⲁⲭⲩ, ⲧⲁⲭⲏ	(adv.) quickly
ⲧⲁⲗⲁⲓⲡⲱⲣⲟⲥ	miserable person
ⲧⲁⲙⲉⲓⲟⲛ, ⲧⲁⲙⲓⲟⲛ	inner chamber, private room
ⲧⲁⲫⲟⲥ	grave (masc.)
ⲧⲉⲗⲱⲛⲓⲟⲛ	custom-house (masc.)

ⲧⲉⲭⲛⲏ	craft, skill, profession (fem.)
ⲧⲉⲭⲛⲓⲧⲏⲥ	artisan, craftsman
ⲧⲉⲗⲱⲛⲏⲥ	tax-collector
ⲧⲓⲙⲱⲣⲓⲁ	punishment, retribution (fem.)
ⲧⲟⲗⲙⲁ	to dare
ⲧⲟⲡⲟⲥ	holy place, shrine (masc.)
ⲧⲟⲧⲉ	(adv.) then
ⲧⲣⲁⲡⲉⲍⲁ	table (fem.)
ⲧⲣⲓⲁⲥ	trinity
	ⲧⲉⲧⲣⲓⲁⲥ the Holy Trinity
ⲧⲣⲟⲫⲏ	nourishment (fem.)
ⲧⲩⲣⲁⲛⲛⲟⲥ	tyrant

PROPER NAMES:

ⲧⲁϩⲟⲙ, ⲧⲁϩⲱⲙ	Tahom (fem. name)
ⲧⲁⲩⲣⲓⲛⲟⲥ	Taurinus
ⲧⲓⲙⲟⲑⲉⲟⲥ	Timothy

ⲟⲩ, ⲩ (HE): Native ⲟⲩ-, Greek ⲟⲩ- or ϩⲩ-

ⲟⲩⲁ	blasphemy (masc.) (468b)
	ϫⲓ-ⲟⲩⲁ to blaspheme
ⲟⲩⲁ	one (masc.) (469a)
ⲟⲩⲉ	to be distant, far (470b); stative ⲟⲩⲏⲩ "(is) distant"
	(adv.) ⲉⲡⲟⲩⲉ far
ⲟⲩⲉⲓ	one (fem.) (469a)
ⲟⲩⲱ	to have already done, finish doing (473b)
ⲟⲩⲱ	to bud, blossom (475a)
	†-ⲟⲩⲱ to sprout, begin to blossom
	(with art.) sprouting, blossoming
ⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ	stative of ⲟⲩⲟⲡ
ⲟⲩⲏⲏⲃ	priest (masc.) (488a)
ⲟⲩⲃⲁϣ	to be, become white (476a)
	(with art.) whiteness
ⲟⲩⲟⲓ, ⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓ	woe (to ..., with ⲛ̄-/ⲛⲁ-) (472b)
ⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲉ	husbandsman (masc.) (473a)
ⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲛ	light (masc.) (480a)
	ⲣ̄-ⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲛ to brighten, light up
ⲟⲩⲱⲱⲗⲉ	to flourish, be well off (477a); stative ⲟⲩⲟⲟⲗⲉ "(is) flourishing"

ⲟⲩⲱⲙ	to eat (478a); prenominal ⲟⲩⲉⲙ-
ⲟⲩⲟⲙⲉ̄	manger (masc.)
ⲟⲩⲟⲛ	(any)thing/(any) one, (some)thing/(some)one (482a)
ⲟⲩⲱⲛ	to open (482b); stative ⲟⲩϩⲛ "(is) open(ed)"
ⲟⲩⲉⲓⲛⲉ	to pass by, lapse (483b)
ⲟⲩⲛⲟⲩ	hour (fem.) (484a); with definite article (adv.) ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ now
ⲟⲩⲛ̄-	"there is", statement of existence (481a)
ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲁ-	"(he) has", possession verboid (481a); prenominal ⲟⲩⲛ̄ⲧⲉ-
ⲟⲩⲱϩⲙ̄	wolf (masc.) (485b)
ⲟⲩⲛⲟⲩ	to rejoice (485b) (with art.) joy, gladness
ⲟⲩⲱⲛϩ̄	(with ⲉⲃⲟⲗ) to make appear, manifest, show (also reflexive): to appear (486a); presuffixal ⲟⲩⲟⲛϩ-, stative ⲟⲩⲟⲛϩ̄ "(is) manifest, apparent"
ⲟⲩⲟⲡ	to be, become pure, holy (487a); stative ⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ "(is) holy"
ⲟⲩⲣⲟⲧ	to be glad, eager (490a); stative ⲣⲟⲟⲩⲧ "(is) glad" (with art.) gladness, eagerness, zeal
ⲟⲩⲉⲣϩⲧⲉ	foot (fem.) (491a)
ⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲱ	time (masc.) (499a)
ⲟⲩⲱⲱ	to wish, desire, love (500a); prenominal ⲟⲩⲉⲱ-, presuffixal ⲟⲩⲁⲱ- (with art.) wish, will, desire
ⲟⲩⲱϣ	night (fem.) (502a); with definite art. ⲧⲉⲟⲩⲱϣ; plur. ⲟⲩⲱϣⲟⲟⲩⲉ
ⲟⲩⲱⲱϐ̄	to answer (502a)
ⲟⲩⲱⲱⲧ̄	(with ⲛ̄-/ⲛⲁ-) to worship (504a)
ⲟⲩⲱⲱⲧ̄	to crush; to be crushed, worn down (505a)
ⲟⲩⲱϩ	to add (with ⲉ-/ⲉⲧⲟⲟⲧ-), lay; to stay, dwell, be settled; to follow (with ⲛ̄ⲥⲁ-) (505a); prenominal ⲟⲩⲉϩ-, presuffixal ⲟⲩⲁϩ-, stative ⲟⲩϩϩ "(is) settled, dwells, follows"
ⲟⲩⲱϩⲙ̄	to repeat, answer, do again (509a) (adv.) ⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲱϩⲙ̄ again
ⲟⲩϩⲟⲣ	dog (510a); with definite art. ⲡⲉⲟⲩϩⲟⲣ; plur. ⲟⲩϩⲟⲟⲣ
ⲟⲩϫⲁⲓ	to be safe, sound (511b); stative ⲟⲩⲟϫ "(is) safe"

ⲟⲩⲟⲃⲉ	cheek, jaw (512a)
	ⲟⲩⲥⲃ-ⲣⲟ doorpost (masc.)

ⲟⲩ ⲙⲟⲛⲟⲛ	(adv.) not only
ⲍⲩⲗⲏ	matter, stuff (fem.)
ⲍⲩⲡⲁⲣⲭⲟⲛⲧⲁ	(plur.) possessions
ⲍⲩⲡⲟⲕⲣⲓⲥⲓⲥ	pretence
ⲍⲩⲡⲟⲙⲉⲓⲛⲉ	to suffer, endure, submit
ⲍⲩⲡⲟⲙⲟⲛⲏ	endurance, submission (fem.)
ⲍⲩⲡⲟⲡⲧⲉⲩⲉ	to suspect
ⲍⲩⲡⲟⲧⲁⲅⲏ	submission, submissiveness (fem.)
ⲟⲩⲥⲓⲁ	essence (fem.)

ⲫ (PHI) (no Egyptian lexemes)

ⲫⲁⲛⲉⲣⲟⲛ	(adv.) evidently, obviously
ⲫⲁⲛⲧⲁⲥⲓⲁ	fantasy (fem.)
ⲫⲁⲣⲓⲥⲁⲓⲟⲥ	Pharisee
ⲫⲑⲟⲛⲉⲓ	to envy, begrudge
ⲫⲑⲟⲛⲟⲥ	envy (masc.)
ⲫⲟⲣⲉⲓ	to carry
ⲫⲩⲥⲓⲥ	nature (fem.)
ⲫⲱⲛⲏ	voice (fem.)

PROPER NAMES:

ⲫⲁⲛⲟⲩⲏⲗ	Phenuel
ⲫⲁⲣⲁⲱ	Pharao

χ (KHI) (no Egyptian lexemes)

ⲭⲁⲣⲓⲥ	grace (fem.)
ⲭⲏⲣⲁ	widow (fem.)
ⲭⲣⲉⲓⲁ, ⲭⲣⲓⲁ	need, exigency (fem.)
	ⲣ̄-ⲭⲣⲉⲓⲁ to be in need
ⲭⲣⲏⲙⲁ	property (plur.)
ⲭⲣⲏⲥⲧⲟⲥ, ⲭⲣⲓⲥⲧⲟⲥ	good, kind
ⲭⲣⲓⲥⲧⲓⲁⲛⲟⲥ, ⲭⲣⲏⲥⲧⲓⲁⲛⲟⲥ, ⲭⲣⲉⲓⲥⲧⲓⲁⲛⲟⲥ	Christian
$\overline{\text{ⲭⲥ}}$ in ⲡⲉ$\overline{\text{ⲭⲥ}}$ = ⲡⲉⲭⲣⲓⲥⲧⲟⲥ	Christ

ⲭⲱⲣⲁ	country, land, region (fem.)
ⲭⲱⲣⲓⲥ	(prep.) without, apart from

PROPER NAMES:

ⲭⲟⲥⲥⲟⲣⲟⲁⲥ	Chossoroas (a high official)
ⲭⲣⲏⲥⲓⲡⲡⲟⲥ	Chresippus

ⲯ (PSI) (no Egyptian lexemes)

ⲯⲁⲗⲗⲉⲓ	to sing, recite hymns
ⲯⲁⲗⲧⲏⲣⲓⲟⲛ	psalter (masc.)
ⲯⲩⲭⲏ	soul (fem.)

ⲱ (O = O MEGA)

ⲱⲃ̄ⲱ̄	to forget, overlook (518b)
ⲱⲙⲕ̄	to swallow (523a); presuffixal ⲟⲙⲕ-
ⲱⲙⲥ̄	to be sunk, drown (523a); presuffixal ⲟⲙⲥ-
ⲱⲛⲉ	stone (524a) (masc.)
ⲱⲛϩ̄	to live (525a); stative ⲟⲛϩ̄ "(is) alive"
ⲱⲡ	to count, count as, consider (526a); prenominal ⲉⲡ-, presuffixal ⲟⲡ-, stative ⲏⲡ "(is) numbered, counted, considered"
ⲱⲣⲃ̄	to enclose, shut in, set apart; to be enclosed, be apart, secluded (528a)
ⲱⲣⲕ̄	to swear (529a)
ⲱⲣϫ̄	to be firm, be confirmed, real (530a) (with art.) firmness, assurance, reality
ⲱⲥⲕ̄	to delay (530a)
ⲱⲱ	to read (out), call (out) (533a); prenominal ⲉⲱ-, ⲁⲱ-, presuffixal ⲟⲱ- ⲁⲱ-ⲁϩⲟⲙ to sigh ⲁⲱ-ⲕⲁⲕ to shout
ⲱⲱⲙ̄	to quench; to be quenched, extinguished (with ⲉⲃⲟⲗ) (535a)
ⲱϥⲧ̄	to fix, nail (536a); stative ⲟϥⲧ̄ "(is) fixed, nailed"
ⲱϩⲉ	(with ⲉⲣⲁⲧ-) ⲁϩⲉⲣⲁⲧ- to stand (up) (536a)
ⲱϩⲥ̄	to reap, harvest (538b); presuffixal ⲟϩⲥ-

ⲱⲭⲛ̄	to expire, lapse, cease (539a)

ⲱⲫⲉⲗⲉⲓⲁ	use, advantage, benefit (fem.)

PROPER NAMES:

ⲍⲱⲣⲓⲅⲉⲛⲏⲥ	Origene

ⲯ (SHAI)

ⲯ-, ⲉⲯ-	to be able to (541a)
ⲯⲁ	to shine, rise (of the sun) (542b)
ⲯⲁ	festival (masc.) (543a)
	ⲣ̄-ⲯⲁ to celebrate
ⲯⲁ	nose (masc.) (543b); possessed ⲯⲁⲛⲧ-
ⲯⲉ	to go (544a); stative ⲛⲁ "(is) going"
	ⲯⲱⲯⲉ it behoves, it is befitting
	ⲯⲉⲛⲍⲁⲥⲓⲉ to be drowned
ⲯⲉ	wood (masc.) (546a)
ⲯⲉ	a hundred (546b)
ⲯⲓ	to measure (547b)
	(with art.) measure
ⲯⲓⲃⲉ	to change; to be changed, to differ (551a); stative ⲯⲟⲃⲉ "(is) different"
ⲯⲃ̄ⲃⲉⲓⲱ	repayment, exchange (fem.) (552b)
ⲯⲃⲏⲣ	friend, mate (masc.) (553a); plur. ⲯⲃⲉⲉⲣ; fem. ⲯⲃⲉⲉⲣⲉ
	ⲯⲃⲣ̄- co- (or -mate), in compounds
ⲯⲱⲃⲍ̄	to be scorched (554a); stative ⲯⲟⲃⲍ̄ "(is) scorched"
ⲯⲕⲁⲕ	cry, shout (556a)
	ⲁⲩⲕⲁⲕ to cry out, shout (ⲱⲯ)
ⲯⲱⲗ	to plunder (557b); presuffixal ⲯⲟⲗ-
ⲯⲗⲏⲗ	to pray (559a)
ⲯⲉⲗⲉⲉⲧ	bride (fem.) (560b)
	ⲙⲁⲛⲯⲉⲗⲉⲉⲧ wedding
ⲯⲗⲟⲕ	disgrace (masc.) (561b)
ⲯⲏⲙ	small person, amount: small (563a)
ⲯⲱⲙ	summer (masc.) (564b)
ⲯⲙ̄ⲙⲟ	strange person, stranger (565b)

ⲯⲙ̄ⲙⲟ	stranger (fem.)
ⲯⲟⲙ̄, ⲯⲟⲙⲛ̄ⲧ	three (566b)
	(fem.) ⲯⲟⲙⲧⲉ
ⲯⲙ̄ⲯⲉ	to serve, worship (567a)
ⲯⲏⲛ	tree (masc.) (568b)
ⲯⲓⲛⲉ	to ask, inquire, seek (with ⲛ̄ⲥⲁ-) (569a)
ⲯⲱⲛⲉ	to be, become ill (570b)
	(with art.) disease
	ⲯⲁⲛ-ϩⲧⲏ-, ⲯⲉⲛ-ϩⲧⲏ-, ⲯⲛ̄-ϩⲧⲏ- (to be) ill at heart, pitying
ⲯⲁⲛⲧ-	see ⲯⲁ nose
ⲯⲟⲛⲧⲉ	thorn (fem.) (573a)
ⲯⲛⲟⲩ	to stink (573b)
ⲯⲱⲡ	to receive, accept (574b); prenominal ⲯⲡ̄- ⲯⲉⲡ-, presuffixal ⲯⲟⲡ-, stative ⲯⲏⲡ "(is) acceptable"
ⲯⲓⲡⲉ	to be ashamed (576b)
	(with art.) shame
	†-ⲯⲓⲡⲉ to put to shame
ⲯⲱⲡⲉ	to happen, take place; to become, come into existence (577b); stative ⲯⲟⲟⲩ "(is) in existence"
ⲯⲡⲏⲣⲉ	wonder, cause for amazement (fem.) (581a)
ⲯⲁⲁⲣ	to strike (583b)
ⲯⲁⲓⲣⲉ	sheepfold (fem.) (584a)
ⲯⲏⲣⲉ	son (masc.) (584a)
	ⲯⲏⲣⲉ ⲯⲏⲙ child, son
ⲯⲉⲉⲣⲉ	daughter (fem.) (584a)
	ⲯⲉⲉⲣⲉ ⲯⲏⲙ child, girl
ⲯⲱⲣⲡ̄	to be early; to do as first, do first (586a)
	(with art.) dawn, early morning
ⲯⲟⲣⲡ̄, ⲯⲣ̄ⲡ-ⲛ̄-	first (587a)
	(adv.) ⲛ̄ⲯⲟⲣⲡ̄, ⲯⲟⲣⲡ̄ at first
	ⲣ̄ⲯⲣⲡ̄ⲛ̄- to do first, early
ⲯⲟⲣⲯⲣ̄	to wreck, destroy (589a); prenominal ⲯⲣ̄ⲯⲣ̄-, presuffixal ⲯⲣ̄ⲯⲱⲣ-
ⲯⲱⲥ	shepherd (masc.) (589b)
ⲯⲥ̄ⲛⲉ	in (adv.) ϩⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲯⲥ̄ⲛⲉ suddenly (589b)
ⲯⲧⲟⲣⲧⲣ̄	to trouble; to be troubled (597b); stative ⲯⲧⲣ̄ⲧⲱⲣ "(is) troubled"
	(with art.) trouble

ⲯⲱⲱⲧ	to cut, kill, sacrifice; to deprive; to be deprived, lack (590a); stative ⲯⲁⲁⲧ "(is) deprived, lacking"
	(with art.) cutting
	(adv.) ϩⲛ̄ⲟⲩⲯⲱⲱⲧ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ decisively
ⲯⲧⲉⲕⲟ	prison (masc.) (595b); plur. ⲯⲧⲉⲕⲱⲟⲩ
ⲯⲱⲧⲙ̄	to shut (595b); presuffixal ⲯⲟⲧⲙ-, stative ⲯⲟⲧⲙ̄ "(is) shut"
ⲯⲧⲁⲙ	to shut up; to be shut up (with ⲉ-/ⲉⲣⲟ-, ⲉⲣⲱ-) (596a)
ⲯⲁⲩ	worth, value (masc.) (599a)
ⲯⲟⲟⲩⲉ	to be, become dry (601b)
ⲯⲟⲩⲟ	to flow; to empty; to be empty (602a); stative ⲯⲟⲩⲉⲓⲧ "(is) empty"
ⲯⲱⲯ	to scatter; to be scattered (605b)
	(with art.) scattering
ⲯⲟⲩⲯⲟⲩ	(reflexive) to pride oneself, boast (604a)
	(with art.) pride
ⲯⲱϥ	to lay waste; to be laid waste (609b)
	(with art.) laying waste
ⲯⲁϥⲧⲉ	impious, iniquitous person (611b)
ⲯⲁϫⲉ	to speak, talk (612a)
	(with art.) word(s), speech
ⲯⲱⲱϫⲉ, ⲯⲱϫⲉ	to wrestle, struggle (615a)
ⲯⲟϫⲛⲉ	to counsel; to take counsel (615b)
	(with art.) counsel
	ϫⲓ-ⲯⲟϫⲛⲉ to take, receive counsel
ⲯⲃⲏⲃⲟⲙ	to be able, see ⲃⲟⲙ

PROPER NAMES:

ⲯⲉⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ	Shenoute

ϥ (FAI)

ϥⲓ	to carry, take (620a); prenominal ϥⲓ-, presuffixal ϥⲓⲧ-
	ϥⲓ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ to raise
	(with art.) raising
ϥⲛ̄ⲧ, ⲃⲛ̄ⲧ	worm (623b)
ϥⲱⲧⲉ	to wipe out (624a); prenominal ϥⲉⲧ-, presuffixal ϥⲟⲧ-
ϥⲧⲟⲟⲩ	four (625a)

ϩ (HORI)

ϩⲁϵ	last (occasion)
ϩⲁⲏ	end (fem.)
ϩϵ	to fall (637a)
ϩϵ, ϵϩϵ	"yes" (64b)
ϩϵ	manner, way (fem.) (638b)
	ⲛ̄ⲑϵ, ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲑϵ as, like ("in the manner of .../ that ...")
	(adv.) ⲛ̄ⲧⲉⲓϩϵ thus, in this manner
	ⲛ̄ⲁⲱ ⲛ̄ϩⲥ how? ("in what manner?")
ϩⲏ	belly, inner part (642b); possessed ϩⲏⲧ-
ϩⲏ	forepart, front (fem.) (640b)
	(adv.) ϩⲁⲑⲏ before
ϩⲓⲏ	way, road (fem.) (646a); plur. ϩⲓⲟⲟⲩϵ
ϩⲟ	face (masc.) (646b)
	ϫⲓ-ϩⲟ to be prejudiced in favour, to be partial
ϩⲱ	to suffice (651a)
...ϩⲱⲱ-	reinforcer: "... for (his) part", "... he too"; (651b), 1st sgl. ϩⲱ, ϩⲱⲱⲧ, 2nd sgl. fem. ϩⲱⲱⲧϵ
ϩⲱⲃ	work, deed, affair, thing (abstract) (masc.) (653a); plur. ϩⲃⲏⲩϵ
	ⲣ̄-ϩⲱⲃ to work
ϩⲃⲁ	embarassment, misfortune (masc.) (656a)
ϩⲃⲱ.	see ϩⲟⲩ
ϩⲃⲟⲩⲣ	left hand, left side (656b)
ϩⲏⲃⲥ̄	lamp (masc.) (658a)
ϩⲱⲃⲥ̄	to cover (with ϵϫⲛ̄-) (658a); prenominal ϩϵⲃⲥ-
ϩⲃⲟⲟⲥ	clothes, garment, linen (659b); plural ϩⲃⲱⲱⲥ
ϩⲃ̄ⲥⲱ	garment (fem.) (660a)
ϩⲃⲏⲩϵ	plur. of ϩⲱⲃ
ϩⲁⲓ	husband (masc.) (636b)
ϩⲁⲕ	mild, sober person (660a)
ϩⲏⲕϵ	poor person (664a)
ϩⲕⲟ	to hunger (663b); stative ϩⲕⲁϵⲓⲧ "(is) hungry
ϩⲁⲗ	in ⲣ̄-ϩⲁⲗ to deceive, beguile (664b)
ϩⲱⲗ	to fly (665b); stative ϩⲏⲗ "(is) flying"
ϩⲱⲗ	to throw (666b); prenominal ϩϵⲗ-
ϩⲟⲟⲗϵ	moth (667a)

ϩⲁⲗⲟ	old man, old person (669b); plur. ϩⲁⲗⲟⲓ
ϩⲁⲗⲱ	old woman
ϩⲗⲟⲟⲗⲉ	to nurse child (669a)
ϩⲁⲗⲏⲧ	fowl (masc.) (671a); plur. ϩⲁⲗⲁⲁⲧⲉ, ϩⲁⲗⲁⲧⲉ
ϩⲗⲟϭ	to be, become sweet (673a); stative ϩⲟⲗϭ "(is) sweet"
	(with art.) sweetness
ϩⲱⲙ	to tread, trample (674b)
ϩⲁⲙⲟⲓ	"Would that ...!" (wish) (675a)
ϩⲓⲟⲙⲉ	plur. of ⲥϩⲓⲙⲉ
ϩⲙⲉ-	forty (676a)
	ϩⲙⲉⲯⲟⲙⲧⲉ forty-three
ϩⲙⲟⲩ	salt (masc.) (676b)
ϩⲙ̄ⲙⲉ	heat, fever, heat (fem.) (677b)
ϩⲙ̄ⲙⲉ	in ⲣ̄-ϩⲙ̄ⲙⲉ to steer, guide (677b)
ϩⲙⲟⲟⲥ	to sit, sit down (with ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ), dwell (679a)
ϩⲟⲙⲧ̄, ϩⲟⲙⲛ̄ⲧ	copper, money (678a)
ϩⲙⲟⲧ	grace, gift (masc.) (681a)
	ⲯⲡ̄-ϩⲙⲟⲧ ⲛ̄ⲧⲛ̄-/ⲛⲧⲟⲟⲧ- to thank
ϩⲙ̄ϩⲁⲗ	slave, servant (665a)
ϩⲟⲩⲛ	inside part (685a)
	(adv.) ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ inside, in
ϩⲱⲛ	to draw near (with ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ) (687a); stative ϩⲓⲛ "(is) near"
ϩⲱⲛ	to bid, enjoin (with ⲉⲧⲛ̄-/ⲉⲧⲟⲟⲧ-) (688a)
ϩⲓⲛⲏⲃ	to doze, sleep (691a)
ϩⲛⲁ-, ⲉϩⲛⲁ-	"(is) willing" (690a); prenominal (ⲥ)ϩⲛⲉ-
	ⲣ̄-ϩⲛⲁ- to be willing
ϩⲛⲟ, ϩⲛⲁⲁⲩ	vessel, object, thing (concrete) (692b)
ϩⲁⲡ	law, judgement, sentence (masc.) (693b)
ϩⲱⲡ	to hide (695a); prenominal ϩⲉⲡ-, presuffixal ϩⲟⲡ-, stative ϩⲓⲡ "(is) hidden"
	(with art.) hiding
ϩⲣⲉ	food (fem.) (701a)
ϩⲣⲉ	see ϩⲣⲁⲓ
ϩⲣⲁⲓ, ϩⲣⲉ	upper part (masc.) (698a)
	(adv.) ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ up
	(adv.) ⲙ̄ⲡϩⲣⲉ above
ϩⲣⲁⲓ	lower part (700a)
	(adv.) ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ down

ϩp̄ʙ	form, likeness (masc.) (701b) ϫι-ϩp̄ʙ to take form
ϩpoĸ	to be still; to cease (702b)
ϩpooγ	voice (masc.) (704b); possessed ϩpϧ-, plur. ϩpooγє ϫι-ϩpϧ- to raise one's voice
ϩpoɯ	to be, become heavy, difficult, severe (706a); stative ϩopɯ̄ "(is) heavy, difficult, severe" ϩϧpɯ-ϩнт long-suffering person
ϩϧpϭϩ	to keep, guard (with є-) (707b)
ϩϧcιє	in ɯєnϩϧcιє to be drowned (710a)
ϩιcє	to toil, trouble (710a) (with art.) toil, suffering
ϩϧт	silver (masc.) (713b)
ϩнт	heart (masc.) (714a); possessed ϩтн- ϧθнт stupid, pm̄n̄ϩнт clever
ϩнт-	see ϩн
ϩιєιт	pit (718a)
ϩωт	in p̄-ϩωт to sail (718b)
ϩoтє	fear (fem.) (720b) p̄-ϩoтє to fear
ϩoєιтє	clothes, garment (fem.) (720b)
ϩωтʙ̄	to murder (723b); prenominal ϩєтʙ-, presuffixal ϩoтʙ-
ϩωтn̄̄	to be reconciled (724b)
ϩтн-	see ϩнт heart
ϩто	horse (masc.) (723a); plur. ϩтωωр
ϩтомтм̄	to be dulled, darkened (724a)
ϩωтp̄	to be joined (726a); stative ϩoтp̄ "(is) joined"
ϩтор	necessity, compulsion (masc.) (726b)
ϩтωωр	see ϩто
ϩoтϩт̄, ϩoтϩєт	to inquire, examine (728a)
ϩнγ	profit (masc.) (729a) †-ϩнγ to profit
ϩιooγє	see ϩιн
ϩooγ	day (masc.) (730a) (adv.) м̄пooγ today
ϩooγ	(stative) "(is) bad, evil" (731a) nєθooγ (noun) evil, ("that which is evil")
ϩωoγ	to rain (732a) (with art.) rain

	ϩογⲛ̄πε rain (compound with πε sky)
ϩιογε	to cast, strike (732b); prenominal ϩι-, presuffixal ϩιτ-
ϩογο	excess, surplus (masc.) (735a)
	(adv.) ⲛ̄ϩογο more, rather
	ⲣ̄ϩογε- to do more, rather
ϩογειτε	beginning, first occasion (fem.) (738a)
ϩοογτ	male, man (738b)
ϩωϣ	to be in destress (740a); stative ϩⲏϣ "(is) in distress"
ϩοϥ	snake (740b)
	(fem.) ϩωʙ
ϩⲁϩ	many, much (741b)

For words of Greek origin beginning with ϩ, see under the second letter.

PROPER NAMES:

ϩωριгеннс	Origene
ϩⲣⲁββει	Rabbi (title)
ϩρεβεκκⲁ	Rebecca

ⲭ (DJANDJA)

ⲭⲏ	vanity, emptiness (747b)
	επⲭινⲭⲏ for no reason
	ⲛ̄ⲭινⲭⲏ in vain
ⲭι	to take, receive (747b); prenominal ⲭι-, presuffixal ⲭιτ- ⲭινϭονⲥ̄ violence (ϭονⲥ̄)
	ⲭινⲭⲏ see ⲭⲏ
ⲭο	to sow, send forth (752a)
ⲭω	to say (754a); prenominal ⲭε-, ⲭι-, presuffixal ⲭοο-; ⲭοοc "to say (it)"
	ⲭι-ογⲁ to blaspheme
	ⲭι-ϭολ to lie
ⲭω-	(possessed) head (756a)
ⲭⲃⲃεc	coal (760a)
ⲭⲁιε	desert (masc.) (745b)
ⲭοει, ⲭοι	ship, boat (masc.) (754a)

ⲭⲱⲕ	(with ⲉⲃⲟⲗ) to complete, accomplish; to be completed, perfect (761a); prenominal ⲭⲉⲕ-, stative ⲭⲏⲕ "(is) accomplished, perfect"
ⲭⲱⲕⲙ̄	to wash (763a)
ⲭⲟⲟⲗⲉⲥ	moth (fem.) (769a)
ⲭⲁⲙⲏ	calm (fem.) (770a)
ⲭⲱⲱⲙⲉ	book (masc.) (770a)
ⲭⲉⲛⲁ	to be quenched, die out (774a)
ⲭⲛⲟⲩ	ask (774b); prenominal ⲭⲛⲉ-, presuffixal ⲭⲛⲟⲩ-
ⲭⲛⲟⲟⲩ	threshing-floor, barn (masc.) (776b)
ⲭⲛⲁϩ	forearm, force (777a)
ⲭⲓⲛⲭⲏ	see ⲭⲏ
ⲭⲡⲓⲟ	to blame, reproach (778b)
ⲭⲡⲟ	to cause to exist, beget (778b); presuffixal ⲭⲡⲟ-
ⲭⲱⲣ	to sharpen, whet (781a)
	(with art.) sharpness, edge
ⲭⲉⲣⲟ	to light, kindle fire (781b); prenominal ⲭⲉⲣⲉ-
ⲭⲱⲱⲣⲉ	(with ⲉⲃⲟⲗ) to scatter, disperse (782a); presuffixal ⲭⲟⲟⲣ-
ⲭⲱⲱⲣⲉ	strong, brave person (784b)
ⲭⲣⲟ, ⲃⲣⲟ	(with ⲉ-) to be stronger, overcome, vanquish (783a)
ⲭⲱⲣⲙ̄	to beckon, signal (785b)
ⲭⲣⲟⲡ, ⲃⲣⲟⲡ	obstacle, hindrance (masc.) (786b)
	ⲕⲁ-ⲭⲣⲟⲡ, ϯ-ⲭⲣⲟⲡ to put an obstacle (before someone)
ⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ	lord, master (787b)
	ⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ the Lord
ⲭⲓⲥⲉ	to raise, exalt; to be, become tall, high (788b); stative ⲭⲟⲥⲉ "(is) high, exalted"
	(with art.) high part, height
	(adv.) ⲉⲡⲭⲓⲥⲉ high
	ⲭⲁⲥⲓϩⲧ arrogant
ⲭⲟⲉⲓⲧ	olive tree, olive fruit (790b)
ⲭⲱⲧⲉ	to pierce, traverse, enter (791b)
ⲭⲓⲟⲩⲉ	to steal (793b)
	(with art.) stealth
	(adv.) ⲛ̄ⲭⲓⲟⲩⲉ stealthily
ⲭⲟⲟⲩ	to send forth, dispatch (793a)–

ⲭⲱϩ	to touch (797a)
ⲭⲱϩⲙ̄	to defile; to be defiled (797b); stative ⲭⲁϩⲙ̄ "(is) defiled"
	(with art.) defilement, impurity
ⲭⲁⲭⲉ	enemy (799b)

ϭ (CHIMA)

ϭⲱ	to stay, remain, persist (803a)
ϭⲱⲃ	feeble, weak person (805b)
ϭⲁⲓⲉ	ugly, disfigured person (466a)
ϭⲟⲗ	lie, falsehood; lier (806b)
	ⲭⲓ-ϭⲟⲗ to lie
ϭⲁⲗⲉ	cripple, lame person (807b)
ϭⲟⲉⲓⲗⲉ, ϭⲟⲓⲗⲉ	to dwell, sojourn (807b)
ϭⲗⲟϭ	bed (masc.) (815a)
ϭⲟⲙ	power, potency, capability (fem.) (815b)
	ⲟⲩⲛ̄-ϭⲟⲙ/ⲙⲛ̄-ϭⲟⲙ "it is possible"/"it is impossible"
	ⲁⲧϭⲟⲙ impossible
(ϣ)ϭⲙ̄ϭⲟⲙ	to be able, find the power (ϭⲓⲛⲉ)
ϭⲱⲙ	vineyard, garden (817b)
ϭⲁⲙⲟⲩⲗ	camel (818b)
ϭⲓⲛⲉ	to find (820a); prenominal ϭⲛ̄-, presuffixal ϭⲛ̄ⲧ-
ϭⲟⲛⲥ̄	violence, wrongdoing in ⲭⲓⲛϭⲟⲛⲥ̄ to do wrong, do violence (822a)
ϭⲱⲛⲧ̄	to rage, be furious (822b); stative ϭⲟⲛⲧ̄ "(is) raging"
	(with art.) rage
ϭⲉⲡⲏ	to make haste, hurry (825a)
	(with art.) hurry
	(adv.) ϩⲛ̄ⲟⲩϭⲉⲡⲏ quickly
ϭⲱⲡⲉ	to catch (825b); prenominal ϭⲉⲡ-, presuffixal ϭⲟⲡ-
ϭⲣⲟ	see ⲭⲣⲟ
ϭⲉⲣⲱⲃ	rod, stick (828a)
ϭⲣⲟⲙⲡⲉ	pigeon (828a); plur. ϭⲣⲟⲟⲙⲡⲉ
ϭⲣⲟⲡ	see ⲭⲣⲟⲡ
ϭⲉⲣⲛϭ	hunter (masc.) (831a)

ⲥⲱⲣⲇ̄	(with ⲉ-) to waylay (830a); stative ⲥⲟⲣⲇ̄ "(is) in ambush, is lurking"
ⲥⲣⲟⲥ	seed, sprouting of seed (masc.) (831b)
ⲥⲣⲱϩ	to be in want, be needy (829b)
	(with art.) need
ⲥⲟⲥⲙ̄	darkness (masc.) (832b)
ⲥⲟⲧ	size, form (833a)
ⲥⲱϣⲧ̄	to look; to expect, wait for (with ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲛⲧ-) (837)
ⲥⲟϩⲥϩ̄	to gnash (teeth)
	(with art.) gnashing
ⲥⲓϫ	hand (fem.) (839b)
ⲥⲱϫⲃ̄	to be less; to be humble (841b); stative ⲥⲟϫⲃ̄ "(is) humble"

BIBLIOGRAPHY

A. ABBREVIATED BIBLIOGRAPHICAL REFERENCES

COPTIC SOURCE REFERENCES

III, IV — J. LEIPOLDT, *Sinuthii Archimandritae Vita et Opera Omnia*, vols. III & IV (Paris 1908-1913).

A I, A II — E. AMÉLINEAU, *Oeuvres de Schenoudi*, vols I & II (Paris 1907-1914).

BKU — *Aegyptische Urkunden aus den koenigl. Museen zu Berlin: Koptische Urkunden* (Berlin, 1904).

BM — British Museum (British Library) Oriental MSS (unpubl.).

BM Cat. — W.E. CRUM, *Catalogue of the Coptic MSS in the British Museum*, (London 1905).

Cat. — L.-Th. LÉFORT, "Catéchèse christologique de Chenoute", ZAeS 80 (1955) 40-45.

Ch. — E. CHASSINAT, *Le quatrième livre des entretiens et épîtres de Shenouti* (Cairo 1911).

Cl. Pr. — Oxford, Bodleian Library, Clarendon Press MSS (unpubl.).

Dict. — W.E. CRUM, *Coptic Dictionary* (Oxford 1939).

E — A. SHISHA-HALEVY, "Unpublished Shenoutiana in the British Library", *Enchoria* 5:53-108.

IF — Cairo, Institut Français d'Archéologie Orientale, unpubl. codex.

Jel. — A. I. JELANSKAJA, "Fragment s'otryvkom iz sočinenija Šenute", in: Pigulevskaja Volume (Moscow 1967) 48-51.

K — Vienna, Nationalbibliothek, unpubl. Coptic MSS

Leyd. — PLEYTE-BOESER, *Manuscrits coptes du Musée d'antiquités des Pays-Bas à Leide* (Leiden 1897).

Ming. — G.L. MINGARELLI, *Aegyptiorum codicum religuiae* ... (Bologna 1785)

Miss. — E. AMÉLINEAU, *Monuments pour servir à l'histoire de l'Egypte chrétienne* ... (Mem. Miss. Archéol. Française 4/1, Paris 1888) 277-287.

Mun. — H. MUNIER, *Manuscrits coptes* (Cairo 1916)

Or. — A. SHISHA-HALEVY, "Two New Shenoute Texts from the British Library", *Orientalia* 44 (1975) 149-185.

Orig. — T. ORLANDI, *Shenute contra Origenistas* (Rome 1986)

P — Paris, Bibliothèque Nationale, fonds copte (unpubl. MSS)

RE 10, RE 11 — H. GUÉRIN, "Sermon inédits de Šenouti", *Revue Égyptologique* 10 (1902) 148-164 and 11 (1904) 15-34.

Rossi — I. ROSSI, *I papiri copti del Museo egizio di Torino* (Turin, 1887-1892)

Wess. 9, Wess. 18 — C. WESSELY, *Studien zur Palaeographie und Papyruskunde* IX (Leipzig 1909) and XVIII (Leipzig 1917)

Young D.W. Young, "A Monastic Invective against Egyptian Hieroglyphs", in: *Studies Presented to Hans Jakob Polotsky* (ed. D.W. Young, Beacon Hill 1981) *348-360*

Z G. ZOEGA, *Catalogus codicum copticorum . manuscriptorum ...* (Rome 1810)

B. REFERENCES TO GRAMMATICAL DISCUSSIONS

FUNK, "Qualitativ": W.P. Funk, "Zur Syntax des koptischen Qualitativs", *AeZ* 104 (1977) 25-39.

LAMBDIN: Th. O. Lambdin, *Introduction to Sahidic Coptic*, Macon 1983.

LAYTON, "Compound Prepositions": B. Layton, "Compound Prepositions in Sahidic Coptic", in: *Studies Presented to Hans Jakob Polotsky*, ed. D.W. Young, Beacon Hill 1981, 239-268.

POLOTSKY, *Collected Papers*: H.J. Polotsky, *Collected Papers*, Jerusalem 1971.

POLOTSKY, "Conjugation System": H.J. Polotsky, "The Coptic Conjugation System", *Orientalia* 29 (1960) 392-422 (= *Collected Papers*, 238-268)

POLOTSKY, *Études*: H.J. Polotsky, *Études de syntaxe copte*, Cairo 1944 (= *Collected Papers*, 102-207).

POLOTSKY, *Kausativer Infinitiv*: H.J. Polotsky, *Der kausative Infinitiv und die kausativen Konjugationen*, Part III of Polotsky, *Grundlagen des koptischen Satzbaues*, 1988.

POLOTSKY, "Modes": H.J. Polotsky, "Modes grecs en copte?", in: *Coptic Studies in Honor of W.E. Crum*, Boston 1950, 73-90 (= Collected Papers, 208-225).

POLOTSKY, *Nominalsatz*: H.J. Polotsky, *Grundzuege des koptischen Nominalsatzes*, Part I of Polotsky, *Grundlagen*.

POLOTSKY, "Nominalsatz und Cleft Sentence": H.J. Polotsky, "Nominalsatz und Cleft Sentence im Koptischen", *Orientalia* 31 (1962) 413-430 (= *Collected Papers*, 418-435).

POLOTSKY, *Nom. Transposition*: H.J. Polotsky, *Grundzuege der nominalen Transposition im Koptischen*, Part II of Polotsky, *Grundlagen*.

POLOTSKY, Rev. Till: H.J. Polotsky, Review of Till, *Koptische Grammatik*. *OLZ* 52 (1957) 219-234 (= *Collected Papers*, 223-233).

QUECKE, "Relativsatz": H. Quecke, "Zum substantivischen Relativsatz im Koptischen", in: *Acts of the Second International Congress of Coptic Studies*, Rome 1985, 261-281.

SHISHA-HALEVY: A. Shisha-Halevy, *Coptic Grammatical Categories: Structural Studies in the Syntax of Shenoutean Sahidic*, Rome 1986.

SHISHA-HALEVY, "Discovery Procedure": A. Shisha-Halevy, "Grammatical Discovery Procedure and the Egyptian-Coptic Nominal Sentence". *Orientalia* 56 (1987) 147-175.

SHISHA-HALEVY, "Existential Statements": A. Shisha-Halevy, "Existential Statements in the Sahidic New Testament: Work Notes", *Goettinger Miszellen* 77 (1984) 67-79.

SHISHA-HALEVY, "Patterns": A. Shisha-Halevy, "Notes on Some Coptic Nominal Sentence Patterns", in: *Studien zur Sprache und Religion Aegyptens I* (Westendorf Festschrift), Goettingen 1984, 175-189.

STEINDORFF: G. Steindorff, *Lehrbuch der koptischen Grammatik*, Chicago 1951.

STERN: L. Stern, *Koptische Grammatik*, Leipzig 1880.

TILL: W. Till, *Koptische Grammatik: saidischer Dialekt*^{2}, Berlin 1961

VERGOTE: J. Vergote. *Grammaire copte IIa: Morphologie syntagmatique, syntaxe (partie synchronique)*, Louvain 1983.

WILSON: M. Wilson. *Coptic Future Tenses*, The Hague-Paris 1970.

YOUNG, "*Ešôpe*": D.W. Young, "*Ešôpe* and the Conditional Conjugation", *JNES* 21 (1962) 175-185.

YOUNG, "Present I": D.W. Young, "On Shenoute's Use of Present I", *JNES* 20 (1961) 115-119.

YOUNG, "Unfulfilled Conditions": D.W. Young, "Unfulfilled Conditions in Shenoute's Dialect", *JAOS* 89 (1969) 399-407.

INDEX TO GRAMMATICAL TERMS OCCURRING IN THE TEXTUAL NOTES

(The index is selective and refers mostly to phenomena not especially illustrated in the Chrestomathy. References are to pages).

article see "determination of nouns"
assimilation 4, 15
augens, see "reinforcer"
auxiliary verbs 5, 13, 17, 34, 35, 55, 58, 91
backgrounding 36, 38
bracketing 14
compound verb 35, 49, 55, 131
descriptive verbs 12, 91
determination of noun 7, 8, 9, 10, 17, 19, 22, 23, 26, 29, 31, 46, 74, 93, 96, 98, 100, 114, 154
direct object 22, 25, 68, 73, 74, 77, 91ff., 131
feminine pronoun for neuter see "neuter"
"figura Sinuthiana" 125
gender 19, 24, 28
glossing, hermeneutical 23, 24, 30, 124
impersonal 51; see "neuter"
inalienable possession 6, 30, 63, 97
juncture see "prosody"
laryngal consonant 55, 78
letter-/narrative opening role of the Cleft Sentence 52, 127
lexeme premodifier 58, 88, 93, 139
"manner": "in the manner of", "like" (etc.) 21, 34
negation 12, 15, 24, 27, 42, 77, 78, 91, 130, 142, 163
neuter 14, 38f., 51, 53, 67, 102, 114, 139, 144
nucleus 23
object construction 12, 74, 91, see "direct object"
passive voice 30, 37, 91, 92
predicate 24, 25, 28
prenominal form ("construct state") of infinitive 52, 93
prosody 19, 22, 37, 86, 96
reflexive mode of action 53
reinforcer 5, 6, 9, 11, 16, 34, 36, 37, 55, 78
resumption 22, 24, 26, 59, 68, 74, 114, 124, 127, 155
rhetorical question 16, 20, 27, 44, 63, 64, 75, 77, 85, 89, 115, 152
syllabic nasal 87
"tautological infinitive" 60
"that" form 146ff.
theme 81, 86
topic, topicalization 80, 88, 100
transitive/intransitive verb 35, 91ff.
"vocative" 4, 28, 53, 69
zero morpheme (pronoun) 6, 34, 39, 44, 55, 77, 96
zero object 59
zeroing 6, 35, 36, 37, 51, 85, 87

TERMINOLOGICAL GLOSSARY AND CORRESPONDENCE LIST

German and French conventional equivalents are suggested only for such terms as are not simply and unambiguously transposable from English (as are e.g. "adverb", "theme", "intransitive"). Equivalence is often approximate; so are definitions and explanations given, which are practically conceived and often valid only for the application of the term in Coptic.

The user is referred to current reliable linguistic terminological dictionaries, such as: (English:) Hartmann & Stork (London, 1972); Crystal, Oxford 1985 (2nd edition); (German:) Abraham, Tübingen 1974; Lewandowsky, Heidelberg 1976 (2nd edition); Stammerjohann, München 1974; (French:) Marouzeau, Paris 1951; Mounin, Paris 1974 (also *Dictionnaire Larousse de la linguistique*, Paris 1973).

abstract noun (Abstraktum; nom abstrait): a noun referring to a notion or non-material concept ("happiness", "falsehood", "truth", "coming" as in "the coming of the Normans").

actor (Agens; agent): the noun or pronoun expressing the carrier-out of an active action, or the undergoer of a passive action, or the one who is in a state ("grammatical subject": John in "John hit the ball" or "John was hurt" or "John is happy").

adjective: a class of words typically qualifying nouns ("red", "old" in "the old woman's red shawl").

"Adjective Verbs" (Copt.) ("Eigenschaftsverba"; "verbes adjectifs", "(quasi-) verbes de qualité"): a closed set of special synthetic conjugation forms with a suffixed theme, predicating quality ("... is good", "... is fair", "... is numerous" etc.).

adjunct: an optional or secondary element in a construction, typically extending or qualifying the meaning of another; it is not a main structural element; approx. = modifier, satellite, expansion ("good" in "the good soldier", "quickly" in "He moved quickly", "tomorrow" in "Come and see me tomorrow").

adnexal: a verb form attaching a rhematic element to a clause or phrase ("gone" in "I found him gone"; "cry" in "Listen to him cry!"; "he being ..." in "I forgave him, he being my brother"; "hot" in "some like it hot").

adnominal: expanding or modifying a noun or pronoun ("yellow" in "a yellow book", "charming" in "this charming lady", "flowing" in "the river, flowing North, meets the lake", "who..." and "whom..." in "She, who is standing there, is my sister", "John, whom I have known for a long time, came to dinner", "that..." in "all that glitters").

adverb: an element typically qualifying or specifying a clause, an action, state or quality ("quickly", "well", "on the table", "in fact", "still", "sadly", "very").

adverbal: expanding a verb form or a clause.

adverb(ial) phrase (Adverbialsyntagma [adverbielle Bestimmung]; syntagme adverbial [complément circonstanciel]): a syntagm in the role of an adverb; often a prepositional phrase ("at all", "on the wall", "for whom?" "like a fly").

affective: characterized by a marked emotional attitude.

Akhmimicism: a feature peculiar to the Akhmimic dialect of Coptic.

alternation, alternant: interchange of elements regulated (conditioned) by an isolable environmental factor (examples: t/d as pronounced forms of the past simple mark after English verbs: [kist], [lovd]; t/d as pronounced final/non-final base termination in German: [das rat] "wheel", gen. [des rades]; zero and [z] as pronounced alternants of final -s in French *les*: [le livre] (plur.), [lezami]).

anaphora, see resumption.

antecedent (Beziehungswort; antécédent): the nominal or pronominal nucleus of a relative clause ("the man" in "the man who came to dinner", "you" in "you who are my friend").

aorist (Copt.): a special conjugation form expressing general, natural or habitual action.

apodosis: the result or consequence (follow-up) constituent of a conditional sentence (the second clause of "If you come tomorrow, I shall show you the book").

apposition: a type of phrase in which the nucleus is a proper name, noun or pronoun and the expansion another noun or pronoun, with no intermediating linking mark ("John, my friend", "I, the

miserable", "my friend the General" "New York, this immense beehive").

article (also "determinator"): a pronominal grammatical element attached to the noun and characterizing it for its degree of definition ("a", "some", "another", "this", "the", "any"; also *zero*, as in "fighting *disease*", "the origins of *man*").

asyndetic: not bound by formal means (other then zero) ("I remained standing — I couldn't find a chair").

attributive(ly) (attributiv; épithète): the role of a modifier or descriptive expansion of a noun ("good" in "the good soldier").

augens: see reinforcer.

auxiliary verb (Hilfsverb; verbe auxiliaire): a lexically empty (or relatively empty) verb carrying out the grammatical functions in syntagm with a more or less invariable lexeme ("have" in "I have come", "make" in "make love", "did" in "He did not come").

base (Copt.): a prefixed morpheme in certain verbal clause patterns, characterizing the action for tense and in some cases also for *affirmative* or *negative*.

(to) bracket, bracketing (Klammerdarstellung): the analytical schematic presentation of the reference or application of an element to several following ones on (which are presented as being a different analytical rank). ("The [cats and dogs]", "[cats'-and-dog's] meat", "[old book] seller", "She is [alive and well]").

category, grammatical: the notion(s) expressed by a paradigm (e.g. "person", "number", "determination", "tense").

causal clause (Kausalsatz; proposition causale): a clause expressing cause or reason.

causative: a verb form expressing the causing or letting an action to be carried out (by another) ("You made him cry", "Let me go!").

circumstantial (Copt.) (Umstandssatz; circonstantiel): a clause marked by a special conversion as *adnexal* to another clause or noun/pronoun; often translatable as circumstance ("... ing" as in "I found him eating supper", "Walking home, I met Joan"; "when ...", "while ...").

clause (Teilsatz; proposition): an independent or dependent unit combining theme and rheme in nexus.

Cleft Sentence (Spaltsatz, phrase coupée): a construction in which a non-verbal element (noun, pronoun or adverbial) is marked as focus and a verb is marked as topic ("It is God who will provide", "It was yesterday (that) I saw him last", "C'est toi qui as changé, pas moi").

cluster (Konsonantenhaeufung; groupe consonantique): a sequence of non-syllabic consonants (esp. initial: "pr-", "cl-", "spl-").

compatible: two elements are compatible if they occur combined and adjoining in a syntagm (e.g. "yesterday" and {past simple}, as in "Yesterday I found a letter in my mailbox"; [n] and [t] in final and medial position, as in "don't", "hunting"; "many" and "a", as in "many a man").

conditioning, conditioned (Bedingung, bedingt; conditionnement, conditionné): a type of dependence in which one element or form is determinated by a quality of, or by another element in its environment; the conditioned element is no longer commutable (examples: in "These are my dogs", the form "are" and the -s plur. are conditioned by the form of the demonstrative "these". In "Ta fille est jolie", the fem. form of the adjective is conditioned by the fem. noun. In the English {past simple}, the pronounced suffix is [t], [d] are conditioned by preceding voicless or voiced consonants, respectively: [kist], [mu:vd]; a past tense in a dependent clause is conditioned by a main-clause past tense, as in "He said that he *would* come").

Conditional (Copt.) (Konditionalis; conditionnel): a special conjugation form expressing the protasis ("if..." constituent) of a condition.

conjugation, conjugation form (Copt.): the grammatical variation of a verb clause pattern by actor; a form so varying in a specific pattern.

conjunctive (Copt.): a special dependent conjugation form expressing mainly the "carrying on" or extending of a preceding verb form: see also microcoordination.

consonant: a type of speech sound produced by obstructing the passage of air in the mouth (p, t, k, g, d etc.).

construction: the grammatical arrangement of elements.

conversion, converters (Copt.): the morphosyntactic phenomenon of marking the syntactic status of a clause; a set of prefixed morphemes marking the syntactic status of a clause.

coordination: two or more elements or syntagms in an "X and Y" interdependence.

copula (Copt.): an element formally marking a nexus between theme and rheme in a Nominal Sentence (English "is" as in "My father is a teacher" is comparable to a degree).

definite: specific, familiar, assumed as known, unambiguously identifiable; determinated by a definite determinator ("the man"; "God"; "this house"; "my brother").

deictic: pointing out or indicating.

delocutive: pertaining to the *third* persons ("he", "she", "it", "they").

demonstrative pronoun: a pronoun pointing out, pointing at or indicating ("this", "that").

dependent clause (Nebensatz, abhaengiger Satz, Gliedsatz; proposition subordonnée, dépendante): a clause formally marked as dependent upon another ("when ..." in "He laughed when I told him you wanted to see him", "till" in "Why shouldn't we go on seeing each other till we are tired of it?", "what" in "He rubbed what was left of the pommade upon his scalp", "who" in "The girl who came to dinner yesterday is his sister").

deriving (ableitend; dérivant): forming a semantically related, semantically and often grammatically different word from another (e.g. noun from verb, verb from noun, noun from noun etc.: e.g. the deriving suffixes *-ize*, *-en* as in "circularize" from "circular", "whiten" from "white"; *-or* as in "actor" from "act"; *-ship* as in "hardship" from "hard"; *-ess* as in "heiress" from "heir").

determination, to determinate, determinator: marking a noun with respect to specificity and definiteness; the marker of a noun with respect to specificity and definiteness (see also article).

dialogue: a conversational type of discourse, ideally alternating between two speakers.

discourse (Diskurs, Rede, Text; discours, texte): a stretch of real attested text.

disjunction: two or more elements or syntagms in an "X or Y" interdependence; a morph marking this interdependence.

durative (Dauerzeit, Dauer-; duratif): (of an action) in progress, continuative, repetitive ("I was writing" as against "I wrote").

enclitic: a morph (e.g. particle) of weak stress and a tendency to follow and attach itself to a preceding unit carrying full stress ("then" in "Well then!"; German doch, French donc).

existant: the term stated as existing in an existential statement ("There was *a king*").

expansion; to expand (Erweiterung, erweitern; expansion, élargissement, élargir): addition of further elements (usually modifying or qualifying), without affecting the basic grammatical structure or relations ("lovely" and "whom ..." expand "the girl" in "the lovely girl whom you saw there is his daughter"; "immediately" and "when ..." expand the verb in "She immediately fainted when she heard he was alive"; "quickly" expands "come" in "Come quickly!").

extraposition; to extrapose (approx. segmentation, anticipation): a noun is extraposed when placed in front of a clause, to mark it as topic ("Man or woman — it made no difference to Minty", "as for the soup — it has been ready long ago").

feminine (weiblich, Femininum; féminin): a term, often marked, in the grammatical category of gender; in animates, typically referring to the female sex ("she-wolf", "heiress", "heureuse", "die" in "die Sache").

final clause: a dependent clause expressing purpose or willed result.

finite: (of a verb form) characterized for person ("I wished", "They are sleeping", "We were about to leave", "He had been beaten up").

to finitize: to render finite.

first person: the speaker persons ("I", "we").

focus; focal; focalization (= focussing): the center or highlight of the communication stretch (sentence and sentence complex) (It was ONLY WHEN SHE WAS TWENTY that she fell in love for the first time", "YOU certainly did not waste much time"; "She DID lose her purse that day", "Hou COULD you behave like this?", "Damn it all, this

isn't THE SAHARA. We're ONLY THIRTY-SIX HOURS from Picadilly"); marking as focal; pertaining to the focus.

function, to function (Funktion, Leistung; fonction): the role played by an element of language and its structural relationship to other elements; to play such a role.

gender (grammatisches Geschlecht, Genus; genre grammatical): a grammatical category (of nouns, pronouns) displaying such contrast as masculine: feminine: neuter, animate: inanimate ("he, she, it", "lion, lioness", "wolf, she-wolf" "bon, bonne", "der, die, das").

gloss, to gloss: the interpreting explanation or specification of a word that is considered obscure or in need of interpretation; to explain or specify such a word.

to govern (regieren; régir): to require (condition) or determine a certain form or element; often used of verbs governing certain prepositions ("differ" governs "from-", "care" governs "for-", "to accustom [someone]" governs "with-").

hermeneutical: see gloss, to gloss.

imperative: an addressed verb form expressing command (or forbidding) or direct request ("Listen, Kate", "Trust me", "Come here!", "Don't tell me that").

Imperfect (Copt.): a special conjugation form (the preterite conversion of the present form) expressing durative action in the past (cf. "I was writing").

impersonal: a 3rd person pronoun with no reference to any specific noun; a clause in which such pronoun serves as theme ("it" or "es" in "It is raining", "It ails me", "Es geht").

inalienable possession (unveraeusserlicher Besitz, possession inaliénable): a type of possession that is formally marked as inherent, close or intimate (e.g. in many languages, the "belonging" to each other of family members, one's parts of the body, one's name etc.).

incompatible: elements are said to be compatible if they never occur as combined in a syntagm, but in substitution to each other (e.g. "when" and "while", "a-" and [plur.]" -s", "three" and "a", [n] and [t] initially in English).

indefinite, indefinite determinator (unbestimmt, unbestimmter Artikel; indéfini, article indéfini): a non-specific individual or specimen of a class; a morpheme marking an element as a non-specific or individual or specimen of a class ("a man", "some cats", "someone", "three stones", "other gods" etc.).

independent clause (selbstaendiger Satz; proposition indépendante, principale): a clause that is formally marked as autonomous.

indeterminable: a nominal or pronominal element that is incompatible with determinators (e.g. "this", "you", "some").

infinitive: a nominal non-finite form of the verb ("to go"); (Copt.) the verb lexeme.

infix, to infix: a bound morpheme ("affix") attached inside a word; to attach a morpheme in this position (e.g. the nasal in the Latin present stems *rump-*, *linqu-*; the English number opposition of the type "tooth": "teeth", or tense oppositions of the type "ring": "rang"; "ne" in the negatived form of the finite verb in French: "je-veux", "je-*ne*-veux pas").

interlocutive: pertaining to the first and/or second persons ("you", "toi", "vous").

intransitive: (of a verb) not governing an object (the verbs in "He ran all the way home", "This chimney smokes", "She warmed to him", "Something may turn up", "He felt sick").

"irrealis": see remote (hypothetical) condition.

jussive: the delocutive (third person) imperative (Lat. esto, Gk. ἀκουέτω, Engl. "Let him wait!").

laryngal (consonant; also glottal): a speech sound produced in the larynx (e.g. [h], [ʾ], [ʿ] = ["Aleph"], ["Ajin"]).

lexeme: the basic unit of the lexicon or vocabulary.

(to) mark, marker: to characterize formally; a formal characteristic.

marked (merkmalhaft; marqué): the term of an opposition that is *positive* with regard to the presence of a specific linguistic feature (e.g. the plural in many languages as against the singular, with regard to the feature "number"; in French and Semitic, the feminine as against the masculine, with regard to the feature "gender"; in English, the past progressive as against the past simple, with regard to the feature "mode of action").

masculine (maennlich; masculin): a term, often unmarked, in the grammatical category of gender; in animates, typically referring to the male sex ("wolf", "heir", "heureux", "der").

microcoordination (Copt.): a special closely-knit kind of coordination expressed by the conjunctive form.

modal: expressing or pertaining to mood; the attitude of the speaker towards the stated action (e.g. wish, command, obligation, request, exhortation).

mode-of-action (Aktionsart; mode d'action): the manner of evolvement of an action (e.q. commencing, repeated, durative, terminating etc.).

modification; to modify; modifier: a describing expansion; to expand descriptively; an element expanding another descriptively ("red", "quickly" are modifiers in "The red fox jumped quickly over the hedge").

morph: a discrete, segmentable unit of *discourse* or *text* (e.g. "she", "recognize", "d", "at" "once", "that", "the", "moment", "had" "pass", "ed" in "She recognized at once that the moment had passed".

morpheme: a distinctive meaningful unit of grammar (e.g. {she}, {(e)d}, {that}, {had + (e)d}, {at} in "She recognized at once that the moment had passed".

narrative: a textual type reciting a tale, chronicle, history, report etc.; grammatical phenomena occurring in or pertaining to such a textual type.

negativing (vereinend, niant): rendering negative.

nexus: the special interdependence and link of theme and rheme.

neuter, neutric (saechlich; neutre genre): the term in the category of gender that is neither feminine nor masculine ("it"; "das Maedchen", "gutes ...").

neutralization (Aufhebung, Neutralisierung; neutralisation): the cancelling or suppression of an opposition in a given environment (following [s], the opposition [d:t] is neutralized in favour of [t], as in "kissed" [kist]; following "three", the opposition of number is neutralized in favour of {plural}, as in "three dogs"; following a

main-clause past tense, the opposition {past: non-past} is neutralized in the dependent clause in favour of {past}, as in "He said that he *would* come").

nominal: pertaining to a noun; with the grammatical properties of a noun.

"Nominal Sentence" ("Nominalsatz"; "phrase nominale"): a clause pattern predicating a pronoun or noun (the clauses "This is Anthony", "You are not yourself", "It's cold", "It's winter", "He is sincere", "It is I", "This is my wife", "Your god is Mammon" are verbal clauses corresponding to Egyptian or Semitic Nominal Sentences).

to nominalize: to mark as nominal.

noun (Nomen; nom): a word class with a specific composite set of constructional and/or morphological properties (e.g. [Coptic] being preceded by an article or quantifier, by a special form of prepositions, occurring as rheme in the Nominal Sentence, having a plural form, being representable by a pronoun, etc.; [English] being preceded by an article or quasntifier, compatible with a plural suffix, with a possessive article — "my friend" etc.)

nucleus, grammatical the grammatical center: the **grammatically** important, definitive or decisive constituent of a syntagm that is not a clause (i.e. of a phrase) (e.g. "hat" in "green hat"; "bird", "ship" in "blackbird", "kingship"; "-en" in "frighten"; "this" in "this matter", German "die" in "die Frage" and so on).

object: the nominal or pronominal receiver or goal of a transitive action.

opposition: two elements are in mutual opposition if their substitution to one another in the same environment entails a change of meaning (see the examples given under paradigm).

Optative (Copt.): a special conjugation form expressing wish, prayer, promise, prophecy etc.

paradigm: a substitution class, i.e. the class of elements which may be substituted for each other in the same environment with an entailed change of meaning (e.g. the paradigm of the phonetic elements [p], [t], [k], [b], [n], [f], [h] before [it]; of the person/number characteristics in the finite verb, {I ...}, {you ...}, {he ... s}, {she ... s}, {it ... s}, etc.;

of the elements modifying adjectives ["quite", "more", "less", "very", "fairly" ...]; of the elements predicated by "to be" — the noun phrase paradigm ["an artist"], the adjective paradigm ["kind"], the gerund paradigm ["writing"]).

particle (Copt.) an element, often insubstantial and weakly stressed, marking a sentence for inter-sentential relationship and often indicating prosodic properties of sentence components (e.g. unstressed "then", German doch, French donc, Greek and Coptic men, gar, de ...).

passive voice: a verbal construction type in which the actor expresses the undergoer of the action, while the performer of the action is instrumentally expressed ("She was ardently kissed by her fiancé"). In Coptic, if the actor is not explicitly expressed, the verb is indistinguishable from the 3rd plur. form ("They kissed her").

pattern (Muster, Bauplan; modèle, schéma): a delimited (bounded) construction of paradigms, or the actual form representing this construction (e.g. "consonant + vowel + consonant", "pronoun + {be} + gerund", "noun phrase + finite verb + object" "article + adjective + noun lexeme"; "p-i-ṅ", "I am working", "Snakes eat birds", "a good soldier").

perfect (Copt.): a special conjugation form expressing an action in the past ("He heard", "He has heard").

personal pronoun: element of grammar and lexicon expressing the persons: "I", "you", "he", "she", "it", "we", "they".

phrase: a syntagm that is not a clause; either the combination of a nucleus and an expansion (satellite) ("a young girl", "my friend", "a profession", "a profitable profession", "three squirrels", "the man who laughed", "a profession which is more profitable", "come quickly", "very well", "rather lazy"), or a syntagm that is not hierarchically analyzable (e.g. prepositional phrase, coordination).

plural: a term in the grammatical noun/pronoun/person category of number, marked as referring to more than one item ("dogs", "three books", "we", "those").

possessed: (a noun) that is marked (in a possession statement, clause or phrase) as belonging to a nominal or pronominal possessor ("the boy's han", "my friend" — "I have a friend").

predicate: see rheme; (to) predicate: to state as rheme.

predicative complement (praedikative Ergaenzung; complément attributif, complément d'attribution): the expansion of a verb or of an object of a verb that, expansionless, is informationally incomplete or has a different meaning ("I found him *gone*", "He became *king*", "He felt *sick*", "he turned red", "I was appointed *ambassador*", "watch him *go*"): a rhematic expansion.

prefix, to prefix: a bound morpheme ("affix") attached at the head of a word; to attach a morpheme in this position ("un-known", "de-frost", "fore-ground", "more-beautiful", "je-veux", ge-schaffen).

premodifier (Copt.): a modifier presetting, information, circumstances or attitude to a clause ("At first ...", "In fact ...", "Surely ...", "Finally, what does all this mean?", "Frankly, I do not understand your approach").

prenominal (Copt.): the special form of an element preceding and prefixed to a noun, demonstrative or indefinite/interrogative pronoun.

preposition: a morpheme prefixed to a noun or pronoun marking its relation to other elements in the text ("in", "with", "at", "for").

prepositional phrase: the syntagm of preposition + noun/pronoun ("to me", "by God", "at home", "for what?", "becaume of whom?", "in my hand").

presentative: an element presenting a noun or pronoun into discourse, esp. dialogue ("Here is ...", "Look, ..." "voilà").

presuffixal (Copt.): the special form of an element preceding and prefixed to a suffix pronoun.

preterite: non-durative ("point") past tense (cf. English past simple: "I wrote").

pronoun: an element used to refer (by pointing or indicating, by representation, specifically, interrogatively or indefinitely) to a person of dialogue, a noun, proper name or their substitutes ("I", "you", "she" [personal pronouns], "who?" [interrogative pronoun]; "anyone", "many", "one" [indefinite pronouns], "this" [demonstrative pronoun]).

Proper Name (Eigenname; nom propre): a naming element with grammatical properties of both noun and the quality of typical high specificity ("John", "Oxford", "January", "Les Pyrénées", "Herr Kleinhans").

prosody: the phonetic features which characterize sentence structure and are usually not expressed in text segments of their own: including stress, intonation, juncture ("liaison" & pauses).

protasis: the hypothetical ("if...") component of a conditional sentence.

qualification; to qualify: see modification.

quantifier: element marking quantity or number in a noun phrase ("three", "many", "some", "another").

reflexive: an object expansion of a verb containing a reference back to its actor ("She washed herself").

reinforcer, augens (Copt.; also "Verstaerker"): a special set of elements modifying a noun or pronoun and containing a pronominal element referring (mostly back) to this noun ("I *myself*", "the man, *for his part*", "the Church, *she alone* etc.)

relative (Beziehungsform, Relativum; relatif): a clause marked (in Coptic, by special conversion) as adnominal, expanding a definite noun or pronoun ("who...", "whose...", "whom...", "in whom...").

remote (hypothetical or unreal) condition (Irrealis, irrealer Konditionalsatz; condition irréele): a hypothetical condition that is contrary to reality and conceived as no longer fulfillable ("She would have taken him in her arms if he had not spoken").

resumption, to resume, resumptive (also anaphora, anaphoric): the linking phenomenon of reference or pointing back to a preceding element (in "I realized then that John thought he understood his wife; but in fact he did not, although she invariably saw through him", "then", "he", "him", "she", and "did" are resumptive).

rheme, rhematic (Rhema, Satzaussage, Praedikat; rhème, attribut, propos, prédicat): one of the two main constituents of the information structure of the clause: the constituent that conveys new information about the theme; the main part of the clause message (in the text "The bird sank with beating wings as if the air had

grown too thin to support it. It settled and lay along the water. When they reached it, it was dead, its beak below the water, one wing submerged", the stretches "sank with beating wings", "had grown too thin to support [it]" "settled and lay along the water", "reached [it]", "dead", "below the water", "submerged" are rhematic).

rhetorical question: a type of question formally marked as presupposing an affirmative or negative answer or as unanswerable (bordering on exclamation): ("Can't you be yourself?" "Is that the way to talk to your elders?" "Why can't you say so?" "I have to live, haven't I?").

satellite: the expansion constituent of a phrase.

second person: the addressed person in dialogue ("you", "toi", "vous").

Second Tense (Copt.) (zweite Tempora; temps seconds): a special conversion of conjugation forms, marking them, in specific contextual circumstances, as either focal ("emphatic") or as focalizing ("emphasizing") other components of the verbal sentence (adjunct, actor, object). An apt translation equivalent of Second Tense sentences (esp. into French) is the Cleft Sentence ("Is it for this you have come?", "It is only on weekends that I find the time to read", "When was it you saw him last?").

sentence (Satz, Satzgefuege; phrase): a subtextual complex unit consisting at least of one clause, intermediate between clause and paragraph.

singular: a term in the category of number, unmarked or referring to not more than one item ("dog", "a dog", "book", "a book", "I", "this").

stative (trad. qualitative) (Copt.): a special verb form for expressing passive or intransitive state or a quality ("broken", "going", "thirsty", "impure").

sonorant (also "liquid"): a type of consonant that is especially prone to be syllabic (in Coptic [l] [m] [n], [r], [v]).

subject: see theme, topic.

suffix: a bound morpheme ("affix") attached at the end of a word; in Copt. conventionally used of a special set of suffix pronouns, which are sometimes infixed.

superlinear (or supralinear) stroke (Sahidic Copt.) (Silbenstrich, uebergesetzter Strich; trait superlinéaire): a short stroke placed above consonants or consonantal combinations, indicating their syllabic nature.

suppletion: the use of different externally unrelated forms to replace or supply part of a paradigm ("go" + "went", "am" + "is" + "was" + "be" are instances of suppletion).

syllabic: constituting a syllabic or the center of one.

syllable, syllabic: a complex phonetic unit comprising an opening segment (consonant or sonant), a center (vowel or sonant) and a closing segment (consonant or sonant) (exx. [com-mu-ni-sm], [bo-tm], [wa-tr], [se-cu-ri-ty]); constituting a syllable or the center of one.

syntagm: the combination of two or more morphs.

synthetic (of grammatical forms): characterized by a close merging or fusion of grammatical and lexemic elements in a word (e.g. "bought", in contrast to "love-d", "feet" in contrast to "hand-s").

tautological: expressing the same twice over, esp. in a different form.

Temporal (Copt.): a special dependent conjugation form expressing time or cause dependence ("when ...", "since ...").

tense (Tempus; temps): the grammatical category of marking the time reference for a verbal action.

third person: the person not taking active part in the dialogue ("he", "she", "it", "they").

theme, thematic (Thema, Subjekt, Satzgegenstand; thème, sujet): one of the two main constituents of the information structure of the clause: the constituent that least advances the communication; whe part containing given or presupposed information; what is being discussed (in the text "The bird sank with beating wings as if the air had grown too thin to support it. It settled and lay along the water. When they reached it, it was dead, its beak below the water, one wing submerged", the stretches "the bird", "the air", "it", "they", "its beak", "one wing" are thematic).

topic, topicalization: what is being discussed; the textual elements that is not the focus of the communication stretch (sentence and

sentence complex); the elements that are context-bound (in the text: "Yes, it was ugly, the human figure. Man or woman, it made no difference to Minty. The body's shape, the running nose, excrement, the stupid postures of passion, these beat like a bird's heart in Minty's brain", topics are "the human figure", "Man or woman", "The body's shape, the running nose, excrement, the stupid postures of passion"); marking as topic.

transitive: (of a verb) governing an object (the verbs in "He felt his shirt", "He turned out the light", "How many cigarettes do you smoke per day?").

unmarked (Merkmallos; non-marqué): the term of an opposition that is *neutral* with regard to the presence of a specific linguistic feature (e.g. the singular in many languages as against the plural, with regard to the feature "number"; in French and many Semitic languages, the masculine as against the feminine, with regard to the feature "gender"; in English, the past simple as against the past progressive, with regard to the feature "mode of action").

variation, variant: the fluctuation of forms, with no entailed difference in meaning; such a form ("can't" and "cannot", [u] and [u:] as pronunciation of "-oo-" in some types of English, "that", "wh-", "zero" as relative àarkers; "well cared-for lady's bicycle" and "lady's bicycle, well cared-for"; "... pas" and "ne ... pas" in some types of French, are all variants, mainly of stylistic motivation).

verb: a word class with a specific composite set of constructional and/or morphological properties (e.g. [Coptic] being conjugated in one of the conjugation patterns, being potentially a member in a causative: non-causative opposition, etc.; [English] being characterized for person/number and tense, modified by adverbs, etc.).

verboid: a clause form that shares the syntactic properties of a verb but not its morphological properties (in Coptic, the expression for "to have").

vowel (Vokal, voyelle): a type of speech sound produced with no complete closure of the speech organs (e.g. [a] [e] [i] [o] [u]).

zero element, zero morph (Null-Morphem; morphème zéro): a significantly absent element (morph); an absence of an element (morph) that is meaningful (e.g. the plural mark in "fish-∅", cf. "fish-es";

the singular "book-∅" as opposed to the plural "book-s"; the 1st and 2nd persons, Present Simple, "I-love-∅", "you-love-∅", as opposed to the 3rd person, "he-love-s"; the masculine form of the adjective in French, as in "*bon-∅*" vs. "*bon-ne*"). For "zero article" see "article".

zeroing (Null-Realisierung; réalisation zéro): the (conditioned) realization of an element as zero (e.g. the pronunciation of "p-", "k-", before "n", "s", as in "pneumonia", "knee", "psychology"; the realization of one of the "t"'s in the fast pronounced form of "Where did you get to?"; the realization of the finite verb in the response constituent of the dialogue "What would you like?" — "*Tea, please*".)

ספריית הר הצי-
[redacted]

ORIENTALISTE. P.B. 41. B-3000 Leuven